



David O. McKay Library



SpC

DA

34

J6

Presented by: The Jaques' Heirs
in memory of John Jaques

129
942
J715 W

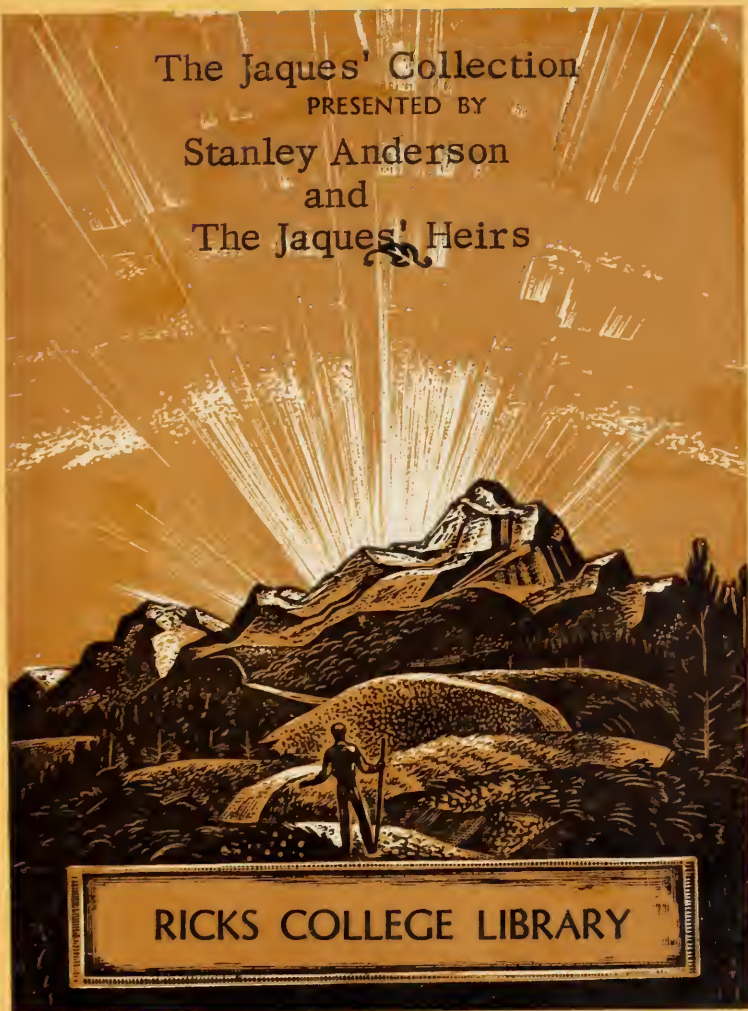
The Jaques' Collection

PRESENTED BY

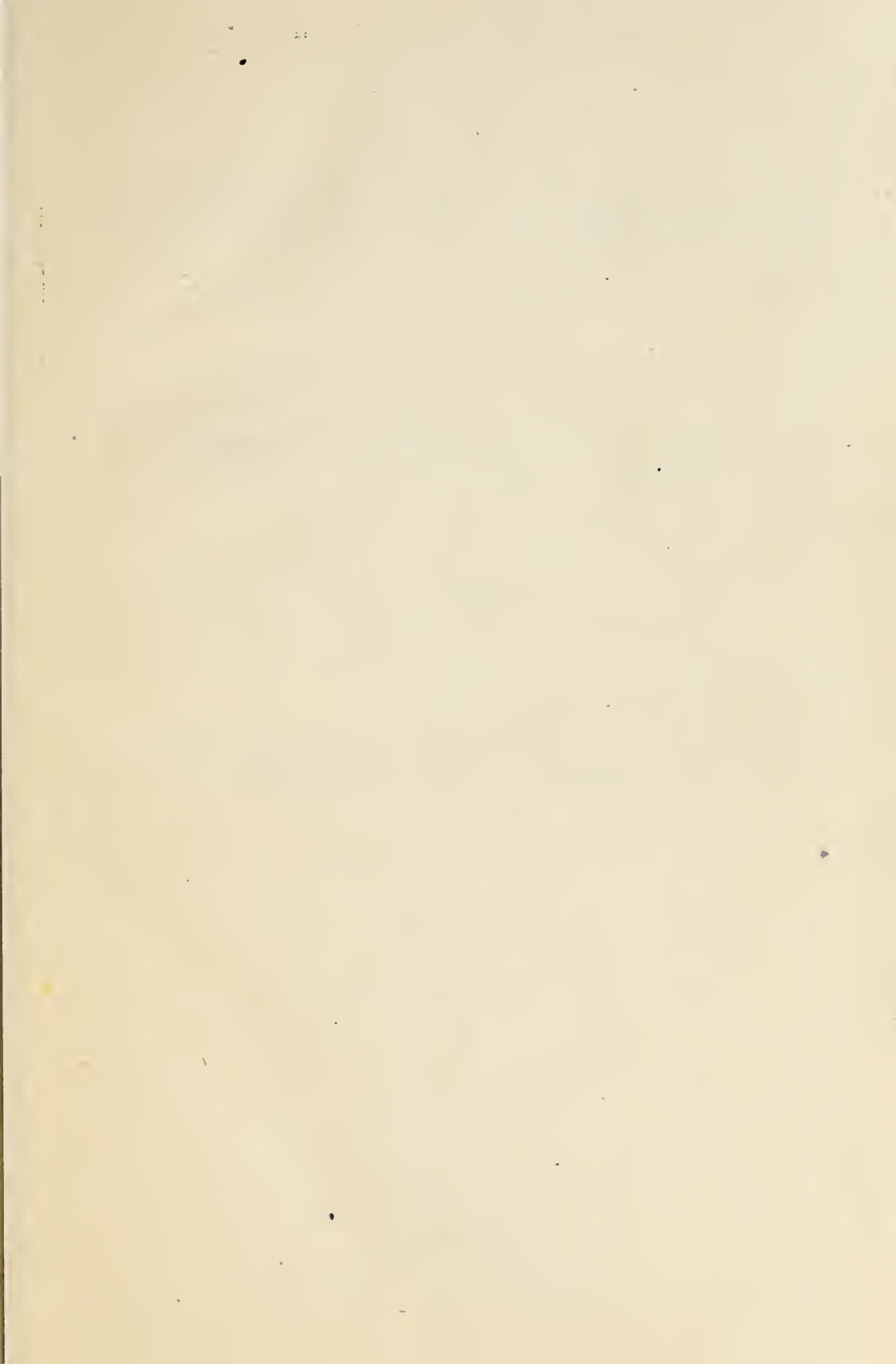
Stanley Anderson

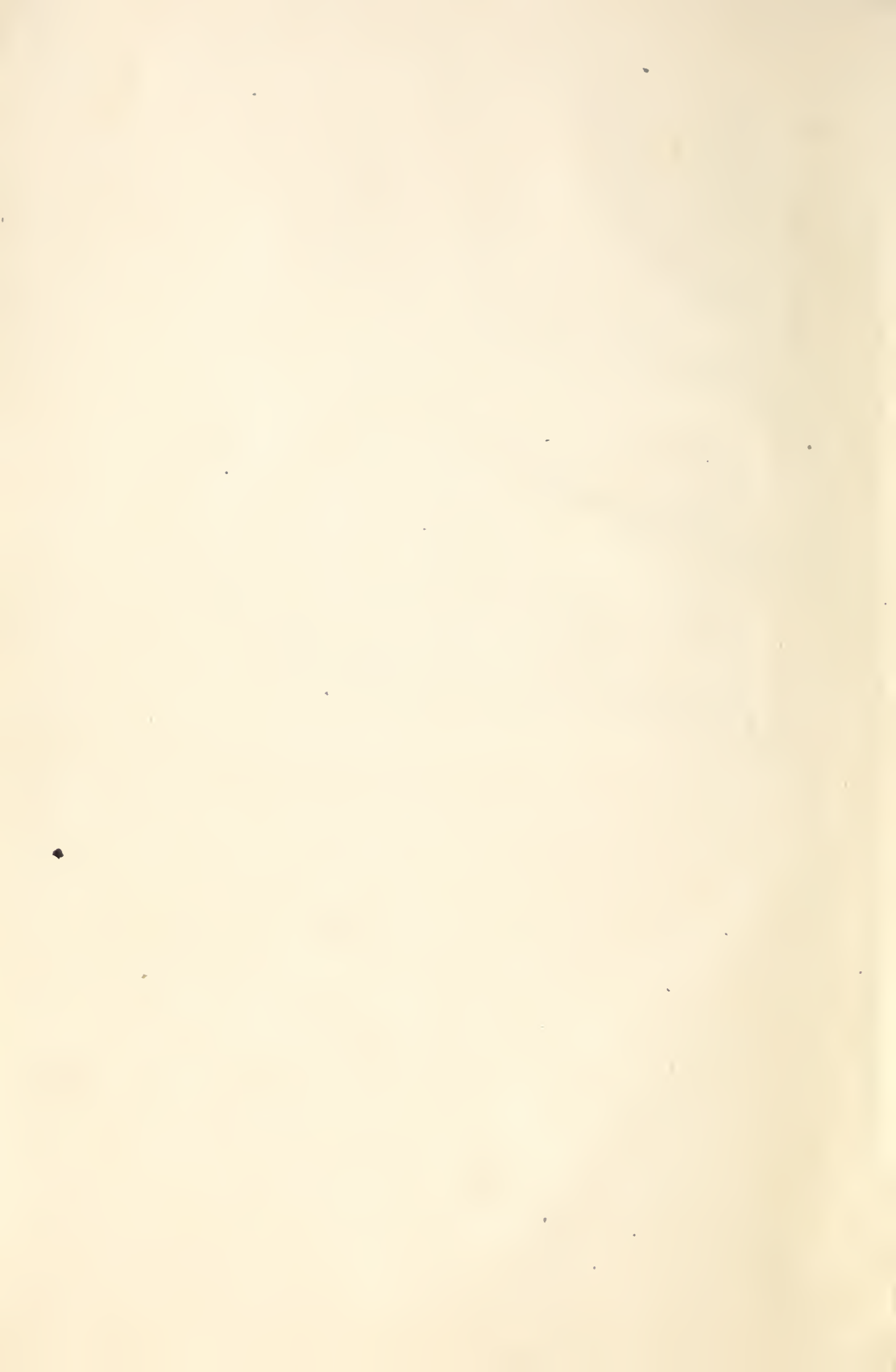
and

The Jaques' Heirs



RICKS COLLEGE LIBRARY





THE
HISTORY OF ENGLAND

IN
CHRONOLOGICAL FORM

BY
FREDERICK T. JONES

NEW YORK
THE WORLD
1887

THE

HISTORY OF ENGLAND

IN

CHRONOLOGICAL FORM

COPYRIGHT, 1887.

BY ROBERT JAMES BELFORD.

FREDERICK T. JONES

NEW YORK

THE WORLD

1887

NOV 12 '58

25558

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
CHAPTER I. PREHISTORIC TIMES	9
“ II. THE DAWN OF HISTORY.....	17
“ III. ROMAN BRITAIN.....	21
“ IV. THE ENGLISH CONQUEST	34
“ V. THE DANISH CONQUEST.....	66
“ VI. THE NORMAN CONQUEST	100
“ VII. THE ANGEVIN OR PLANTAGENET KINGS: THE STRUGGLE FOR SUPREMACY BETWEEN THE CROWN AND THE FEUDAL ARISTOCRACY	135
“ VIII. THE TUDORS: THE CROWN SUPREME.....	215
“ IX. THE STUARTS: THE STRUGGLE FOR SUPREMACY BETWEEN THE CROWN AND PARLIAMENT	263
“ X. CONSTITUTIONAL ENGLAND.....	302
“ XI. THE REIGN OF VICTORIA: ENGLAND A DEMOC- RACY	314



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

<https://archive.org/details/histengjones>

PREFACE.

THE present work gives, on a somewhat novel plan, a history of England from the earliest times to the present day. Besides political matters, there are noted inventions, discoveries, and leading events in science, art, and literature. One advantage of a history modelled on the chronological plan is that it can hardly become antiquated. The date of an event, once ascertained, is fixed forever. Not being a matter of opinion, it is not liable to change with the fluctuating results of historical criticism. Though the greatest care has been taken to insure accuracy, it is too much to hope that, in the multiplicity of events, names, and dates recorded, errors have not crept in. Should the reader note any such, the publishers will take it as a favor to be informed of them, with a view to their correction in subsequent editions.

The latest and best authorities have been followed. For the prehistoric period the works of Prof. Boyd Dawkins and Mr. Elton have been relied on; for the Celtic and Roman periods, those of Rhys, Scarth, and Coote; for the Saxon period those of Skene, Green, and Grant Allen; and for the later history, those of Freeman, Hunt, Green, Froude, Gardiner, and Bright, with a general reference throughout to the Annals of England, Low and Pulling's Dictionary of English History, Leslie Stephen's Dictionary of National Biography, and Woodward and Cates's Encyclopædia of Chronology.

F. T. J.

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

CHAPTER I.

PREHISTORIC TIMES.

WHETHER or not man existed in Britain before or during the last glacial era is a question which geologic research has not yet determined, though the probability is great that he did. That he existed there soon after the close of that epoch is a point about which there is no doubt whatever. Between that date (probably over 200,000 years ago) and the dawn of history Britain was peopled successively by distinct races which, in the order of chronological sequence, may be thus classified :

1. Early Palæolithic men, now probably extinct.
2. Late Palæolithic men, now probably represented by the Eskimos.
3. Neolithic men, probably Iberians.
4. Bronze-age men, Goidelic or Gaelic Celts and men of Finnish race.
5. Iron-age men, Brythonic or Kymric Celts.
6. Belgæ.

In historic times there followed Romans and tribes of Teutonic race—Jutes, Engle or Angles, Saxons, Northmen, Danes, and Normans.

1. *Early Palæolithic or River-Drift Man in Britain.* At the epoch geologically represented by the mid-Pleistocene strata, Britain was joined to the European continent on the one side, and to Ireland and the Hebrides, or Western Isles of Scotland, on the other. The North Sea, the English Channel, St. George's Channel, and the Irish Sea were dry land, the coast-line being about fifty miles west of the present west coast of Ireland and the Hebrides ; and the Thames, Humber, Tyne, Forth, Tay, and the other English and Scotch rivers now falling into the North Sea were tributaries of the Rhine. The

dry land now covered by the North Sea was then separated from Norway only by a narrow arm of the sea, from twenty to fifty miles wide, and about two hundred fathoms deep. At the same epoch Spain and Italy were joined to Africa, so that the Straits of Gibraltar did not exist, and the Mediterranean consisted of two inland seas, separated from each other by Italy and a belt of land connecting its southern end with Tunis in Africa.

The representatives of the human race who lived in Britain at this remote epoch were savages as low in the scale of civilization as the present Australian aborigines. They probably roamed naked through the woods; took refuge in caves from the inclemency of the seasons; and, being ignorant of the use of fire, lived on the raw flesh of such animals as they could kill with their rude weapons of chipped and unpolished stone. They had no metals, no pottery, no agriculture, and no domestic animals. The fauna of what is now Britain then included several species of animals which are now extinct, such as the Irish elk, cave-bear, sabre-toothed lion (*machairodus latidens*), two extinct species of elephant (the mammoth and the straight-tusked elephant), and three extinct species of rhinoceros; besides other animals which, though still extant, are no longer to be found in Britain, such as the reindeer, wild horse, urus, bison, hippopotamus, brown bear, grisly bear, wild cat, Caffer cat, lion, lynx, leopard, spotted hyena, wolf, musk-sheep, wild boar, and beaver. The palæolithic men who then lived in Britain belonged to a race which apparently occupied the whole of Europe as far north as the latitude of Derbyshire, also Northern Africa, Asia Minor, Palestine, and India as far south as the latitude of Madras. They have not hitherto been identified with any race of men now existing. If not extinct, they may possibly be represented at the present time by some of the savage hill-tribes of India.

2. *Late Palæolithic or Cave Man in Britain.* At a long interval (represented probably by tens of thousands of years) after the disappearance of the early Palæolithic men, a new race appeared in Britain, to which, on account of their remains having been found chiefly in caves, the name Cave-men has been given. Their range was much less wide than that of their predecessors, their remains having been discovered only in Britain as far north as Derbyshire, and in Belgium, France, Switzerland, and central Europe. They have left no traces south of the Pyrenees and Alps, nor further east than Poland and Styria, and consequently probably never made their way beyond those limits. Their epoch corresponds geologically

with the later Pleistocene strata; and the geography and fauna of Europe were not greatly different from what they had been during the time of their predecessors, the River-drift men. Though they were not acquainted with the use of metals, and were destitute of pottery, agriculture, and domestic animals, they were far more advanced in civilization than the River-drift men. Besides being hunters, they were also expert fishers and fowlers. The fish were probably speared or harpooned; and the birds either snared, shot with arrows, or killed with spears thrown from the hand. Their prey included the salmon, trout, carp, bream, dace, chub, and pike; and, among birds, the snowy owl, willow-grouse, ptarmigan, capercaillie, gray partridge, wild duck, and an extinct species of crane. Bones of all these animals have been found in their refuse heaps. They were acquainted with the use of fire, which they probably procured by rubbing together two pieces of wood, or by striking together flint and iron pyrites. They cooked their food either by roasting or by means of hot stones or "pot-boilers." Their stone implements, though unpolished, were more carefully chipped and better shaped than those of the Drift-men. They also used implements of bone, such as harpoon-heads of antler, bone awls for boring holes, notched bones, probably for sawing, and bone needles. They were clothed in skins sewn together with reindeer sinew, and they wore long gloves (probably of fur) with three or four fingers. They also wore amulets and necklaces of perforated shells, bone, ivory, and teeth; and they probably painted their faces red with oxide of iron. Their skulls were dolicocephalic, or long-headed.

The most remarkable fact about this race of men, however, is that they were the creators of the fine-arts of drawing, engraving, and sculpture. Their drawings were incised with stone tools on bones, antlers, teeth, or stone implements. Many specimens of their skill have been discovered, showing that these sketches are mostly representations of the animals with which they were familiar, and in a few instances of the men themselves. Among animals thus delineated are the horse, bison, reindeer, mammoth, urus, cave-bear, whale, seal, pike, and, in one case, a group of birds, probably ducks, unable to fly, and scuttling away as fast as possible. One drawing is that of a long glove or gauntlet, incised on the perforated canine tooth of a bear. Among sculptures one of the most noteworthy is a specimen in which the handle of a dagger of reindeer antler has been carved into the shape of that animal, "with his head," says Prof. Dawkins, "thrown back, so as to allow the

antlers to rest on the shoulders, the forelegs being folded gracefully under the body, and the hind passing gradually into the blade."

Most of these specimens of prehistoric art have been found in caves in France. The first discovery of the figure of an animal in Britain was that of a horse, incised on a fragment of a rib. It was dug out of the stalagmite floor of the Robin Hood Cave, on the borders of Nottinghamshire and Derbyshire, associated with the bones of the leopard and the extinct sabre-toothed lion (*machairodus latidens*), the stalagmite floor being three feet thick, and so hard as to have been blasted only with extreme difficulty. "The head," says Prof. Dawkins, "with its eyes, mouth, and nostrils, is admirably drawn, and a series of fine oblique lines stopping at the bend of the back proves that the animal was hog-maned"—that is, that the mane stood up in bristles straight from the neck.

It seems probable that in Britain a wide interval of time, probably not less than 100,000 years, separated the era of the later Palæolithic men from that of the Neolithic race which next appeared on the scene. During this interval vast changes took place in the geography of Britain. The land was slowly submerged until the English Channel, the North Sea, the Irish Sea, and the St. George's Channel were formed, and Britain, Ireland, the Isle of Man, and the Western Isles of Scotland became islands separated from the continent of Europe and from each other. The fauna likewise changed. The cave-bear, the sabre-toothed lion, the mammoth, the straight-nosed elephant, and the three species of rhinoceros which existed during the palæolithic epoch became extinct, the Irish elk being the only animal now extinct which survived into the Neolithic age. The Cave-men also disappeared, and, if Prof. Dawkins's identification of them with the Eskimos is correct, betook themselves to Greenland and North America, probably by way of the Faroe Isles and Iceland.

3. *Neolithic Man in Britain.* In Neolithic times Britain presented much the same geographical appearance that it now does. The most noteworthy differences were, that the southern and western coast-lines extended at some points further into the ocean than at present, so as to include Anglesey and the Isle of Wight as a part of the mainland; and that the Wash and the wide estuary of the Thames had not been formed, but were dry land. The race of men which at this epoch peopled both Ireland and Great Britain were of short stature and had dolicocephalic or long-headed skulls. They were much further advanced in civilization than their prede-

cessors. Though, like them, they had no knowledge of the useful metals, their implements and weapons of stone were finely shaped and beautifully polished. They were no longer mere huntsmen and fishermen, but were herdsmen and agriculturists. They had domesticated the horse, dog, sheep, pig, one race of oxen (the small, delicately shaped, so-called "Celtic" short-horn), a variety of goat (probably the ancestor of the Welsh goat), and the goose. Among seeds and fruits cultivated were several varieties of wheat, two of barley, the millet, the Italian selaria, peas, poppies, flax, apples, pears, bullace plums, and caraway seeds. They lived probably in log-houses, and huts made of wattle-work, though caves were still sometimes used as habitations.

They were acquainted with the arts of spinning, weaving, pottery (coarsely made by hand), and mining. They worked mines of flint with picks made out of stag's antlers. They made boats or canoes, some of them forty feet long, in which they made voyages between Britain and the continent of Europe, on the one side, and Ireland, on the other. They do not seem to have been acquainted with the use of sails, and used paddles for propulsion. Trade was carried on by means of barter; and that commerce was carried on, frequently from long distances, is shown from the fact that neolithic axes have been found made of nephrite or jade, a substance found only in Turkestan and China.

A family and a tribal organization presented the earliest form of government. The population was probably comparatively large, and between the different tribes there seems to have been frequent warfare, in which art numerous fortified camps, with ramparts and ditches, show that the people had made considerable progress. They had also acquired the rudiments of religion, so far as to have attained a belief in a future life. Though they sometimes buried their dead in caves, they also constructed as burial-places tombs or burrows, some of imposing grandeur, for the habitation of the dead in the after-life, when their spirits were supposed to lead a life not very different from the present. It also seems that it was among this race that Druidism originated; that they sometimes accompanied their religious rites with human sacrifices; and that it was they who erected the huge stone monuments, remains of which still exist at Stonehenge, Abury or Avebury, and many other places in Britain. These stone circles vary in diameter from 30 or 40 feet to 1200; and they were probably temples standing in close relation to the burial-places of the dead.

They had acquired neither the art of alphabetic writing nor hieroglyphics; and were ignorant of the arts of drawing, engraving, and sculpture practised with such singular skill by their predecessors, the Cave-men.

Some writers contend that Neolithic man was identical with the Eskimos; but it seems more probable that his true identification is with the Iberians, with whom he presents numerous and striking points of resemblance. The Neolithic men were of short stature, their average height being about 5 ft. 5 in. for the men, and 4 ft. 10 in. for the women. They were long-headed or dolicocephalic, with an oval face, low forehead, aquiline nose, and orthognathic—that is, the jaw did not project forward beyond the facial line. In these respects they correspond with the Iberians of history, who, in addition to these characteristics, had black hair and eyes, and a swarthy skin.

Traces of Neolithic civilization have been found in almost every part of Europe, and in northern Africa. In early historic times the Iberians inhabited the peninsula (Iberia) of Spain and Portugal, from which they derived their name. They also probably peopled the south-west of Gaul, as far as the Seine and including Brittany. The Fir-Bolgs of Ireland, the Silures of south-east Wales, the Aquitani of Gaul, south-west of the Loire, and the Ligurians along the coast of the Gulf of Genoa as far west as the Rhone were probably different tribes of Iberians, cut off from each other as ethnographic islands by the inundation of Celts from the east. Among modern representatives of the Iberians are probably the Welsh; the so-called “Black Celts” of south-west Ireland, and Ireland west of the Shannon; the Basques at the westerly end of the Pyrenees in south-west France and north-east Spain; the natives of Corsica, Sardinia, and Sicily; and the Berbers of northern Africa. A strong Iberic infusion also probably exists in Cornwall, in the midland and fen counties of England (Derby, Leicester, and Lincoln), and in the Highlands (north of the Grampians) and Western Isles of Scotland, where they are scattered among the predominant Caledonian population. All these peoples present the same characteristic Iberian physical marks: short stature; dark hair, eyes, and skin; and dolicocephalic or long-headed skulls. In Britain, in common with the rest of Europe, there is an unbroken ethnical continuity from Neolithic times to the present day.

4. *Men of the Bronze Age.* The Neolithic tribes spread over the whole of Great Britain and Ireland, and appear to have been the undisturbed occupants of the country during several thousand years. Finally, however, their possession

was disputed by invaders or immigrants from the continent of Europe. These new-comers, who introduced the use of bronze, seem to have been of two distinct races, one, Aryan, being the Goidelic or Gaelic Celts, from Gaul; the other, non-Aryan, being a Finnish or Ugrian race from northern Europe. Both were tall races, the men averaging 5 ft. 8½ in. in height, and both had broad or round skulls (*brachycephalic*). The Celts were fair-haired, with fierce blue eyes; the Finnish immigrants probably had straight red hair and gray eyes. The Celtic skulls are strongly prognathic, both jaws projecting far beyond the vertical line from the forehead, which was high, broad, and expanded. They were in a stage of culture in advance of their Neolithic predecessors, as is implied in the use of bronze; and they also manufactured a pottery of a superior character. The Finnish invaders first introduced into Britain the art of writing, many inscriptions and other specimens of which have been discovered in recent times. The language has not yet been deciphered; but the character is alphabetic, not hieroglyphic, and is similar to that on the so-called Ogam-stones.

The new-comers, whether Celts or Finns, seem to have finally mingled peaceably and intermarried with the earlier Neolithic population. Skeletons of both races have been found buried together in many of the tombs, and skeletons have also been found intermediate between the two types.

The Bronze age in Britain is distinctly divisible into two stages, an earlier and a later. The advance in civilization which this age shows over the Neolithic is evidenced by the great variety of articles found in the burial-places, hundreds of which have been examined. These include: *stone* arrow and lance heads, poniards, knives, scrapers, chisels, saws, axes, axe-hammers, beads, and buttons; *shell* necklaces; pins, combs, beads, and tweezers of *bone* or *teeth*; *amber* beads, buttons, and rings; *jet* buttons, rings, beads, and pendants in large numbers; *glass* beads; *gold* ornaments; *bronze* axes, knives, daggers, drills, pins, awls, bracelets, ear-rings, and beads; and numerous articles of pottery. In the later Bronze age there were introduced bronze swords, scabbards, spears, palstaves, and socketed celts. During the Bronze age the practise of cremation was first introduced into Britain. When the Celts first appeared in western Europe they were in the stone age; but before going over into Britain they acquired a knowledge of bronze, probably from the Etruscan or Pelasgic races dwelling in south-east Europe. They were, at all events, well acquainted with the use of bronze when they first appeared in Britain.

5. *The Iron Age.* The Goidelic or Gaelic Celts were succeeded in Britain by another wave of Celts, of a different variety and speaking a different dialect. These were the Kymric or Brythonic Celts. They brought with them a knowledge of the use of iron, and displaced their Gaelic predecessors from England and Wales. The Gaelic branch of the Celts is now represented by the Gaelic people of Ireland, northern Scotland, and the Isle of Man; the Kymric by the Celts of Wales and Brittany. The date of the introduction of iron into Britain cannot be fixed, but it must have been many centuries before the Christian era. The use of bronze disappeared in Britain more than 150 years before Christ; and in Gaul probably long before. In the time of Hesiod, 850 B.C., iron had already superseded bronze among the Greeks. The introduction of iron into Britain corresponds with a change in the burial customs. Cremation was still carried on to some extent, but the novel practice was introduced of burying the dead *at full length* in a stone chamber or shallow pit, along with articles used in daily life, instead of burying them in a sitting or crouching posture, as had been the custom in the Bronze age.

6. *The Belgæ.* The next invaders or immigrants into Britain were the Belgæ. Some centuries before the Christian era, they came from the neighboring continent between the Seine and the Rhine. At the date of the Roman conquest of Britain, they occupied that portion of the country which lies south of the Thames, between what are now Dorsetshire and Sussex. They were a tall race, with light brown hair; but whether Celts or Teutons or a mixture of both is a point as yet undetermined by ethnologists. One recent authority, indeed—Mr. Henry C. Coote—contends that the Belgæ were Teutonic in race and in language; that they occupied all South-east Britain from Dorset to the Frith of Forth; that they are the main foundation of the modern English people; and that their language is the basis of modern English.* These views, however, have not been generally accepted by English historians.

* See his "Romans in Britain," pp. 21-41.

CHAPTER II.

THE DAWN OF HISTORY.

1. *The Etruscans and Britain.* The earliest communication between Britain and the historic races of Europe was made during the Iron age—that is, when the Kymric Celts had obtained possession of England and Wales. The historic race with which communication was first effected was probably the Etruscans. This remarkable people were apparently a mixed race, built upon a Pelasgic foundation. As early as the 15th century before Christ they were a powerful maritime people, then dwelling probably in what is now Turkey-in-Europe. At that date they joined with the Sardones (a people of Southern Gaul) in a formidable maritime expedition against Egypt, but were defeated by Rameses II., the Sesostris of the Greeks. About 1100 B.C. they crossed the Alps into Italy, and in process of time made themselves masters of the country as far as the Gulf of Salerno just south of Naples. Between 396 B.C. and 280 B.C. they were conquered and absorbed by the Romans. They extended their trade by various overland routes to the Baltic, Denmark, Sweden, Gaul, Britain, and Ireland. Their most noteworthy talent was the working of gold, in which they surpassed any people who have ever lived, before or since. Works of Etruscan art have been found in graves of the prehistoric Iron age in England, Wales, and Ireland. One of the most remarkable is a corselet found in 1832 in a cairn or burial-mound near Mold, in North Wales. It was made of a thin plate of gold, 3 ft. 7 in. long and 8 in. wide, weighing 17 oz., the value of the metal alone being over \$300. It is beautifully ornamented in *repoussé* with nail-head and dotted-line pattern.* Its exact date is unknown, but it may have been as early as 1000 B. C., or as late as the Roman occupation.

2. *The Phœnicians and Britain.* Contemporaneous with the Etruscans were the Phœnicians. In the centuries before and after 1000 B.C. they were the great carriers in the

* It is figured in Prof. Dawkins's "Early Man in Britain," p. 432.

Mediterranean. They founded Gadeira or Gades (now Cadiz, in Spain) about 1100 B.C., and speedily occupied the whole southern coast of Spain. Not long after their defeat and the capture of Tyre in 859 B.C. by the Assyrians under Assurnasir-habal they shifted the principal seat of their power west-erly, by founding Carthage about 850 B.C. It has been generally thought that at a later date there was direct intercourse between the Phœnician colonies in Spain and Britain and Ireland, and that Phœnician traders resorted to Cornwall and the Scilly Islands for the sake of tin. Pliny, writing about A.D. 70, states that in B.C. 500 Himilco set out from Gades and reached the coast of "Insula Sacra" (the Sacred Isle), inhabited by the races of the Hibernians. It seems certain, however, that Pliny was mistaken with regard to the island mentioned by Himilco, which was in reality a small island on the west coast of Gaul, near the mouth of the Loire, to which women from the mainland resorted for the purpose of performing barbarous religious rites. Before arriving anywhere near Britain Himilco was driven by a storm westerly as far as the Sargasso Sea, in the middle of the Atlantic, whence he returned to Spain, discovering the Azores on the way. There is no doubt that many centuries before the Christian era the Phœnicians voyaged to the *Cēstrymnides*, or *Cassiterides* or Tin Islands (from the Greek *cassiteros*, tin), for the sake of procuring tin, which rare metal was especially valuable in those early times, on account of its entering into the composition of bronze. The *Cassiterides*, however, were not, as has been generally supposed, the Scilly Islands, but a group of islands, ten in number, off Vigo Bay, on the north-west coast of Spain. On the whole, then, it is very doubtful whether the Phœnicians, at any time, held direct intercourse with Britain. No article of Phœnician manufacture has yet been found in Britain; and the only traces (if any) of such intercourse which now remain are certain geographical names in Cornwall, such as Tamar and Uxella, which some authorities believe to be of Phœnician origin.

3. *The Greeks and Britain.* The next historic people who came in contact with Britain were the Greeks. A work attributed to Aristotle (and reputed to have been written about 345 B.C.) mentions Albion* and Ierne as the two chief British Isles beyond the Celtæ (meaning the Celts of Gaul). It is now known, however, that this work was not written by

*Albion was the name by which Britain was known to the Celtic inhabitants. Its meaning and derivation are unknown; it is not certain even that the word is Celtic. Albyn, one of the poetical names of

Aristotle, and its exact date is unknown. Massilia (now Marseilles), in Gaul, was founded as a Greek colony by the Phœceans about 600 B. C. From this port it was that the earliest authentic voyage was made from any Mediterranean country to Britain. About the year 325 B.C., Pytheas, a Greek astronomer and mathematician of that city, set sail with an expedition to explore the northern seas. Passing between the Pillars of Hercules, as the Straits of Gibraltar were then called, he coasted along Lusitania (Portugal), northern Hispania (Spain), and west Gaul. He then went northwards to Britain, along which he coasted westerly a short distance, and then returning, went northerly as far probably as Norfolk. From this point he, in six days, crossed the North Sea to "Thule" (Norway), along which he coasted till he got beyond the Arctic circle into the region of perpetual day. Returning south he reached the mouth of the Rhine, whence he voyaged north-easterly along the coast among the Amber Islands as far as Denmark. The principal Amber Islands lay along the coast between the Rhine and the Elbe. He next revisited Britain and made his way back to the Mediterranean. He wrote (probably about 320 B.C.) a diary of his voyages, fragments of which are still extant as quotations in the works of a few ancient authors, who have thus preserved notices of the earliest authentic voyage from the Mediterranean to Britain. Pytheas seems to have had some knowledge of the eastern coast as far north as the Shetland Isles. He spent some time with the natives in the south-east, near Gaul, and states that they grew plenty of wheat, which was gathered in sheaves into large barns where the threshing was done; and that they drank beer made from barley, and also mead or metheglin, an intoxicating liquor made from wheat and honey. It seems probable that at about the date of the visit of Pytheas, or soon afterwards, Greek or Macedonian coins, of the date of Philip and Alexander the Great, were introduced into Britain. The natives of south-east Britain, between the Wash and Dorset, themselves began to coin unlettered gold pieces, modelled on those of Greece or Gaul, at least as early as 200-150 B.C.

Britain is referred to by a few other Greek writers before the date of Cæsar's invasion. Polybius, for instance, writing about 140 B.C., mentions the Britannic Isles and the working of tin. A half a century later (probably about 100 or 90 B.C.) Posidonius of Rhodes visited Bolerium or Belerion (as he

Scotland, is another form of the word. The common supposition that it was derived from the Latin *alba*, white, in allusion to the chalk cliffs of the south-east coast, is erroneous,

named Cornwall) and described the natives and their method of working tin. For centuries before Cæsar's advent the natives of Britain carried on a considerable trade with their continental neighbors, especially with the Veneti, who dwelt along the west coast of Gaul, north-west of the Loire, in what is now Morbihan.

The next historic people of continental Europe who came into contact with Britain were the Romans, and it is with them that the real history of Britain, and a continuous chronological record, commence.

CHAPTER III.

ROMAN BRITAIN.

B.C. 55. Late in the summer of this year Julius Cæsar prepares to cross from Gaul to Britain. On hearing of his intention several of the tribes send ambassadors to him, to promise hostages and submission to Rome. Cæsar sends them home accompanied by Commius, with instructions for him to exhort as many tribes as possible to embrace the Roman alliance. When Commius's mission becomes known he is placed in bonds, whereupon Cæsar embarks (about 24 Aug.) with two legions (about 12,000 men), in 80 ships and some galleys, and sails to Britain. After a severe battle with the natives he lands, probably near the site of Deal. The natives sue for peace, release Commius, and give hostages. A storm destroys a part of Cæsar's fleet, and the Britons twice again attack him, but are repulsed. They again sue for and are granted peace, and Cæsar returns to Gaul (shortly before 21 Sep.), not having penetrated Britain more than a mile from his landing-place.

54. Cæsar, with 5 legions (about 30,000 men) and 2000 cavalry, in over 800 vessels, again lands in Britain (about 18 July), marches 12 miles inland, and defeats the natives. His fleet is damaged by a storm; after repairing it he advances inland, crosses the Thames (probably near the site of Walton, about 17 miles west of London), and defeats the Catuvelauni, under Cassivelaunus, whereupon some of the tribes submit, including the Trinobantes in Essex. The stronghold of Cassivelaunus, near Verulamium (now St. Albans, in Hertfordshire), is taken, and he also submits. Cæsar returns to Gaul (probably early in Sep.), and the Romans make no further attempt to conquer Britain for nearly a century.

At the date of Cæsar's invasion the native Britons with whom he came in contact were a semi-barbarous race, those in the interior being less civilized than the people living on the coast near Gaul. They commonly used dressed skins for clothing, though some wore garments made of coarse cloth. They painted their bodies with woad, a blue dye resembling indigo,

obtained from the root-leaves of the woad plant (*isatis tinctoria*), a biennial belonging to the Cruciferae or mustard family. They shaved the hair off the face except from the upper lip, but allowed the hair of the head to grow long. The people in the interior used but little grain, which was not stored in barns as in the regions near the coast, but was preserved underground till wanted. They had abundant cattle, however, and lived mostly on flesh and milk. They were too ignorant to make cheese. Before Cæsar's landing iron-mines were probably worked in the weald of Kent and Sussex, and perhaps pig-lead in the Mendip Hills of Somerset. Bronze, ivory, amber, and other articles were imported from the continent. The natives also made rude pottery. They used canoes, hollowed from the trunks of trees, and also coracles, or small boats made of wicker-work covered with hides. They also constructed rude fortresses for the purpose of defence, and in battle used war-chariots with great skill. In religion they were polytheists of the Aryan type; every locality had its divinity, and the rivers were specially identified with certain divine beings. Cæsar's invasion led to a good deal of indirect intercourse between Britain and Rome, which resulted in a wider diffusion of some of the arts of civilization among the natives.

The name Britain was derived from the Latin *Britannia*, which was taken from the name of the people, *Britanni*. The people called themselves Brīttōnes (singular Brītto), which in the Welsh branch of the language became Brythons. This last is probably the name by which this branch of the Celts, as distinguished from the Goidelic or Gaelic, called themselves while still on the continent of Europe, before they came to Britain. Its meaning seems to be equivalent to "clothing," thus indicating a race which wore garments made of cloth instead of skin, and distinguishing themselves from their more savage neighbors on the continent, who were still in the palæolithic or neolithic stage of civilization. The modern word "braid" is probably a derivative or cognate form of the same word.

B.C. 30. About this date, probably, the natives in south-eastern Britain, from Kent to Wilts, begin to make lettered coins—that is, coins with words or other inscriptions on them.

A.D. 40. The principal king or tribal chief in Britain is Cunobelin (the Cymbeline of Shakspeare), who ruled over the Catuvelauni and the Trinobantes, tribes occupying the country north of the Thames from Gloucester to the North Sea (now Oxford, Bucks, Bedford, Herts, Middlesex, and Essex). He died between 40 and 43, leaving his kingdom to his two sons, Togodumnus and Caractacus (Caradoc).

43. Claudius, Emperor of Rome, sends 4 legions (the 2d, 9th, 14th, and 20th) and auxiliaries (probably 50,000 men) under Aulus Plautius to conquer Britain. The army sails, probably from Gesoriacum (Boulogne), lands either in Kent or near the site of Southampton, marches towards the Thames, and in a series of battles defeats the natives under Caractacus and Togodumnus. The latter is slain, and Caractacus takes refuge with the Silures in south-east Wales. Claudius comes to Britain, crosses the Thames, and captures Camulodunum (on the site of Lexden, a mile from Colchester, in Essex), the capital of the late king, Cunobelin. Several tribes submit, and Claudius, after remaining in the island for only seventeen days, returns to Rome and enjoys a triumph. Plautius, with the assistance of Vespasian and Titus (both of whom afterwards became emperor), continues the war, and in a few years conquers south-east Britain as far north as the Ouse, and as far west as the borders of Dorset and Somerset. Camulodunum (near Colchester) and Glevum (now Gloucester) become important stations.

47. Publius Ostorius Scapula is made *proprætor* or commander in Britain.

50. He extends the Roman conquests as far north as the Trent. The Iceni, or Eцени, a tribe inhabiting what are now Norfolk, Suffolk, and Cambridgeshire, revolt, but are defeated (probably near the site of Daventry, a town about 11 miles north-west of Northampton), though not subdued, by Ostorius. He then turns his arms successfully against the Cangi (a tribe occupying what is now Carnarvon, in north Wales) and the Brigantes, a tribe occupying the country between the Trent and the Tweed.

Caractacus, at the head of the Silures, after having carried on war against the Romans for eight years, is defeated by Ostorius, and takes refuge among the Brigantes. The site of Caractacus's defeat is not determined, but it was probably either at Coxwall Knoll, on the borders of Herefordshire, or at Briedden Hill in Shropshire.

51. Cartismandua, queen of the Brigantes, delivers him up to the Romans, by whom he is sent prisoner to Rome, where his manly bearing procures the emperor's pardon.

Shortly afterwards and before the Silures are finally subdued, Ostorius dies; he is succeeded as commander in Britain by Aulus Didius.

54. Claudius is poisoned by his wife Agrippina to make room for her son Nero, who succeeds as emperor.

57. Veranius succeeds Didius as commander in Britain.

58. Veranius dies, and Nero sends Caius Suetonius Paulinus to take command in Britain.

59. Suetonius partially conquers Mona (Anglesey), the centre of Druidical influence, and destroys the sacred groves.

60. About this date Prasutagus, king of the Iceni, dies, leaving his property to the Roman emperor jointly with his own daughters. He did this for the purpose of propitiating the Romans, but they make it a pretext for wholly appropriating his territory.

61. The Iceni, under their queen, Boudicca (usually but erroneously called Boadicea), rise in revolt, defeat the 9th legion, capture the Roman stations at Camulodunum, Verulamium (now St. Albans, in Hertfordshire), and Londinium (London), and slaughter 70,000 or 80,000 of the inhabitants.

62. Suetonius marches from north Wales with the 14th and part of the 20th legions, defeats the Iceni in a pitched battle (somewhere between London and Colchester), and quells the revolt. Boudicca dies, either of grief or by poison; and Suetonius is recalled to Rome.

69. Vespasian becomes Emperor of Rome. He sends to Britain his general Petilius Cerealis, who partially conquers the Brigantes (69-70).

75. Vespasian sends to Britain his general, Sextus Julius Frontinus, and he finally reduces the Silures.

78. Vespasian makes Cnæas Julius Agricola commander or legate in Britain; Agricola completes the conquest of Wales and Mona.

79. Vespasian dies; his son Titus succeeds as emperor. Agricola captures Isurium (now Aldborough, 16 miles north-west of York, and 5 miles south of Ripon), the capital of the Brigantes.

80. Agricola completes the conquest of the Brigantes, extends the Roman conquests to the Tyne, and ravages the country as far as the Tay. He erects a line of forts from the Solway Frith to the mouth of the Tyne. A Roman legion is settled at Eburacum or Eburakon (now York.)

81. Agricola begins the task of reclaiming Britain from its forests and morasses; he penetrates Caledonia* as far as the

* The name Caledonians, which first occurs in Lucan (about A.D. 65), was given by the Romans at first to the people who occupied what is now central Scotland (the counties of Argyll and Perth, and the south-west half of Forfar and the north-east half of Fife). It was taken from Calidones, the name by which the people called themselves; their country they called Celyddon (or Calidon), a mutilated form of which still remains in the latter half of the name

Forth, and erects a line of forts between the Friths of Forth and Clyde. Titus dies ; Domitian succeeds as emperor.

83-5. Agricola carries on war for three years north of the Forth, and also subdues the extreme south-west of Caledonia (afterwards called Galloway, now Wigton, Kirkcudbright, and parts of Ayr and Dumfries).

84-5. His fleet sails north, winters at a port called by Tacitus Trucculensis or Trutulensis (probably in Aberdeen), sails through Pentland Frith, circumnavigates Britain, and thus for the first time demonstrates it to be an island.

85. He defeats the Caledonians under Galgacus or Calgacus in a great battle (of Mons Granpius or Graupius), fought probably at the confluence of the Isla and the Tay (about 10 miles north-east of the site of Perth).

86. Domitian recalls him from Britain.

86-117. During this period the natives of Caledonia overrun the northern province between the Forth and the Tyne, conquered by Agricola, which consequently regains its independence.

117. Trajan dies; Hadrian is proclaimed Emperor of Rome (11 Aug.).

120. Hadrian comes to Britain to quell an incipient insurrection. He brings the 6th legion with him.

121. He commences a continuous line of fortifications, 74 miles long, from Solway Firth to the mouth of the

Dunkeld. During the Roman period of Britain a vast forest, called by the Romans *Silva Caledonia* (Caledonian Forest) and by the Britons *Coed Celyddon* (wood of Calidon), stretched across central Scotland from Loch Lomond to Dunkeld on the Tay, and the Caledonians occupied the country from the southern limit of this forest to the Grampians. The country north of the Grampians and also the Western Isles were occupied by Ivernians, non-Celtic tribes, probably non-Aryans, similar to the prehistoric non-Celtic people of Ireland, where the Ivernian language became extinct in the eighth century A.D. The country to the south of the forest and north of the Cheviots was occupied by the Dumnonii and Otadini, tribes of Brythonic or Kymric Celts. What is now called Galloway (Wigton, Kirkcudbright, and parts of Ayr and Dumfries), as well as Westmoreland and Cumberland, were occupied by tribes of Gaelic Celts allied to the Caledonians. Tacitus describes the Caledonians as having large limbs and red hair, and he considered them to be of Germanic origin. The red hair would seem rather to point to a Finnish origin. Possibly they were Gaelic Celts with a strong Finnish admixture, or possibly a hybrid race produced by a union between the Gaelic Celts, the Ivernians to the north of them, and the Brythonic Celts to the south. Their language was Gaelic. After a time the name Caledonians was applied by the Romans as a general term to all the tribes in northern Britain unconquered by them.

Tyne, that is, from Bowness, west of Carlisle, to Wall's End, near Newcastle, connecting Agricola's forts. Its remains still exist under the name of "the Roman Wall." In its final shape its structure was as follows: On the north side, towards the barbarians, was a ditch or trench, 15 feet deep, 10 feet wide at the bottom, and 35 at the top, with earthen ramparts. South of the ditch, and keeping close company with it, was a stone wall varying from 12 to 15 feet in height and from 6 to 9 feet in thickness. South of this wall, at an interval varying according to the nature of the ground, was a vallum, consisting of three ramparts formed of earth mingled with masses of stone; and between the two most northerly of these ramparts was a foss or ditch. The remains of these ramparts at present stand six or seven feet above the level of the neighboring ground. Between this vallum and the stone wall was a military road, along which, at intervals, were stations, *castella* or mile castles, and turrets or watch-towers. The stations numbered 17 or 18, and were about 4 miles apart; they were quadrangular, enclosing an area of from 3 to 6 acres, surrounded by a wall 5 feet thick, and having a ditch and earthen ramparts outside. The mile castles were placed against the south side of the stone wall, at intervals of about a Roman mile (or 7 furlongs, English measure); they were quadrangular, about 60 or 70 feet each way. The turrets or watch-towers somewhat resembled stone sentry-boxes; they were about 10 feet square, and four of them were placed between each of the mile castles and its nearest neighbor. This great work seems to have been mainly constructed by the 2d, 6th, and 20th legions.

138. Hadrian dies; Antoninus Pius becomes emperor.

139. The Brigantes north of Hadrian's wall having broken through that barrier and overrun the country to the south of it, Antoninus sends to Britain Lollius Urbicus, who subdues the tribes between Hadrian's wall and the Frith of Forth.

140. Urbicus constructs a turf wall or earthen rampart, about 27 miles long, connecting Agricola's forts between the Frith of Clyde and the Frith of Forth (from Chapel-hill, near West Kilpatrick, on the Clyde, to Bridgeness, near Carriden, on the Firth of Forth). The wall was strengthened (A.D. 210) and a ditch added. The ditch was 40 feet wide and 20 feet deep; and the wall, which ran close to its south side, was 20 feet high and 24 feet thick, and had a platform behind for the soldiers. The forts or larger stations were 19 in number, less than two miles apart, and so placed as to be in view of each

other. They were connected from end to end of the barrier by a military way, 20 feet wide. The remains of this fortification, still extant, are known as "Graham's Dyke." Lollius Urbicus remained in office in Britain for 20 years (until 159); he extended the Roman power north to the Moray Frith, and under him the Roman dominion in Britain reached its greatest extent.

161. Antoninus dies; Marcus Aurelius succeeds as emperor.

162. The Caledonians break through the northern wall, and create trouble, and Calphurnius Agricola is sent to Britain to subdue them.

180. Marcus Aurelius dies; his son Commodus succeeds as emperor.

182. The Caledonians again break through the northern wall and attack the Romans. Marcellus Ulpius is sent against them, and gains advantages over them.

193. Severus becomes emperor (14 Ap.). Clodius Albinus is governor in Britain, and Caius Pescennius Niger in Syria; the latter is proclaimed emperor by his troops. In order to prevent a simultaneous attack upon him by these generals, Severus causes Albinus to be proclaimed Cæsar, jointly with himself, with Britain as the seat of his government.

194. Severus defeats Niger at Issus in Asia Minor, and captures and slays him.

196. Severus quarrels with Albinus and prepares to attack him in Britain.

197. Albinus thereupon crosses to Gaul with an army, but is defeated at Lugdunum (now Lyons), and kills himself (19 Feb.). Severus becomes undisputed emperor. He makes Vivius Lupus proprætor or governor in Britain.

201. The Caledonians and Mæatæ* threaten hostilities against Roman Britain, and Lupus purchases peace with them.

204. Severus divides Roman Britain into two provinces, Upper and Lower Britain. Their limits cannot now be ascertained, but the Humber was probably the dividing line. The northern province was Lower Britain; and the southern, Upper. The 2d legion was stationed at Isca Silurum, or Caerleon on Usk (in Monmouth); the 20th at Deva (Chester); and the 6th at Eburacum (York).

*This is the first mention of this nation. Their tribes probably occupied the plains and marshes immediately north of the wall of Antoninus (between the Clyde and Forth), whence probably their name (from *magh*, a plain). The Caledonians dwelt in the wooded and mountainous country beyond the Mæatæ.

208. He comes to Britain with his sons Caracalla and Geta. Leaving Geta to govern southern Britain, and taking Caracalla with him, he undertakes a campaign against the Caledonians and the Mæataë. In spite of a loss, it is said, of some 50,000 soldiers, Severus perseveres in his conquest till he reaches the Moray Frith. He makes roads, builds bridges, clears the country of jungles, takes observations of the sun, and notes the length of the day.

210. He finishes the wall of Antoninus between the Clyde and Forth, repairing it, and strengthening it by the addition of the ditch and new stations along the wall. He also enacted a code of laws, and probably established a school of Roman law at Eburacum (York).

211. He dies at Eburacum (York), 4 Feb. ; his two sons, Caracalla and Geta, succeed him as joint emperors.

285. The British seas being infested by piratical fleets of the Franks, the Romans, about this date, fit out a fleet in Gaul to protect the coast, of which Carausius, a Menapian, is made commander.

287. Saxon pirates, from the country between the Rhine and the Elbe, first appear on the coast of Gaul. They come in flat-bottomed boats, some of which are 70 feet long, and manned by fifty oars. After decimating their captives they carry off the survivors as slaves. Carausius, having leagued with the Frankish pirates for the purpose of sharing their booty, seizes the great naval station of Gesoriacum (now Boulogne, in France), and in order to save himself from punishment, goes over to Britain, and usurps imperial power there. He rules for six years.

290. Maximian and Diocletian, joint emperors, after an ineffectual attempt to subdue Carausius, come to terms with him, and associate him with them in the empire, as ruler in Gaul and Britain.

292. Maximian and Diocletian invite Galerius and Constantius Chlorus to share in the empire as Cæsars ; Gaul and Britain are entrusted to Constantius, who captures Gesoriacum.

293. Carausius is slain by one of his followers, Allectus, who also usurps the government of Britain, and, with the support of the Franks, reigns for nearly three years.

296. To reconquer Britain Constantius fits out an expedition in two divisions, one, under himself, at Gesoriacum ; the other, under Asclepiodotus, at the mouth of the Seine. Asclepiodotus sails first, and lands (in Hampshire) ; Allectus advances from Londinium to meet him, but is defeated and

slain (probably near Blackmoor in Hampshire).^{*} His Frankish soldiers fall back on and plunder Londinium (London), then probably unfortified. Constantius follows, joins Asclepiodotus, and the united forces push on to Londinium and defeat the remnant of the Franks.

304. Diocletian and Maximian, joint emperors, appoint Constantius governor of Britain.

St. Alban, Britain's protomartyr, suffers death during the Diocletian persecution about this date.

305. Maximian, as Emperor of the West, resigns in favor of Constantius (May).

306. Constantius wages successful war against the Picts,[†] as the Caledonians and Mæatæ now come to be called. He dies at Eburacum (York), 25 July; and his son Constantine (afterwards called "the Great") is chosen by the army in Britain as Emperor of the West. His title is confirmed in 307. He divides Britain into four Provinces; *Britannia Prima* (south of Thames, Severn, and Bristol Channel); *Britannia Secunda* (Wales); *Flavia Cesariensis* (between the Thames and Humber); *Maxima Cesariensis* (north of the Humber).

314. Three British bishops attend the Council of Arles.

323. Constantine becomes sole emperor.

324. He exhorts his subjects to abandon Paganism.

330. He proclaims Christianity as the religion of the Roman Empire, and orders the heathen temples to be destroyed.

337. He dies; the empire is divided between his three sons, Britain falling to the eldest, Constantine II.

340. Constantine II. is slain near Aquileia (now Aquileja, near Trieste, in Austria, at the head of the Adriatic); Constans becomes Emperor of the West, including Britain. The Picts renew their inroads on the north, and Constans comes to Britain to repel them.

350. Constans is murdered, and Constantius II. becomes sole emperor.

359. British bishops attend the Council of Ariminum.

^{*} In 1873 Lord Selborne dug up at Blackmoor an enormous find of 29,788 Roman coins, which, it is surmised, were buried there by Allectus before this battle.

[†] Towards the end of the 3d century, the fashion of painting the body had so far fallen into disuse in Roman Britain, that the nations beyond the northern wall, by whom the custom was still followed, came to be known as *Picti*, Picts, from the Latin word *pictus*, painted. The word *Picti* was thus used for the first time in 296, by Eumenius. See Rhys, "Celtic Britain," p. 238.

360. Constantius II. dies; Julian the Apostate becomes emperor. The Scotti or Scots,* from Ireland, cross over to Wales and the coast of what are now Cumberland and Lancashire, and attack Roman Britain in concert with the Picts. Lupicinius is sent by Julian to Britain to repel them.

361. Lupicinius lands at Rutupiæ (now Richborough in Kent) and marches to London, then called Londinium Augusta.

363. Valentinian I. becomes emperor. The Picts and Scots are joined by the Atecotti (a brave race dwelling in south-west Caledonia, between the two Roman walls), and the united barbarians invade Roman Britain.

364. Saxon pirates first attack Britain; from this time onward their attacks are incessant. Their mark was the coast between the Isle of Wight and the Wash, which in consequence came to be known as *Litus Saxonicus* ("The Saxon Shore"); and a special officer, called *Comes Litoris Saxonici* ("Count of the Saxon Shore"), was appointed to guard it.

369. The Picts and Atecotti, having leagued themselves with the Scots and with the Saxon pirates who infest the British seas, break through the southern wall (Hadrian's), and attack Roman Britain. The Scots from Ireland again attack through Wales; Saxon pirates also successfully attack the south-east shore (the Saxon shore). Valentinian sends to Britain Theodosius, who drives back the invaders. The Saxons retreat to the Orkneys, the Scots to Ireland, and the Picts to the country north of the wall of Antoninus, between the Clyde and Forth. Theodosius reannexes the country between the walls to Roman Britain, names it *Valentia* in honor of the emperor, and enrolls the Atecotti in the Roman armies of the continent, where they prove themselves among the bravest of the Roman soldiers.

370. Theodosius returns to the continent, leaving Marcus Clemens Maximus in command in Britain.

383. Maximus, commander of the Roman army in Britain, gets himself proclaimed emperor.

384. He repels the Picts and Scots.

387. With an army drained from Britain he goes to the continent to contend for the empire, but is defeated by

* This word is probably of Celtic origin, and like the Latin *Picti*, means painted, or rather, scarred or disfigured. It was probably given by the Celts of Roman Britain to these new invaders from Ireland, referring to the disfigurement of their bodies by painting. These latter called themselves Cruithni, Latinized Cruitheni or Cruithenii. See Rhys, "Celtic Britain," p. 239 et seq.

Theodosius in Italy. Britain is now almost defenceless against the Picts and Scots.

388. Maximus is captured at Aquileia in Italy, and beheaded (28 July).

395. The Roman empire is finally divided into East and West. Honorius, a boy of ten, succeeds as Emperor of the West; the famous general, Stilicho, acts as his guardian.

The semi-mythical St. Patrick, apostle of the Irish Church, is born at Nemthur. This is a Celtic name, meaning "heavenly waters." Its site is uncertain, having been variously located in France, Scotland, Wales, and Ireland. Its most probably site, however, was, as the name seems to indicate, near Bath, in Somersetshire, England, a spot even then famous for its hot springs. Its Roman name was Aquæ Solis, "waters of the sun," almost the exact equivalent of Nemthur.*

396. Stilicho sends a legion to Britain, which drives back the Picts and Scots, and garrisons the northern wall. This was the last serious effort of the Romans to maintain their power in Britain.

402. The Roman troops are withdrawn from Britain, and the Picts and Scots renew their devastations.

406. In answer to an appeal from the Britons for help, Stilicho again sends Roman troops to Britain. During this one year these troops successively elect Marcus, Gratian, and Constantine ("the Usurper") Emperor of the West. Only two Roman legions are now in Britain, one at Eburacum (York), the other at Rutupiæ (Richborough) in Kent. They are sufficient only to garrison Hadrian's wall and the Kentish coast; the other stations are neglected or abandoned.

407. Constantine the Usurper, with a large part of the Roman troops and the flower of the British youth among his forces, crosses to the continent, and establishes his power in Gaul, Spain, and at Vienna.

409. Gerontius, a Briton, Constantine's general in Spain, revolts against him, and incites the Germans to invade Britain, which they do. Britain is also again harassed by the Picts and Scots.

410. The Britons apply to Honorius for help, and he tells them to help themselves. This they do vigorously; they also send away all the remaining Roman officials, and the Roman government in Britain practically comes to an end.

411. Constantine the Usurper is besieged in Arles by the Roman general, Constantius; made prisoner; sent to Italy, and

* See Dublin Review, Oct., 1886, pp. 314-334.

put to death (18 Sep.) before reaching Ravenna, then the residence of the Roman emperor. Constantius then turns his forces against Gerontius, whose own men conspire against him, and Gerontius, after killing his wife and servant at their request, commits suicide. It was probably on the events of the career of Gerontius that the legendary history of Vortigern, the mythical King of Britain, was founded.

The Romans, though they planted colonies at various places in Britain, made no attempt to displace the Celtic population. During their possession of nearly 400 years, they held and governed it simply as conquerors, much in the same way that the English hold India to-day. In the geographical names of places, in their magnificent roads, and in the ruins of their cities and villas, however, they have left indelible traces of their occupation. Among Latin names may be mentioned those of places ending with *caster*, *cester*, or *chester*, such as Doncaster, Gloucester, Dorchester, the terminations in which are simply the Latin *castrum*, a fortified town or city, marking the site of a Roman fortified station, in the neighborhood of which a town would naturally spring up. The Roman roads (or "streets," as they came to be called, from the Latin *via strata*) which still traverse the country are recognizable by their straightness. Speedy travel being important for military purposes, they were made as direct as possible, going straight over obstacles, like a modern railway, instead of deviating to avoid them. At fixed intervals along the roads were posting-stations, where relays of horses were kept. The foundations of ruined Roman cities and villas, many of the latter being luxurious and magnificent dwellings, heated by furnaces with hot air, with beautifully tessellated pavements, and walls frescoed with paintings of nymphs, hunting-scenes, and other subjects, have been discovered in every part of England, Wales, and southern Scotland, as far north as the northern wall between the Clyde and Forth, and as far west as the extremity of Cornwall. The towns were built with rectangular streets; and at a late period of the Roman occupation were usually surrounded with a wall, to protect them from the attacks of the Picts and Scots, and the Frankish and Saxon pirates. They possessed fine public buildings, such as baths, theatres, and temples, remains of which still exist.

Roman London (*Londinium Augusta*) extended a mile along the Thames, from the present site of Ludgate to the Tower, and was half a mile wide from the wall on the north



WILLIAM I.—P, 111.



WILLIAM AND HIS SON ROBERT AT GERBEROI.—P. 116.

to the river. The houses were built of brick with red-tiled roofs, with narrow streets or alleys. It was surrounded with a wall 20 feet high and 10 feet thick, made of concrete with a facing of worked-stone bonded with courses of bricks. Many portions of this wall have been uncovered in recent years in digging for the foundations of new buildings. It was probably built by Theodosius, during the reign of Valentinian (A.D. 370). The city soon spread outside of it. A bridge was thrown across the river at an early date, on the site of the present London bridge; and a suburb sprang up on the south side of the river, on the site of the present Southwark.

During the Roman occupation the people enjoyed almost unbroken peace ("*Pax Romana*," "the Roman Peace"), and under the tutelage of their masters they made considerable progress in the arts of civilization, especially in and near the towns; and they made a corresponding advance in wealth and luxury. During or after the time of Carausius (A.D. 287), mints were established at Camulodunum (Colchester), Verulamium (St. Albans), Londinium (London), Rutupiaë or Ritupiaë (Richborough), and Clausentium (now Bitterne, near Southampton); but coins struck in Rome were circulated in Britain as early as the reigns of Augustus, Tiberius, and Caligula. An extensive commerce was carried on with the continent; and in the days of the Emperor Julian (A.D. 360) sufficient corn was grown in Britain for export to freight 800 vessels, by which it was carried to the mouth of the Rhine.

Hunting for sport was much indulged in, the wild ox, stag, bear, wolf, and beaver being the principal spoil.

The date of the introduction of Christianity is unknown, but it was probably in the first century. Tertullian, writing in A.D. 208, alludes to the existence of a Church in Britain; and "between 386 and 400 there was a settled Church in Britain, with edifices, altars, scriptures, discipline, holding the Catholic faith, and having intercourse with Rome and Palestine."* St. Patrick, the apostle of the Irish Church, was born A.D. 395. At the age of 16 he was carried off by the Scots of Ireland as a slave, and kept in slavery for ten years, when he escaped and returned to his home. A few years later (about 425) he went back to Ireland as a Christian missionary.

* Scarth's "*Roman Britain*," p. 211.

CHAPTER IV.

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST.

AFTER the departure of the Romans in A.D. 407, the Britons, for about thirty years, managed to defend themselves with more or less success against the Picts and Scots. About A.D. 440, however, the British tribe fell to quarrelling among themselves, and from that time the Picts and Scots gained ground, carrying their incursions far into the southern part of Britain; and the Britons of Kent finally called in the Jutes of Denmark to their aid. The advent of the Jutes marks the beginning of a new conquest of southern Britain—that is, the English Conquest. The three principal races who took part in it were the Jutes, the Saxons, and the Engle or Angles. All three tribes belonged to the Low-German branch of the Teutonic race.

The *Jutes* came from that part of Denmark which is still called by their name—Jutland—where they held the country as far south as the river Sley. The modern Danes of that district are descended in part from them.

The *Saxons* came from the shores of the continent between the Rhine and the Weser (now Holland and western Hanover).

The *Engle* or *Angles* came from what are now Sleswick, Holstein, eastern Hanover (between the Elbe and the Weser), and Oldenburg, their land lying between that of the Saxons on the west, and that of the Jutes on the north. It seems probable that in course of time the whole of the Engle on the continent emigrated to Britain, leaving their former home uninhabited and deserted. It was from this people that England received its name, which was formerly Engla-land—that is, the Land of the Engle. The word “English,” as a general name for all the Teutonic peoples who inhabited southern Britain after the conquest, seems to have been first used in the time of Bede, about A.D. 700. The name “England,” however, as denoting the country peopled by the English, does not seem to have been used or even invented before the time of King Edgar, about A.D. 960.

The new conquerors brought their families with them, and

even their cattle, which, being large, and of a white color with red ears,* were easily distinguishable from the small Celtic shorthorn of the Britons. The *bear* appears to have been exterminated in England during the Roman occupation. The *ass* was known there before A.D. 850 ; and the domestic *cat* was introduced (from Egypt) during the 10th century, and was particularly valued in Wales. The *reindeer* was hunted in Caithness, in the extreme north of Scotland, as late as 1159 ; and the *beaver* was trapped in the river Teivi, in Wales, also as late as the 12th century. The *wolf* was exterminated in England about 1380 ; in Scotland in 1680 ; and in Ireland in 1710. The *wild boar* disappeared in England before the reign of Charles I (1625), but lingered on in Ireland till the next century.

The new-comers also brought their own language, laws, customs, and religion. They were fishers, and tillers of the soil, dwelling in rude wooden huts or wicker-work cabins, without windows, and with a hole in the roof to let out the smoke of the fire. They had an aversion from living in towns or cities, and ruthlessly destroyed, usually with fire, all Romano-British cities which they captured. The present English cities were not founded for a century or two later than the destruction of the British ones. The site of Canterbury was a waste from the destruction of Durovernum in 454 till Æthelberht's day (about 580); the first church at Winchester, probably the commencement of the new city, was not hallowed till A.D. 648, or over 130 years after the destruction of Venta Belgarum, its predecessor; the new Dover was not begun till the 8th century. In some cases, as in that of Durovernum (Canterbury), the destruction of the old city was so complete that its ruins were wholly covered up, so that the streets of the new town do not correspond with those of the old one on whose foundations it was built.

Before leaving their home on the continent the English had already an alphabet of Runic letters, and a literature, which was marked by a tendency to pathos and melancholy, and a keen enjoyment of nature. Among old-English works dating from before the conquest of Britain are "Deor's Complaint," "The Gleeman's Tale," and "The Song of Beowulf." The last, in its present form, shows traces of Christian influence, and probably dates from the 8th century. At an early date they also composed rude annals.

* The present half-wild cattle at Chillingham, in Northumberland, are descendants of this breed.

Their native religion was polytheistic, with Woden (whose name still lives in the word "Wednesday") as the chief god of the race. They had also a priesthood, whose religious influence, however, was but feeble. After their arrival in Britain they erected rough wooden buildings as temples, in an enclosure called the frith-geard, or peace-yard, showing probably that it gave a right of sanctuary. In an inner shrine in the temples were images or emblems of the gods, with altars before them. These temples were afterwards changed into Christian churches.

These early English were great lovers of the sea, making adventurous voyages in search of the whale, walrus, and sea-lion. They were also hard-drinkers, having their ale-feasts, at which, already as early as the 7th century, four different kinds of beer were drunk—bright ale, mild ale, smooth ale, and beer. They also drank mead, an intoxicating liquor made from honey and water, fermented. At their feasts they used glass goblets and rude hand-made pottery. The women were fond of personal adornment, and wore gold rings, amulets, ear-rings, and neck-pendants, and fastened their cloaks with golden buckles, sometimes inlaid with enamel or set with rough jewels.

At 15 the young man became of age and a full-fledged warrior. In war, the fighting men wore armor of ringed mail; and their arms consisted of a long iron single-edged sword, with a silver or bronze hilt inscribed with mystic runes, the sword being kept in a wooden scabbard; also two kinds of spear, one smaller and slighter than the other, a wooden shield with an iron boss, and a skull-cap or helmet, with an iron-wrought figure of a boar above it. Axes and the bow-and-arrow seem to have been used but rarely.

Socially and politically the people were organized into village communities, and the principle of representation was already adopted. The tribes were divided into villages and hundreds. Besides the general muster of the people of the tribe, there were village-moots or councils, and hundred-moots. At the latter each village-community was represented by the village reeve and by from 4 to 10 villagers elected for the purpose. The hundreds were probably districts which sent a hundred free-men or warriors to the general muster of the tribe, or folk-moot, as it was called. Each of these assemblies—the town-moot, the hundred-moot, and the folk-moot—was at once a legislative and executive council, and a court of justice. The Witenagemote, or meeting of wise men, was originally the council-of-war of the army, the gathering of the ealdormen who had brought the fighting-men of their villages into the field. It

afterwards became the supreme legislative council and court of justice of the king, out of which Parliament grew.*

410-446. During these thirty-six years after the departure of the Roman legions from Britain, the Britons maintain a fairly successful struggle against the Picts and Scots and the Saxon pirates; but they finally become involved in civil strife among themselves, and are consequently unable to withstand the assaults of their enemies.

429. St. Germanus and St. Lupus of Troyes visit Britain, and go to Verulamium as missionaries to confute the free-will or Pelagian heresies which had sprung up among the British Christians there.

430. They proceed to the valley of the Dee (Cheshire), and find that part of the country infested with Picts and Scots. They baptize many Britons, and the Britons gain over the Picts and Scots what is known as "the Alleluia Victory" (30 Mar.). The site of this bloodless battle is supposed to be Maes Garmon (the Field of Germanus), about a mile from Mold, in Flintshire, north Wales.

446. It is said that in this year the Britons appealed to Ætius, the Roman consul in Gaul, for help against the Picts and Scots, writing as follows: "The groans of the Britons to Ætius for the third time consul. The savages drive us to the sea, and the sea casts us back upon the savages; so arise two kinds of death, and we are either drowned or slaughtered." The story is doubtful, and if any such appeal was made it was not responded to.

447 or 448. St. Germanus returns to Britain

449 or 450. In one of these years—it is uncertain which—the Britons invite the Jutes to help them against the Picts and Scots. Three ships, with Jutes under Hengest and Horsa, land at Ebbsfleet in the Isle of Thanet, and the Picts are said to have been defeated in a great battle at Stamford (about 450). The Isle of Thanet was then separated from the mainland of north-east Kent by an arm of the sea called the Wantsum, about half a mile wide, traversable at only one spot at low water by a long and dangerous ford. The inlet was guarded by two fortresses on the mainland, one at each end, now Reculvers at the west and Richborough at the east. The walls of the latter were 30 feet high and 12 feet thick.

450-454. Other Jutes come over and make permanent

* As to the customs and mode of life of the early English, see Green's "Making of England," pp. 154 et seq.

settlements in Thanet. Disputes arise between the Jutes and the Britons, and war breaks out between them.

454. The Jutes capture, sack, and burn Durovernum, a walled town on the site of Canterbury.

455. The Jutes advance, and defeat the Britons under Vortigern at a ford of the river Medway, at Æglesthrep (on the site of Aylesford). Horsa is slain. The flint-heap of Horsted marks the site of this, the first victory of the English over the Britons. The leadership of the Jutes is given to Hengest and his son, Æsc, or Ash; Kent is divided between them, into East and West, corresponding to the present sees of Rochester and Canterbury.

457. The Jutes defeat the Britons at Creccanford (probably Crayford, near the site of Orpington), slaying 4000 of them; the Britons flee for refuge to Londinium (London), and the Jutes become masters of all Kent, except the fortresses at Richborough and Reculvers. This defeat leads to a revolution among the Britons. Vortigern is defeated by them under Aurelius Ambrosianus, a Roman, and driven to the mountains of the west; and Aurelius drives the Jutes back into the Isle of Thanet.

465. The Jutes under Hengest and his son (Æsc or Ash) defeat the British near Wipped's-fleet (now Ebbsfleet), and reconquer a large part of Kent.

473. The Jutes capture the fortress of Portus Lemannis (now Lymne, on the coast, south-west of Dover), and complete the conquest of Kent. Further conquest is stopped by the great forest of Andredsweald, which then occupied the Weald of Kent and Sussex, and by the massive fortress of Anderida (now Pevensey, in Sussex), the ruins of which still remain.

477. Saxons, under Ælle (or Ella) and his three sons, Cymen, Wlencing, and Cissa, land on Selsea peninsula at Cymenesora (probably Keynor in Sussex, near Hampshire), and defeat the Britons.

477-491. After 14 years' fighting they conquer the country as far east as Beechy Head. It becomes known as the country of the South Saxons, or Sussex. In 485 they defeated the Britons at Markrede's Burn.

480. About this date tribes of Engle or Angles land in eastern Britain and begin the conquest of what was afterwards known as East Anglia (now Norfolk and Suffolk—that is, North Folk and South Folk—and Cambridgeshire).

480-500. About this date Saxons land in the country north of the Thames, capture and destroy Camulodunum (now Col-

chester), and conquer the country to the west as far as the river Stort (afterwards called the country of the East Saxons, or Essex). Further conquest to the west is stopped by the dense forest afterwards known as Waltham Chace, remnants of which still exist as Epping and Hainault Forests.

488. Hengest dies, and his son, Æsc or Ash, becomes sole King of Kent; he reigns 24 years.

491. After a long and difficult siege the South Saxons under Ælle capture the fortress of Anderida (now Pevensey), slay "all that were therein," destroy the city, and conquer the country as far as the river Rother, so that their territory becomes conterminous with that of the Jutes of Kent. This completes the conquest of "the Saxon Shore," from the Wash to Southampton Water; and Ælle, King of the South Saxons, is made the first Bretwalda.*

495. Saxons of the tribe called the Gewissas, under Cerdic and his son Cynric, with five ships, land at Cerdic's-Ore (supposed to be a headland at the mouth of the Itchen, in Hampshire), and defeat the Britons.

498. About this date Scots from Dalriada (now northern Antrim) in Ireland, settle in Caledonia, in Cantyre, the island of Yle (now Islay), and around Loch Linnhe (the upper part of the Frith of Lorn), and there found another kingdom of Dalriada. It remains in close connection with the Irish Dalriada till 575.

500-520. Between these dates the Engle invade what is now Lincolnshire, capture the Roman fortified towns of Lindum (now Lincoln), and Eboracum (now York), and conquer what are now Lincolnshire, Nottinghamshire, and Yorkshire. They seem to have burnt all the towns they captured, and the inhabitants who escaped slaughter took refuge in caves, where their remains have been found in recent years.

500-547. Between these dates other tribes of Engle (probably assisted by Frisians) conquer the eastern part of southern Scotland, between the Forth and the Tweed, as far west as

* Bretwalda or Brytenwealda was a title given to some of the English kings in Britain who acquired some sort of power over other kings outside their own territory, or at least, a moral pre-eminence due to special ability or achievements. Its meaning was either "Ruler of Britain," or "Lord of Britain," or simply, "Broad Ruler"—literally "Broad Wielder." In Ælle's case it was probably the latter. The title was conferred upon eight kings in all: 1. Ælle, of Sussex; 2. Ceawlin, of Wessex; 3. Æthelberht, of Kent; 4. Rædwald, of East Anglia; 5, 6, 7. Edwin, Oswald, and Oswiu, of Northumbria; and 8. Egbert, of Wessex.

Myned Agned (the site of Edinburgh) and the Cattrail and the Cheviot Hills.

500 and 513. The principal migrations of the Britons from Britain to Brittany in Gaul are said to have taken place in these years. St. Samson of Dol is said to have been driven from the Bishopric of Eboracum in A.D. 500.

501. The Gewissas make another descent in Southampton Water, at Portus Magnus (now Portchester).

508. The Gewissas, assisted by the Jutes of Kent and the South Saxons, inflict a serious defeat on the Britons in what is now Hampshire, slaying their king, Natanleod, and 5000 men.

514. Being joined by Jutes under Stuf and Wihtgar, they push up the Itchen and plunder Venta Belgarum (now Winchester).

519. They defeat the Britons at Cerdic's-Ford (now Charford, on the Avon, a few miles south of Salisbury, in Wiltshire), conquer the country as far as the Avon, and organize the Kingdom of the West Saxons (Wessex), with Cerdic* and his son Cynric as kings.

520. They invade the valley of the Frome (in Dorset) but are crushingly defeated by the Britons at Mount Badon (Mons Badonicus, now Badbury, in Dorset), and further conquest in a westerly direction is stayed for a long time. The Britons are said to have been led in this battle by the mythical or semi-mythical King Arthur. The present south-west border of Hampshire marks the limits of the West-Saxon kingdom as settled for a time by this defeat.

527. They defeat the Britons at Cerdic's-Lea (thought to be Bernwood Forest in Hampshire).

Escwine becomes the first King of the East Saxons.

530. The West Saxons, under Cerdic and Cynric, with their allies the Jutes of Kent, defeat the Britons at Wihtgar's-Burg (now Carisbrooke), in the Isle of Wight, and conquer the island, which is yielded to and settled by the Jutes. This is the last conquest made by the Jutes until they reappear in England some centuries later as the Danes. The Jutish line of Stuf and Wihtgar rule in the island till the slaughter of the sons of King Arvald in A.D. 686.

534. Cerdic dies; his son Cynric becomes King of the West Saxons.

* All the sovereigns of England (except Canute, Hardicanute, the two Harolds, and William the Conqueror), including the present queen, trace their descent directly from Cerdic, the genealogy of Queen Victoria thus running back in an unbroken line of direct ascent for over 1400 years, to the birth of Cerdic.

540-560. Between these dates the East Saxons in Essex capture and burn Verulamium (now St. Albans, in Hertfordshire), an important city with a Roman amphitheatre and extensive walls. The present Abbey and Abbey Church of St. Albans were built mainly out of its ruins. Its capture is followed by the conquest of what is now Hertfordshire.

547. Ida, chief of the Engle beyond the Tweed, captures the fortress of Rebban-Buhr (now Bamborough, in Northumberland, 16 miles S. E. of Berwick), and reigns there till 559, as King of Bernicia.

547-580. The Bernicians, as the Engle of south-east Caledonia are now called, conquer Northumberland and Durham.

550-560. The Engle of Lincolnshire capture Rataë (now Leicester), and conquer central Britain along the Trent valley, where they become known as the Middle Engle.

552. After remaining in Hampshire for 32 years without attempting further conquest, the West Saxons, under Cynric, make a fresh advance to the west. They capture (probably by famine) the strong fortress of Sorbiodunum (or Searo-burh, now Old Sarum, near Salisbury, in Wilts), and conquer what is now southern Wiltshire.

556. The West Saxons, under Cynric and his son Ceawlin, defeat the Britons at Beranburh or Byran-byrig (now Barbury Hill, in Wilts, a few miles east of Bath), capture Cunetio (now Marlborough, in Wilts), and conquer what are now northern Wiltshire and western Berkshire.

559. Ida, King of Bernicia, dies, and is succeeded by six sons in succession, Adda being the first.

560. Ælla, the first King of the Deirans, as the Engle of Yorkshire are now called, begins to reign. The Middle Engle extend their conquests over what are now Staffordshire and Warwickshire, which becomes known as Mercia—that is, the “March” or “border” next the Britons in Wales.

Æthelberht becomes King of Kent, at the age of 8 years.

Cynric dies; his son Ceawlin succeeds as King of the West Saxons.

About this date, Gildas, a Welshman, writes his history of the conquests in Britain by the Jutes, Engle, and Saxons.

563. Colum, or Columba, an Irish exile, lands (12 May) in Hii (now Iona), a small island to the south-west of Mull, on the west coast of Caledonia, and there founds a religious house, which becomes the centre of the conversion of northern Britain to Christianity.

565. About this date the East Saxons capture Londinium, and conquer what is now Middlesex (the Middle Saxons).

568. About this date the West Saxons, under Ceawlin, capture and burn Calleva Atrebatum (now Silchester, in Hampshire), an important fortified city whose walls were nearly two miles in circuit. They then conquer east Berkshire and west Surrey.

The Jutes of Kent, after the fall of London, advance westwardly into what is now Surrey. Under Æthelberht, their king (now 16 years old), they meet the West Saxons under Ceawlin, their king, and his brother Cutha, in battle at Wibban-dûn (now Wimbledon), but are defeated; and the West Saxons complete the conquest of what is now Surrey. This was the first battle between Englishmen on English soil.

571. The West Saxons, under Cuthwulf, another son of Cynric, cross the Thames at Wallingford (in Berks, between Abingdon and Reading), advance along the Ikniel or Ikenild Way, and make a raid through what are now Oxfordshire and Bucks as far as Bedford. On their return they are intercepted by the Britons, a battle ensues (near Bedford), and the Britons are defeated. In a few years the West Saxons conquer what are now Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire, and their territory becomes conterminous with that of the Engle in Warwickshire, Northamptonshire, and Cambridgeshire, of the East Saxons in Herts and Middlesex, the Jutes in Kent, and the South Saxons in Sussex.

Offa or Uffa becomes the first King of East Anglia, founding the dynasty of the Uffings.

574. Columba consecrates Aedhan or Aidan as King of Dalriada, the territory on the west of Caledonia (now Argyleshire), colonized by Scots from Ireland about A.D. 498.

575. Aidan asserts at Drumceat (in Ireland) the independence of his kingdom from the Irish Dalriada.

577. The West Saxons under Ceawlin and Cuthwine invade what is now Gloucestershire, and defeat the Britons at Deorham (now Derham or Dereham, a small village in Gloucestershire, a few miles north of Bath), and capture Bath, Gloucester, and Cirencester. In a few years they conquer Gloucestershire east of the Severn, and Somerset east of the Mendip Hills, where they settle under the name of the Hwiccas. Ceawlin, in consequence of these conquests, becomes the second Bretwalda.

By this date the English have conquered all that part of Britain south of the Forth which lies east of what are now Peebles and Dumfries in Scotland; and east of the Pennine Chain, the Severn, and the Mendip Hills in Somerset and the river Stour in Dorset, in England. From this time their work is rather that of settlement than of conquest. The

Britons have been driven westerly and now occupy only Strathclyde (the western country from the Clyde to the Mersey); Wales and the adjoining territory west of the Severn; and Cornwall, Devon, west Somerset, and west Dorset. The English came in small isolated bands, each conquering its own separate tract of country; but by the end of the sixth century this separate tribal life had for the most part ceased, and the conquerors had become grouped into 8 or 9 peoples, which begin to show a tendency to group themselves into three, occupying northern, central, and southern Anglo-Saxon Britain respectively.

578. Uffa dies; Tytillus becomes King of East Anglia.

580-600. Aedhan, King of Dalriada, forms a league of the Scots and Britons, from northern Argyll to Morecambe Bay, and for twenty years makes war against the Engle of Bernicia and Deira.

583. The West Saxons, under Ceawlin and his brother Cutha, push up the Severn valley, and capture, sack, and burn Uriconium (now Wroxeter, in Shropshire, a few miles S. E. of Shrewsbury), then a splendid city more than double the size of Roman London, with wide streets, a forum, theatre, and amphitheatre. They then burn Pengwynn (now Shrewsbury), and march northwards towards Chester.

584. They are defeated by the Britons under Brocmael, at Fethan-Leag (now Faddiley, a village three miles west of Nantwich, in Cheshire), Cutha is slain, and Ceawlin retreats.

585. About this date Æthelberht, King of Kent, marries Bertha, a Christian, daughter of Charibert, King of the Franks. Æthelberht brings her to Cantwara-byrig (that is, "Kentmen's-burg," now Canterbury), the first and oldest English city in Britain, recently built on the ruins of the Roman city of Durovernum (destroyed in 454). Bertha makes it a condition that she shall remain a Christian; and she brings her own chaplain, Bishop Liudhard, with her. A Roman church, the now ruined church of St. Martin, Canterbury, is given her for worship, being the first Christian church among the English in Britain.

586. About this date, Gregory (afterwards Pope) meets with English slaves for sale in the markets of Rome; they were Engle, probably prisoners taken in the war between Deira and Bernicia, and sent to Rome for sale.

587. Sleda becomes king of the East Saxons. Theodoric, "the Flame-bearer," King of Bernicia, Ida's fifth son, dies; Æthelric, Ida's sixth son, succeeds him.

About this date Crida becomes chief or king of the West Engle or Mercians.

588. Ælla, King of Deira, dies, leaving two sons, the elder apparently grown up, the younger, Edwin (who becomes King of Northumbria in 617), a child two years old.

589. Æthelric, King of Bernicia (the sixth son of Ida), conquers Deira, and unites it with Bernicia into one kingdom, Northumbria, stretching from the Forth to the Humber. Ælla's two sons flee for refuge to the Welsh in north Wales, and probably live in Deva (now Chester). The elder son (whose name is unknown) marries and has a son named Hereric, but dies in exile.

590. The Hwiccas (as the West Saxons along the lower Severn, in Worcester and Gloucester, are called) revolt against Ceawlin, King of Wessex, and make his nephew Ceol or Ceolric, a son of Cutha, their king. This marks the beginning of a struggle for the throne of Wessex between the lines of the brothers, Ceawlin and Cutha, which lasts for 200 years.

Gregory becomes Pope, as Gregory I., "the Great."

591. The Hwiccas, under Ceolric, are joined by the Britons, and the united forces invade Wessex proper, and defeat Ceawlin at Wodnes-beorge (now Wanborough, near Swindon, in north Wilts); Ceawlin is driven from Wessex into exile, and Ceolric becomes King of Wessex. Ceawlin dies, or is killed in battle, two years later (593). The line of Cutha remain masters of Wessex till 685, when the kingdom is recovered by Cædwalla and Ine of Ceawlin's line.

591-597. Taking advantage of the strife in and the consequent weakness of Wessex, Æthelberht, King of Kent, conquers or becomes overlord of Sussex, the kingdom of the East Saxons (Herts, Middlesex, and Essex), East Anglia, Mercia or West Engle (Northampton, Leicester, Warwick, and Huntingdon), and the Lindswara (the Engle of Lincoln). In consequence of these conquests he becomes the third Bretwalda. The East Anglian king was Rædwald.

About this time Æthelberht frames a code, the first English writing down of customary law; it consists of 90 clauses, 41 fixing fines for bodily injuries, and nearly all the rest dealing with violent attacks on person or property.

There are now three principal English kingdoms or overlordships in Britain: Northumbria, Wessex, and Æthelberht's overlordship, from the Humber to the English Channel, including Lindesey (now Lincoln), Mercia, East Anglia, the country of the East Saxons, Kent, and Sussex. Substantially the same division exists for the next 200 years.

593. Æthelric, King of Northumbria, dies; his son Æthel-frith "the Cruel" succeeds, and takes up the work of conquering the Britons with ruthless vigor. The British tribes in the north had by this date united into the kingdom of Strathclyde, stretching along the west coast from the Frith of Clyde to the Mersey.

597. St. Columba dies (9 June) in Hii (now Iona), aged 76.

Ceolric, King of Wessex, dies; his brother Ceolwulf succeeds. His reign seems to have been passed in constant fighting with the Angles, Britons, Picts, and Scots.

Pope Gregory I., after obtaining a safe-conduct for them from the Frankish rulers in Gaul, sends Augustine, a Roman abbot, at the head of a band of monks, to preach the Gospel to the English people. They land at Ebbs-fleet, in the Isle of Thanet, Hengest's landing-place. Æthelberht, the Kentish king, goes to Thanet to confer with them, his wife, Bertha, no doubt influencing him to give them a favorable reception. He refuses to forsake the religion of his fathers, but promises them shelter and protection. They enter Canterbury, bearing before them a silver cross with a picture of Christ, and singing the Litany. After a time Æthelberht becomes converted, and at Christmas over 10,000 English are baptized at Bertha's church of St. Martin. Augustine founds Christ Church, Canterbury, which, as Canterbury Cathedral, still remains the metropolitan church of the English communion. Latin is again introduced into Britain, and in course of time becomes the language of its worship, its literature, and its correspondence, and the new England is admitted into the older commonwealth of nations on the continent of Europe.

Sledda, King of the East Saxons, dies; his son Sæbert (nephew of Æthelberht, King of Kent) succeeds.

East Anglia is governed by Rædwald, the Uffing, as under-king to Æthelberht. Mercia is a number of partially independent states, not yet fully consolidated into one kingdom.

600. Crida, King of the West Engle, or Mercians, dies; he is succeeded by Wibba.

601. Gregory I. sends to England fresh missionaries, with a plan for the ecclesiastical organization of the whole island, Augustine to be Bishop of London, and to send another as Bishop of York, each to have 12 suffragan bishops.

603. Augustine, with the aid of King Æthelberht, makes a journey to the border between the West Saxons and Hwiccas, and at "Augustine's Oak" (probably either at Aust, on the Severn, in Gloucestershire, or at a spot near Marlborough, in

Wilts) holds a conference at which British clergy are present. Disputes arise as to the proper time for celebrating Easter and other matters, and the British clergy decline to join the Roman communion.

Aedhan, King of Dalriada, with an army of Scots and Britons, attacks the Northumbrians under their king, Æthelfrith, at Dægsastan (now Dawston, in Liddelsdale, Roxburgshire, Scotland). but is totally defeated and his army is annihilated. Strathclyde is conquered and becomes tributary to Northumbria, which now extends from the Irish Channel to the North Sea.

604. Augustine sends Justus as bishop to Rochester; his diocese includes Kent west of the Medway. Mellitus is sent as bishop to the East Saxons. His preaching is successful, and he converts Sæbert, the ruler. Æthelberht, Sæbert's overlord, begins building the church of St. Paul's, London, which has now become the metropolis of the East Saxons.

St. Augustine dies (26 May).

Some time after this date and before 616 Rædwald, King of the East Anglians, is summoned to Æthelberht's court, and baptized.

606. Gregory the Great dies.

607. About this date, the East Anglians, under Rædwald, revolt against Æthelberht's supremacy, and throw off his overlordship, and, with it, the Christian religion. Mid-Britain, or Mercia, also throws off the supremacy of Æthelberht, and Rædwald becomes its overlord.

Ceolwulf, King of Wessex, is engaged in war with the South Saxons.

610. Wibba, King of the West Engle or Mercians, dies; Cearl succeeds him, apparently usurping the throne to the exclusion of Wibba's son, Penda.

611. Ceolwulf, King of Wessex, dies; his nephew Cynegils, a grandson of Cutha, succeeds.

613. Æthelfrith, King of Northumbria, defeats the Britons, under Brocmael, at Deva (now Chester), conquers what are now southern Lancashire and Cheshire; and the Britons in Strathclyde are cut off from their brethren in Wales.

614. Cynegils, King of Wessex, and Cwichelm defeat the Britons at Beandun (supposed to be Bampton in Oxfordshire).

615. Hereric, grandson and heir of Ælla, the dead King of Deira, is murdered by poison while at the court of the British king, Cerdic. As his only children are two daughters, his brother, Edwin, becomes the representative of the kingly stock of Deira. Edwin takes refuge with Cearl, King of the Mercians, and marries his daughter, Quænborg.

616. Æthelberht, King of Kent, dies; he is succeeded by his son Eadbald, who throws off Christianity.

Sæbert, King of the East Anglians, dies; his two sons succeed, and they also throw off Christianity, as well as the overlordship of Kent.

Mellitus, the bishop of the East Saxons, at London, and Justus of Rochester flee to Gaul; but Laurentius, Bishop of Canterbury, prevails on Eadbald to become reconverted to Christianity, and to restore the worship throughout Kent.

617. Edwin (son of Ælla, former King of Deira), who in 589, when a child, had fled for refuge among the Welsh of North Wales, and had afterwards sought safety with the Mercians, seeks shelter in East Anglia, where Rædwald welcomes him. Æthelfrith, King of Northumbria, makes a demand on Rædwald to deliver up Edwin, and, on his refusal, makes war on him, but is defeated at the river Idle (a small tributary of the Trent, running across the northern part of Nottinghamshire); Æthelfrith is slain, and Rædwald becomes the 4th Bretwalda. He dies shortly afterwards, and Eorpwald succeeds him, but in his hands Rædwald's kingdom falls to pieces.

Edwin becomes King of Northumbria, being now about 31 years old. Æthelfrith's seven sons find refuge among the Picts north of the Forth, or in the Christian monastery at Hii (now Iona).

624. Mellitus, third Archbishop of Canterbury, dies of the gout; Justus of Rochester succeeds to the primacy.

625. Edwin, having obtained supremacy over East Anglia and Mercia, designs an attack on Wessex. To aid him in this design, he marries Æthelburh or Ethelberga, a Christian, sister of Eadbald, King of Kent. She takes Bishop Paulinus with her to York.

626. Edwin founds Edwin's Burh (now Edinburgh). He also conquers the British Kingdom of Elmet (which then corresponded with what is now the West Riding of Yorkshire), and expels its king, Cerdic, who had poisoned his uncle, Hereric; and also with his fleet conquers the Isle of Man, and Mona (thenceforth called Anglesey, that is, "Angle's Isle," or the Isle of the English); and becomes the 5th Bretwalda. Cwichelm (joint-king of Wessex with Cynégils) sends Eomer or Eumer as an envoy to Edwin, to kill him with a poisoned dagger; Edwin's life is saved by Lilla, one of his thanes, who throws himself in front of Edwin and receives the fatal thrust instead; and Edwin's guards kill Eumer. Edwin defeats the West Saxons; and Cynégils submits and acknowl-

edges the supremacy of Edwin, who thus becomes overlord of all the English kingdoms in Britain except Kent. He rules so well that it becomes a proverb that "A woman with her babe might walk scatheless from sea to sea in Eadwine's days." He establishes his capital at York.

Cearl, King of the Mercians, dies; Penda succeeds him.

627. Edwin is converted to Christianity by Paulinus, and is baptized at York on Easter Day (12 Ap.); many of his nobles are also baptized. He makes Paulinus Bishop of York. Eorpwald, King of East Anglia, becomes a convert to Christianity soon after Edwin, but is at once slain by one of his pagan thanes; East Anglia remains without a ruler for three years.

Justus, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies; Honorius is made primate.

628. Penda, King of Mercia, defeats the West Saxons under Cwichelm and Cynegils at Cirencester (in Gloucestershire); a treaty of peace is made by which the Hwiccas apparently become part of Mercia, and Penda becomes overlord of Wessex.

Between 628 and 631 Eadbald, King of Kent, sends Felix, a Burgundian bishop, to the East Angles, to attempt their re-conversion to Christianity.

631. Sigeberht, half brother of Eorpwald, and his nearest heir, has been an exile among the Franks on the continent of Europe, where he has become a Christian. Edwin, the Christian King of Northumbria, and overlord of East Anglia, in order to strengthen his own power by obtaining a Christian king for East Anglia, brings Sigeberht from Europe and installs him as King of East Anglia. This leads to a contest between Edwin and Penda for supremacy in Anglo-Saxon Britain.

633. Penda allies himself with Cadwallon or Cædwalla, the Welsh King of Gwynedd * (north Wales), and the united forces of Mercians and Welsh defeat Edwin (12 Oct.) at Heathfield (now Hatfield, a small village on the Don, in south Yorkshire, near Doncaster); Edwin is slain, and his wife Æthelburh, her two children, and Bishop Paulinus take refuge with her brother, Eadbald, King of Kent. Northumbria again splits up into Bernicia and Deira; Osric, a nephew of Edwin, mounts the throne of Deira; and the Engle of Bernicia recall Eanfrith, a son of Æthelfrith, of the House of Ida, from among the Picts, to be their king. Both Osric and Eanfrith (who had become a Christian at Hii, now Iona) renounce Christianity.

* Pronounced Gwyneth.

634. Penda defeats the East Anglians under Sigebert, who is slain, and East Anglia submits to Penda as overlord. Egric, a cousin of Sigebert, becomes its under-king.

The Welsh under Cadwallon harry Deira and capture York, and Osric, King of Deira, is slain in an attempt to recover it. Eanfrith, King of Bernicia, while suing for peace with Cadwallon, is murdered by him.

Pope Honorius I. sends Birinus, a bishop in Gaul, as a missionary to Britain; Birinus lands in Wessex.

635. Oswald, the second son of Æthelfrith and a nephew of Edwin, who has also become a Christian at Hii, and remains steadfast to his new faith, puts himself at the head of the Bernicians, and decisively defeats the Welsh under Cadwallon at Devisesburn or "Heaven's field" (now St. Oswald's, about 7 miles north of Hexham); Cadwallon is slain. Oswald calls Aidan or Aedhan from Hii as a missionary to convert the Bernicians, makes him a bishop, and establishes him in a monastery at Lindisfarne or Holy Island, an island-peninsula off the coast of Northumberland, a little south-east of Berwick, the first outward sign of Christianity set up in Bernicia. Holy Island becomes a centre of conversion. Oswald becomes the 6th Bretwalda. Anna, a Christian, and a brother of Sigebert, becomes under-king of East Anglia.

Wessex is converted to Christianity by Birinus, and King Cynegils is baptized in Oswald's presence.

639. He establishes a bishopric at Dorchester, or Dorchester, on the Thames (Oxfordshire), Birinus being made first bishop.

640. Heathen temples are formally abolished in Kent.

642. Oswald makes war on Penda, the heathen King of Mercia, in order to deliver East Anglia from his overlordship, but is defeated and slain (5 Aug.) at Maserfeld (probably either Mirfield, near Huddersfield, in Yorkshire, or Oswestry—so named after Oswald—in Shropshire). Penda becomes supreme in Britain. Northumbria is again broken up. Oswini, a son of Osric, and a Christian, comes from Hii as King of Deira in place of Oswald, and acknowledges Penda as overlord. Oswiu, a third son of Æthelfrith, is called from Hii to fill the throne of Bernicia. He steadily holds his ground against Penda's annual raids, and at a later period strengthens himself by marrying Eanfled, a daughter of Edwin, who had fled to Kent with her mother on Edwin's death in 633.

643. Cynegils, King of Wessex, dies; his son Cenwealh, or Cenwalch, becomes king; he reigns till 672. He renounces Christianity, and marries Penda's sister.

650. St. Birinus, Bishop of Dorchester, dies at Dorchester (Oxon), and is buried there. His body is subsequently removed to Winchester.

651. Oswiu, King of Bernicia, invades Deira; procures the murder (20 Aug.) of its king, Oswini (his nephew), and joins it to Bernicia, thus finally establishing the Kingdom of Northumbria. Many Picts, Scots, and Britons on his borders own him as overlord, and pay tribute. Bishop Aidan dies of a broken heart from grief at the murder; Finan succeeds him. Cuthbert, on hearing of Aidan's death, leaves his home on the Lammermoor, and settles at the mission station of Melrose. After a few years he goes to Ripon.

652. Penda's son Peada, under-king of the Middle Engle (in Leicester), marries Oswiu's daughter Alchfleda, and becomes a Christian, and is baptized by Bishop Finan.

Eanfled, wife of Oswiu, sends Wilfred, then 17 years old (afterwards bishop), with letters of protection, to her cousin, King Earconberht of Kent.

The West Saxons, under Cenwealh, defeat the Britons at Bradford (on the Somersetshire Avon, a few miles east of Bath).

653. Sigeberht, King of the East Saxons, is converted to Christianity while on a visit to Oswiu in Northumbria, and Oswiu despatches Cedd as a missionary to reconvert the East Saxons.

Honorius, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (30 Sep.); the see is vacant for 18 months.

654. Penda invades East Anglia, and its under-king, Anna, is defeated and slain. Æthelhere becomes its under-king and submits to Penda as overlord.

655. Penda, assisted by Æthelhere, invades and ravages Northumbria as far as Bamborough, the capital, but is defeated by Oswiu at Winwidfield, near the river Winwæd (probably the Aire, at Winmoor, near Leeds in Yorkshire). Both Penda and Æthelhere are slain. Oswiu annexes Lindsey (now Lincolnshire) and Mercia north of the Trent to Northumbria, and becomes overlord of East Anglia and Mercia; also the 7th Bretwalda. Peada (Penda's son) is made under-king of southern Mercia, and Æthelwold under-king of East Anglia.

The West Saxons, under their king, Cenwealh, throw off the Mercian overlordship.

Frithona is made Archbishop of Canterbury, the first Englishman who fills the office. He changes his name to Deusdedit. All the previous archbishops had been foreigners, who, being unable to speak English, had been obliged to use Latin.

656. Peada (a son of Penda), under-king of south Mercia, dies, or is murdered; Oswiu annexes his kingdom to Northumbria. After this date there are no more Middle-Engle under-kings. Oswiu founds a monastery at Streonashalh (Whitby).

658. The West Saxons, under Cenwealh, defeat the Britons at Pens, and conquer west Dorset, that is, all Dorset beyond the Stour.

Soon after this conquest, Maildulf, or Maidulf, an Irish monk, sets up his hermitage at "Maildulf's Burh" (now Malmesbury, in northern Wilts), and draws around him the earliest scholars of Wessex. Ealdhelm, better known as St. Aldhelm or Adelm, becomes one of his pupils.

659. The Mercians revolt against Oswiu, and make Wulfhere, a younger son of Penda, their king.

661. Alchfrid, son of Oswiu and co-ruler of Northumbria with him, sends Wilfrid as abbot to Ripon; Wilfrid favors the Roman communion and expels Cuthbert and the other missionaries of the Irish school as schismatics; Cuthbert returns to Melrose, where a pestilence is raging.

The Mercians, under Wulfhere, defeat the West Saxons, under Cenwealh, and ravage Wessex as far as Ashdown (in Berks); and Wulfhere makes himself overlord of the East Saxons, Surrey, and Sussex. Æthelwalch or Ethelwald, King of Sussex, is baptized in the presence of Wulfhere, who adds the Isle of Wight and the south-east part of Hants to Ethelwald's territory.

664. In Northumbria, a dispute has been going on for some years between the Irish Christians and the Romanizing Christians with regard to the time of Easter and other usages (similar to that which had taken place in 603 between Augustine and the Welsh clergy in Wessex); and Oswiu summons a Synod, the first ever held in England, to meet at Streonashalh (now Whitby) to settle it. The Synod decides that Northumbria shall belong to the Roman communion.

Deusdedit, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies of the plague, (14 July), which rages in Britain this year. Ecgberht, King of Kent, wishing to have "a bishop of his own race and his own tongue," joins with Oswiu, King of Northumbria, in selecting Wighard, another Englishman, as Deusdedit's successor, and in sending him to Rome for consecration.

666. Cenwealh, King of Wessex, drives Bishop Wini from his see, and Wessex is left without a bishop. Wini goes to London as Bishop of the East Saxons.

667. Benedict Biscop (or Baducing), a Northumbrian monk, goes on a pilgrimage to Rome. He there meets Wig-

hard, who is seeking consecration from Pope Vitalian as Archbishop of Canterbury. Wighard dies of the plague.

668. Pope Vitalian consecrates Theodore, an Eastern monk, born at Tarsus in Cilicia, Archbishop of Canterbury (26 Mar.); and appoints Benedict Biscop to conduct him to Canterbury.

669. Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury, lands in Kent (May), with his friend Hadrian, an African, and Benedict Biscop. He is enthroned at Canterbury (27 May), and makes Biscop Abbot of St. Peter's, Canterbury.

669-672. In company with his friend and fellow-worker Hadrian, Theodore journeys over the whole English portion of Britain, and is everywhere received as Primate, thereby making the Church a *national* one, and uniting all England into one spiritual kingdom. Wilfrid is made Bishop of York (his diocese covering all Northumbria and Lincoln); Leutherius is brought from Gaul to be Bishop of Wessex; Bisi is reconsecrated as bishop over East Anglia, and Ceadda as Bishop of Mercia; and Putta is made Bishop of Rochester. Theodore and Hadrian establish a school at Canterbury, where Latin and Greek are taught; also the astronomy, arithmetic, and poetry of the time. It is from this school that English literature takes its birth. Ealdhelm of Malmesbury, one of Maildulf's pupils, becomes one of the scholars.

670. Oswiu, King of Northumbria, dies (15 Feb.); his son Ecgrith becomes king. Ecgrith drives the Britons from what is now northern Lancashire and the Lake district, and captures Carlisle; he also defeats the Picts and conquers part of their territory north of the Forth (670-675).

Bishop Wilfrid restores the church at York, which had almost fallen into ruins.

671. Benedict Biscop makes another visit to Rome.

672. Cenwealh, King of the West Saxons, dies; his widow Sexburh becomes queen, the only instance (except that of Æthelflæda of Mercia in 912) of a female ruler in England in Anglo-Saxon times.

Benedict Biscop returns to England, and goes to Northumbria, where Ecgrith is king.

673. Ecgberht, King of Kent, dies (July); Hlothere or Lothair succeeds him.

Theodore calls his first Council of Bishops at Hertford (24 Sep.). They meet as bishops of a *national* Church and form the first *national* gathering of Englishmen for the purpose of legislation, and by their example lead the way to a national Parliament. It is enacted that English bishops shall in future

keep to their own dioceses; and not wander at will through the country like the Celtic missionary bishops. Theodore divides East Anglia into two sees, North-folk and South-folk.

Bæda ("the Venerable Bede") is born at Wearmouth (in Durham).

673-685. Between these dates Hlothere (or Lothair) and Eadric, Kings of Kent, frame a code of laws; it consists of 16 provisions, about half being fines for crimes of violence.

674. About this date Ealdelm returns to Malmesbury, of which he afterwards becomes abbot. In course of time he establishes monasteries at Bradford, Frome, Sherborne, and Wareham; his church of St. Lawrence at Bradford* still stands in almost perfect preservation. He becomes the author of some of the earliest English poetry.

Escwine and Centwine are made joint kings of the West Saxons, Queen Sexburh being deposed.

Benedict Biscop builds the monastery of St. Peter's at Wearmouth (Durham) introducing the Roman style of architecture. He brings glass-makers from Gaul, who reintroduce their art into Britain; he also introduces the arts of gold-work and embroidery. The building of churches and monasteries gives rise to the introduction of fine architecture.

675. Wulfhere, King of Mercia, attacks Northumbria, but Ecgfrith defeats him and recovers Lindsay (now Lincolnshire). Wulfhere dies; his brother Æthelred succeeds him. Æthelred defeats Hlothere, King of Kent, and ravages Kent.

Theodore removes Winfred from the bishopric of the Mercians, and makes Sexulf bishop.

676. Putta, Bishop of Rochester, flees to Bishop Sexulf, in Mercia, who gives him a church at Hereford, where he dies.

Osric, under-king of the Hwiccas, founds a monastery at Bath.

Escwine dies, and Centwine, son of Cynegils, becomes sole king of the West Saxons.

677. A storm drives Bishop Wilfred to the Frisian coast of Europe, and leads to renewed intercourse between the English of Britain and their fatherland on the continent.

678. While Theodore is organizing the church in Mercia, Ecgfrith, King of Northumbria, invites him to make a similar organization there. Ecgfrith has become jealous of Bishop Wilfrid, who has become the rival in power and magnificence of the king himself. Theodore deposes Wilfrid, divides his see into three, and makes Eata Bishop of the Bernicians, Bosa of

* Built on the site of Cenwealh's victory over the Britons in 652.

the Deirans, and Eadhed of the Lindiswara (of Lincolnshire). Wilfrid goes to Rome and protests against his deposition as uncanonical; Theodore sends an agent; and the case is tried and decided in Wilfrid's favor. He returns to Egfrith's court with bulls and letters from the Pope; but Egfrith rejects them as obtained by bribery, and puts Wilfrid into prison, where he remains nine months.

Benedict Biscop again visits Rome.

679. War breaks out between Mercia and Northumbria, Lindsey (now Lincolnshire) being again the subject of contention, and a battle is fought on the banks of the Trent. Theodore intervenes, and peace is made whereby Northumbria renounces claim to Lindsey. After this date there are no more under-kings in Lindsey.

680. Sometime before this date and after 660 (the exact date is unknown) Cædmon, a monk of the abbey of Streoneshalch (now Whitby), in Northumbria, writes the first great English poem, a paraphrase of the Biblical story of the Creation. Only fragments of a West Saxon version of it have come down to us. Cynewulf, another Northumbrian poet, also wrote about this date; the work known as "the Exeter Book" is ascribed to him. During the next 50 years Northumbria is the centre of literary culture for western Europe.

A synod is held (17 Sep.) at Heathfield (now Hatfield in Hertfordshire), to combat the Monothelite heresy.

The abbey of Glastonbury is founded before this date.

681. Wilfrid, the deposed Bishop of York, after seeking refuge in vain in Mercia and Kent, finds safety among the South Saxons, the only English people not yet Christianized. He converts them; and their king, Ædilwalch, grants him land at Selsey.

At this date the South Saxons (Sussex) do not number over 7000 families, and the people are poor and rude.

A nunnery is founded at Gloucester, the first in England.

682. The West Saxons, under Centwine, defeat the Britons, and conquer middle Somerset as far as the Quantock Hills.

Benedict Biscop returns from Rome to Northumbria, and introduces the Romish ritual and the art of painting. He founds the monastery of St. Paul's at Jarrow, on the Tyne (in Durham), and begins to form the first library in England.

684. A Northumbrian fleet ravages the Irish shore, probably in revenge for an attack on Northumbria by the Scots of Ireland.

685. Egfrith crosses the Forth to quell a rising of the Picts, under Bruidi, their king, but his army is annihilated

and himself slain at Nectansmere or Dunnichen in Forfarshire (20 May); only a solitary fugitive escapes the slaughter. Aldfrith, Ecgfrith's brother, becomes King of Northumbria.

Theodore summons Wilfrid to a conference at London, a compromise is arranged, and Wilfrid is restored to the see of York, as Bishop of the Deirans.

Centwine, King of Wessex, dies; Ceadwalla, of Ceawlin's line, succeeds. Hlothere, King of Kent, dies; Eadric succeeds him.

686-7. Ceadwalla subdues his rivals of Cutha's line, and conquers the Isle of Wight and Sussex, but fails in an attempt on Kent, his brother Mul being killed. From this date there are no more under-kings in the Isle of Wight.

687. St. Cuthbert, Bishop of Lindisfarne, dies at Lindisfarne (20 Mar.).

688. Ceadwalla abdicates, goes as a pilgrim to Rome, is baptized, and dies (20 Ap., 689). After a civil war Ine or Ina, also of Ceawlin's line, becomes King of Wessex.

690. Benedict Biscop dies (12 Jan.), aged about 62. He is buried at St. Peter's Church, Wearmouth. Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (19 Sep.), aged 87, having organized the Church of England substantially as it is at present. The see is vacant for 3 years.

Willibrord of Northumbria and 12 fellow-preachers are welcomed at the court of the Frankish king, Pippin of Heristal, and are assured of protection in their mission work among the Frisians on the North Sea. He fixes his seat at Utrecht, and labors for 40 years among them, during which he goes to Rome to be consecrated as Bishop of the Frisians.

About this date Wihtræd, King of Kent, frames a code of laws, mostly ecclesiastical.

About this date Ine promulgates a code ("the Laws of Ine"), the only West Saxon one. It deals largely with agriculture and police, showing an advance in industry and civilization.

690-694. Ine, King of Wessex, obtains supremacy over Kent and the East Saxons.

693. Brihtwald is made Archbishop of Canterbury; he holds office for 38 years.

696. Wihtræd of Kent prohibits idolatry and Sunday labor.

697. Osthryth, wife of Æthelred, King of Mercia, is put to death by the "primates" of Southumbria (*i.e.*, Mercia and Lindsey).

704. Æthelred, King of Mercia, abdicates, and becomes a

monk in the abbey of Bardesey, where he dies (716). His nephew Coenred, or Cenred, becomes King of Mercia (704).

704-731. Bada writes his "Ecclesiastical History of the English People" in Latin. In course of time his school at the monastery of Jarrow, in Northumbria, becomes so famous that 600 monks are taught there, besides many foreigners from the continent of Europe. Libraries begin to be founded at Wearmouth and York, the first (after that at Jarrow) among the English in Britain.

705. Ine, King of Wessex, divides the bishopric of Wessex into two, Winchester on the east, and Sherborne on the west; Daniels remains as Bishop of Winchester, and Ealdhelm is made Bishop of Sherborne.

Ealdhelm holds a synod of West Saxon clergy for the purpose of seeking a junction with the British Church of Dyvnaint or Dumnonia (new Devon and Cornwall); he writes a letter to Geraint, Prince of Dyvnaint, with this object.

Aldfrith, or Alchfrid, King of Northumbria, dies (14 Dec.); his son Osred succeeds.

709. At or before this date the West Saxons under Ine conquer east Devon from the Britons, as far as the Exe, and capture Isca Damnonium (now Exeter). Its inhabitants are spared, and the town becomes a double one, the southern half becoming English, and the northern remaining British or Welsh.

At this date cattle are commonly used as the standard of value in Wessex.

About this date the word "shire" (which is of West Saxon origin) first comes into use in Wessex. It originally meant a "shearing," or district "shorn" off from some neighboring district, at first merely the district surrounding a tun or town. Thus, Hampshire is simply an abbreviation of Hamptonshire, or the shire of Hampton ("home-town," now Southampton); and Wiltshire is Wiltonshire, the "shire" or district round the "tun" or town on the river Wil or Wiley. Each such district or shire had its officer or "shire-reeve" (sheriff), whose duty it was to collect the royal dues therein.*

Cenred, King of Mercia, goes to Rome, and becomes a monk; his cousin, Ceolred, a son of Æthelred, succeeds him.

Offa, King of the East Saxons, also abdicates, goes to Rome, and becomes a monk.

Ealdhelm (St. Aldhelm), Bishop of Sherborne, or Selwood-

* See Green's "Conquest of England," p. 223.

shire, dies at Doultling, near Wells, aged about 69. He is buried at Malmesbury. His saint's day is 25 May.

St. Wilfred, now Bishop of Hexham, dies at Oundle (24 Ap. or 12 Oct.), aged 74.

710. Ine, King of Wessex, defeats the Britons under Geraint, conquers south-west Somerset, and on the river Tone erects the fortress which afterwards grew into Taunton (*i.e.*, Town on the Tone). The limit of Ine's conquest here still marks a line between two dialects. At Glastonbury, already for several centuries a religious shrine of the Britons, Ine builds a stone abbey-church, beside the rude log church of the Britons, which he carefully preserves.

715. The Mercians, under Ceolred, invade Wessex, but are repulsed at the battle of Wanborough (in Wilts, near Swindon). Wessex again becomes the leading power in Britain.

716 Ceolred dies; Æthelbald is chosen King of Mercia, and proves its greatest ruler.

Osred, King of Northumbria, is slain; Cenred succeeds.

718. Cenred, King of Northumbria, dies; Osric succeeds.

718-753. Between these dates Winfrith or St. Boniface, of Wessex, labors as a missionary among the Frisians, Thuringians, Hessians, and other tribes in central Europe. He is martyred in Frisia, 5 June, 755. It was thus that the English missionaries (Willibrord and Winfrith) became the instruments for the conversion of their brother Teutons on the continent. Like Willibrord, Winfrith obtained his authority from Rome; and the peoples they converted came under the spiritual authority of Rome, by which means the Papacy was greatly exalted.

721. In Wessex, claimants of the rival line of Cutha revolt against Ine, and civil war breaks out.

725. Wihtræd, King of Kent, dies (23 Ap.); Eadberht succeeds.

726. Ine abdicates the throne of Wessex, and goes as a pilgrim to Rome, where he dies in 728. On his withdrawal Wessex falls into anarchy. Æthelheard becomes king.

For many years after this date large numbers of Englishmen go to Rome as pilgrims.

728. Æthelbald, King of Mercia, invades Wessex, and begins its conquest.

729. Osric, King of Northumbria, dies; Ceolwulf succeeds him (9 May).

733. The Mercians capture Somerton in Oxfordshire, and complete the conquest of Wessex. For 20 years the overlordship of Mercia is recognized by all Britain south of the Humber, and Æthelbald styles himself "King not of the Mercians only,

but of all the neighboring peoples who are called by the common name of Southern English."

734. Ceolwulf makes his cousin Ecgberht Bishop of York.

735. The Venerable Bede, the first great English scholar, dies at Girvy or Jarrow (26 May), aged 62 ; he is buried at Jarrow.

Ecgberht, Bishop of York, is recognized by the Pope as archbishop, and the see of Northumbria becomes independent of and a rival to that of Canterbury. He enlarges and decorates York Minster, and establishes there the largest library yet seen in Britain.

Eallwine, or Alcuin, the second great English scholar, is born at York.

737. Ceolwulf resigns the throne of Northumbria, and becomes a monk at Lindisfarne.

738. Eadberht, a brother of Archbishop Ecgberht, becomes King of Northumbria.

740. He successfully repels an attack by Æthelbald of Mercia, and also wars successfully against the Picts on his northern boundary.

741. The minster at York is burnt (23 Ap.).

743. Æthelheard, King of Wessex, dies ; Cuthred succeeds.

748. Eadberht, King of Kent, dies ; Æthelberht II. succeeds.

749. Æthelbald, King of Mercia, frees all monasteries and churches from taxation and service.

750. Eadberht, King of Northumbria, recovers from the Britons of Strathclyde the district of Kyle in Ayrshire (Scotland). His renown becomes so great that Pippin, the Frankish king, sends envoys to him with gifts and offers of friendship.

754. The West Saxons, under Cuthred, revolt against the supremacy of Æthelbald of Mercia ; he marches against them, but is defeated at Burford (in Oxfordshire, about 17 miles west of Oxford), and Wessex regains its independence. This battle divided English Britain into three equal powers, Northumbria (north of the Humber), Wessex (south of the Thames), and Mercia (between the other two). Wessex follows up its success at Burford by completing the conquest of Devon from the Britons, thus extending the west boundary of Wessex to the river Tamar.

756. Eadberht, King of Northumbria, allies himself with the Picts, and captures Alcluyd (now Dumbarton), the capital of Strathclyde ; but a few days later, on his return, his army is destroyed by the Britons.

Cuthred, King of Wessex, dies ; Sigeberht succeeds.

757. Æthelbald, King of Mercia, is murdered by his own ealdormen; a year of anarchy follows, during which Beornred one of the murderers, is nominal king. Kent, Essex, and East Anglia throw off the overlordship of Mercia.

Sigeberht is driven from the throne of Wessex by his subjects, and Cynewulf becomes king.

758. Offa avenges the murder of Æthelbald, and after slaying Beornred, is made King of Mercia.

Eadberht and his brother, Archbishop Ecgberht, withdraw from public life and retire to a monastery. Eadberht's son Oswulf becomes king, but after reigning a few months he is slain (25 July) by thanes of his own household, and for 50 years Northumbria is rent with intestine feuds and anarchy.

759. Æthelwold Moll seizes the throne of Northumbria. He gains a victory over his opponents at Eildon Hills, near Melrose ; and Offa, King of Mercia, gives him his daughter to wife.

764. St. Ceolwulf, who had resigned the throne of Northumbria in 737 and become a monk, dies at Lindisfarne. His day is 15 Jan.

765. Æthelwold is defeated at Winchanheale, and dethroned ; Alehred becomes King of Northumbria.

766. Alcuin goes on a pilgrimage to Rome.

767. Æthelberht, head of the school at York, is made Archbishop of York; Alcuin returns from Rome, and succeeds Æthelberht as head of the shool.

767-780. Alcuin teaches at York. Scholars from every part of Britain and from Gaul and Germany crowd to his lectures. Æthelberht, Archbishop of York, builds a new and more sumptuous church at York.

774. Alehred, King of Northumbria, after putting down two risings under ealdormen, is driven by Æthelred, son of Æthelwold Moll, to take refuge among the Picts.

775. After a three years' war, Offa, King of Mercia, defeats Æthelberht II., King of Kent, at Otford, and Kent again becomes part of Mercia. The East Saxons also submit to Mercia.

778. Æthelberht resigns the archbishopric of York.

779. Offa defeats the West Saxons at Bensington (in Oxfordshire), and annexes what are now Oxfordshire and Bucks to Mercia.

He makes war on the Welsh, and drives the King of Powys from his capital, Pengwyn, which he names Scrobsbyryg ("the Town of the Scrub," now Shrewsbury). As a line of

demarcation between the English and the Welsh, he makes a huge earthwork from the mouth of the Wye to that of the Dee, which is still called Offa's Dyke. He frames a code, probably to govern the relations between the two peoples. He also establishes a coinage, the standard of value of which he draws from that of the Frankish kings.

Æthelred is driven from Northumbria ; he takes refuge with the Picts, and Alfwold (son of Oswulf) comes to the throne of Northumbria.

780. Eanbald is made Archbishop of York. Alcuin goes to Rome to get the pallium for him.

781. Alcuin meets Charlemagne, King of the Franks, at Parma in Italy, and a friendship is formed between them.

782. Alcuin goes to reside at the court of Charlemagne, at Aachen (Aix-la-Chapelle), and becomes his chief adviser.

786. Cynewulf, King of Wessex, is murdered, and the succession of his son Beorhtric is disputed by Egbert, of Ceawlin's line. Egbert is defeated, and takes refuge at the court of Offa, of Mercia.

At Offa's request two Papal legates visit Mercia, and at a synod held at Calchythe (probably Chelsea) in 787 Lichfield is made an archbishopric, with the Bishops of Mercia and East Anglia as suffragans. This points to a design on Offa's part to make the three English kingdoms (Northumbria, Mercia, and Wessex) permanent, each being now the seat of an archbishopric.

787. Offa joins his son Ecgrith with him in the government of Mercia.

Three ships with Northmen pirates make a descent on Wessex. This was the first coming of the Northmen or Vikings to England. Their attacks continue for nearly 100 years. They were Scandinavians from what are now Denmark and southern Norway. The Swedes took no part in the attack. They are called "Dena" (Danes) in the Anglo-Saxon annals, but were of fairer complexion than, and of a different race from, the Danes proper, who did not appear in Britain till some 70 or 80 years later.

788. Charlemagne seeks the hand of one of Offa's daughters for his son Charles ; Offa asks in return the hand of a daughter of Charlemagne for his son Ecgrith ; this claim of equality so incenses Charlemagne that he closes his ports against English trade until Alcuin reconciles the two sovereigns.

After a stormy reign, Alfwold, King of Northumbria, is slain by an caldorman (24 Sep.), and Osred (a son of Alchred) becomes king.

789. Beorhtric, King of Wessex, marries Offa's daughter, Eadburh; and Offa, in recompense, expels Egbert (Beorhtric's rival to the throne of Wessex) from Mercia. Egbert takes refuge on the continent. at the court of Charlemagne.

790. Alcuin is sent by Charlemagne to England to arrange a peace with Offa of Mercia.

The ealdormen of Northumbria revolt against Osred, who flees, and Æthelred is recalled to the throne after 11 years' exile.

792. Alcuin returns to Charlemagne's court, and combats the Adoptian heresy.

793. Northmen pirates ravage the coast of Northumbria, plunder the monastery of Lindisfarne, and murder its monks.

794. Offa murders Æthelberht, King of East Anglia, and annexes that kingdom to Mercia. He founds the abbey of St. Albans.

Northmen pirates destroy the church at Lindisfarne (8 Jan.) and enter the Wear (Northumbria), and plunder and burn the monasteries of Wearmouth and Jarrow.

795. The Finn-Gaill or Fingalla (*i.e.*, Fair Gentiles or Strangers) or Norwegians, coming round by the north of Scotland, ravage the coast of Ulster, Ireland. These ravages continue for 30 years, along the north and east coasts. The principal objects of attack were the religious houses, where the wealth of the country in gold and silver was stored.

796. Offa dies (29 July); Cenwulf succeeds him as King of Mercia.

Æthelred, King of Northumbria, is murdered by his thanes (19 Ap.); Charlemagne threatens to intervene in the affairs of Northumbria, but Alcuin turns him from his purpose. Eardwulf comes to the throne, and maintains order for ten years.

Alcuin settles at Tours, as abbot of the school there, which soon becomes famous.

798. Cenwulf quells a revolt in Kent, with the help of the Archbishop of Canterbury, whom he promises to suppress the archbishopric of Lichfield, a promise which he carries out in 803.

London is burnt.

800. Charlemagne is crowned Emperor of Rome (25 Dec.).

802. Beorhtric, King of Wessex, is poisoned by his wife Eadburh (Offa's daughter); Egbert returns from exile at the court of Charlemagne, and becomes king.

804. Alcuin dies at Tours, aged 69.

806. Eardwulf, King of Northumbria, is driven from his throne by his subjects.

808. He appeals to the Pope and to Charlemagne as emperor, and they reinstate him on his throne.

815-825. After 10 years' fighting, Egbert, King of Wessex, conquers Cornwall from the Britons, and Wessex now extends from Kent to Land's End.

818-819. Cenwulf, King of Mercia, ravages Gwynedd and Dyfed (North Wales and South-west Wales).

820. Before this date Northmen make a permanent settlement in Wicklow, Ireland, which they make a base for attacks on Anglo-Saxon Britain.

821. Cenwulf, King of Mercia, is slain; Cenelm succeeds him, but the kingdom is rent by civil war.

824. Beornwulf, King of Mercia, conquers Powys.

825. Beornwulf, King of Mercia, invades Wessex, but is defeated by Egbert at Ellandun, in Wilts; and Sussex, Kent, and the East Saxons submit to Egbert as overlord.

826. East Anglia revolts against Mercia, and gains two victories over the Mercians, and Beornwulf is slain. Ludeca succeeds as King of Mercia.

Egbert makes Kent, Essex, Surrey, and Sussex an under-kingdom, calling it "the Eastern Kingdom," and places his son Æthelwulf over it as under-king.

828. The West Saxons, under Egbert, cross the Thames and invade Mercia; its king, Wiglaf, flees helplessly, and Mercia submits without a struggle to Egbert, who, in 830, restores Wiglaf as under-king on its throne.

829. Egbert marches to attack Northumbria; the Northumbrian thanes meet him at Dore, in Derbyshire, and submit to him as overlord, and Egbert unites all the English in Britain under his sway, and becomes 8th Bretwalda.

832. The Northmen, under Turgesius, or Thorgils, make an organized invasion of Ireland, establish themselves in Armagh, and levy tribute from the whole north of Ireland.

833. Ceolnoth is elected Archbishop of Canterbury (29 June); consecrated (27 Aug.).

834. Northmen pirates push up the Thames, and ravage the Isle of Sheppey.

836. Northmen pirates land in Dorset, and defeat Egbert at Charmouth (two miles from Lyme Regis).

837. A raid of Northmen pirates from Ireland, on Hampshire, is repulsed by Ealdorman Wulfheard. Northmen from Ireland land in Dorsetshire, and defeat the English under Ealdorman Æthelhelm at Portland.

The Britons of Cornwall league with the Northmen in Ireland, and rise against Egbert, but he defeats the combined

forces at Hengest-Dun (Hengest Down, or Hingston Down, in Cornwall, near the Tamar).

837 or 838. The Northmen in Ireland capture Dublin.

838. The common danger from the Northmen (who are Pagans) draws Church and State together in closer union, and Egbert promises protection to the see of Canterbury, and receives from Archbishop Ceolnoth a pledge of friendship for ever. From this date the Church takes a new and prominent part in English affairs.

Northmen pirates made descents on Lindsey (Lincolnshire), East Anglia (Norfolk and Suffolk), and Kent. Æthelstan, a son of Æthelwulf, opposes them.

839. Egbert dies; his son Æthelwulf becomes King of the English, and confirms the alliance with Archbishop Ceolnoth. Wiglaf, under-King of Mercia, dies; Beorhtwulf succeeds.

Northmen pirates make a raid on Canterbury, and push up the Thames to Rochester and London.

840. Northmen pirates, in 35 ships, land at Charmouth in Dorset, and defeat King Æthelwulf. They also ravage Kent, East Anglia, and Lincolnshire. About this date Æthelwulf communicates with the Emperor Lewis the Gentle for the purpose of bringing about common action to meet the common danger from the Northmen, who have been ravaging the coast of Gaul as well as that of Britain.

Alfred the Great, the youngest son of Æthelwulf, is born, about this date,* at Wanating (now Wantage, in Berks).

841 or 842. The Northmen erect a fortress at Dublin. About this time, or a little later, they plant colonies and raise forts at Waterford, Cork, and Limerick.

844. Northmen pirates from Jutland, after pushing up the Seine and Loire and sacking Rouen and Nantes, reach the Garonne, and harry the country round Toulouse.

* On the authority of Asser the date usually given for Alfred's birth is 849, and this is accepted by such authorities as Freeman, Green, Allibone, and Appletons' and Chambers' Encyclopædias. Nevertheless, that the date is certainly wrong, and that some earlier date (840 or thereabouts) is right, seems to be shown by two circumstances. In 853 Alfred went to Rome, and was consecrated as future king by the Pope. Now, it is incredible that this could have happened to a child four years old. But, even more conclusive, his daughter Æthelflæd was married before 880. A charter of that year is still extant, signed by her husband, Æthelred of Mercia, and by herself as co-ruler (see Green's "Conquest of England," Harper's edition, p. 138, Note 2). Assuming that she was then only 18 years old, and that she must consequently have been begotten in 861, Alfred—had he been born in 849—must have been married at 12, and a father at 13.—F. T. J.

The Pictish royal line comes to an end, and Kenneth MacAlpin, under-king of the Scots of Dalriada, ascends the Pictish throne, in right of maternal descent, and his descendants remain sovereigns for 50 years.

845. A large army of Northmen sack Paris.

The men of Somerset and Dorset repulse Northmen pirates with heavy loss, at the mouth of the Parret, on the Bristol Channel.

Thorgils is slain in Ireland, in a rising of the native tribes of the North, and his Northmen followers are, for a time, driven from the land.

848. Northmen pirates capture Bordeaux.

851. The men of Devon repel an attack of Northmen pirates with much slaughter, and for 20 years only a single descent in the West disturbs the peace.

The men of Kent repel a Northmen raid on Sandwich, and capture 9 of the pirate ships. The Northmen winter in the Isle of Thanet in Kent.

Northmen pirates, in a fleet of 350 vessels from the island of Betau, moor at the mouth of the Thames, sack Canterbury, pillage London, and, in spite of the opposition of Beorhtwulf, under-King of Mercia, push through Surrey into the heart of Britain; but they are completely defeated by Æthelwulf at Aclea (now Ockley in Surrey), and they withdraw to their old field of plunder in Gaul.

851 or 852. A force of "Dubh-Gaill" (*i.e.*, Dark Gentiles, or Strangers) or Danes, under Olaf the Fair, make a descent on Ireland, but withdraw, after an unsuccessful contest with the Finn-Gaill, or White Strangers (Norwegians), who were already again in possession.

852. Beorhtwulf, under-King of Mercia, dies; Burhred succeeds.

853. A battle is fought in the Isle of Thanet between the pirates and the men of Surrey and Kent, whose two ealdormen, Huda and Ealhere, are slain.

Alfred accompanies an embassy sent by his father, King Æthelwulf, to Rome.

Taking advantage of the raids of the Northmen, the Welsh, under Rohdri Mawr (Roderic the Great), revolt against Mercia; the Mercian under-king, Burhred (Beorhtwulf's successor), appeals to his overlord, Æthelwulf, for aid, and the joint forces of Wessex and Mercia push through the heart of Wales, conquer Anglesey and compel Wales to submit and pay tribute to Mercia.

855. Æthelwulf makes a "Donation" of one-tenth part



NAPOLEON RECEIVED ON THE BELLEROPHON.—P. 312,



QUEEN VICTORIA.—P. 313.



TOWER OF LONDON.—P. 121.



MURDER OF THOMAS A BECKET.—P. 140.

of his private estate for ecclesiastical and charitable purposes. He also makes a pilgrimage to Rome, and stays there a year. His youngest son Alfred accompanies him.

The Anglo-Saxon Chronicle is first compiled.

Northmen pirates winter in the Isle of Sheppey in Kent.

856. Æthelwulf, with his son Alfred, goes from Rome to the court of the Frankish king, Charles the Bald; stays there three months; and marries Charles's daughter Judith (1 Oct.), a child of twelve. On his return to Wessex, his people rise against him; he calls his Witan to settle the question; and they allot him "the Eastern Kingdom" (Kent, Essex, Surrey, and Sussex), and give Wessex to his eldest surviving son Æthelbald. Æthelwulf acquiesces in the arrangement. His eldest son, Æthelstan, had died while he was abroad.

The Danes, under Olaf the Fair, return to Ireland in overwhelming force, occupy Dublin, and make themselves masters of the whole eastern coast. Inguar, or Ivar, the Boneless, another Danish leader, seems to have been fighting in Munster at this time.

858. Æthelwulf dies (13 Jan.); his son Æthelbald becomes sole monarch.

860. Æthelbald dies; his brother Æthelberht succeeds him. A raid of Northmen pirates on Winchester is avenged by the men of Hants and Berks.

864. Northmen pirates from Gaul ravage the east coast of Kent; they also winter in the Isle of Thanet in Kent.

866. Æthelberht dies; his brother Æthelred succeeds him, and the Eastern Kingdom is consolidated with Wessex. The king's younger brother Alfred is made "Secondarius."

By this date the Northmen had occupied the Faroes, Shetlands, Orkneys, and Hebrides; had dotted the west coast of Ireland with their towns; and had settled along nearly the whole coast of the continent from the Elbe to Bordeaux. In order to consolidate their territory it becomes necessary to attempt the conquest of Britain, and that island now becomes the main point of their attack. Another branch of the Scandinavian race, the Danes, closely allied to the Northmen, or Norwegians, but apparently of darker complexion, now appear upon the scene. About this date they seem to have migrated from southern Sweden to Jutland and the intervening isles (Zealand, etc.); and toward the end of the ninth century they founded the Kingdom of Denmark. They had already (856) occupied the east coast of Ireland.

CHAPTER V.

THE DANISH CONQUEST.

866. A Danish fleet of 200 vessels from Ireland, under Olaf, attacks Pictavia (now Scotland) north of the Frith of Clyde.

A Danish host from Scandinavia, under Ivar the Boneless, land in East Anglia and winter there.

867. They go north to Northumbria and capture York. The Northumbrians, under their two rival kings, Ælla and Osberht, who join against the common enemy, attempt its recapture, but are totally defeated, the two kings are slain, and Deira becomes tributary to the Danes.

867-875. The Danes plunder and destroy the religious houses throughout Northumbria, and Northumbrian learning and civilization come to an end. Almost the only edifices left are Wilfred's church at Ripon, and Archbishop Æthelberht's minster of York. The religious houses, on account of the wealth hoarded in them, were their principal objects of attack.

868. A Dane, Bægsceg, is made King of Bernicia, and the Danes set up Egbert as under-King of Deira, and prepare for the conquest of Mercia by seizing the passage of the Trent, at Nottingham, and forming a winter camp there.

869. Buhred, under-King of Mercia, calls for aid from his overlord, Æthelred of Wessex, who, with his brother Alfred, attacks the Danes at Nottingham with partial success, and they make peace with the Mercians and withdraw to York. At the close of the year, however, the Danes, under Ivar and his brother Hubba, attack East Anglia, and sack and burn the monasteries at Peterborough, Crowland, and Ely.

870. The Danes conquer East Anglia, capture its king, Eadmund (afterward known as St. Sebastian), bind him to a tree, and shoot him to death with arrows (20 Nov.). The abbey of Bury St. Edmunds, in Suffolk, was afterward built over his relics. Mercia becomes panic-stricken, and owns Danish supremacy by paying tribute. Wessex alone remains unconquered.

St. Ebbe suffers martyrdom, the first instance of the martyrdom of a woman recorded in Britain.

Ceolnoth, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies ; Æthelred is made archbishop.

By this date the Northmen had conquered Caithness, and made Constantin, King of the Picts, tributary.

871. A Danish force, under Guthrum, or Gorm, and Bægsceg, King of Bernicia, intended for the conquest of Wessex, sails up the Thames past London, and pitches camp near Reading. The West Saxons, under Æthelred and Alfred, attack the camp, but are repulsed ; and the Danes push on to and encamp at Ashdown, in Berks, where, after a desperate battle, they are defeated (Feb.) by Æthelred and Alfred, and Bægsceg and five Danish jarls are killed.

The West Saxons, under Æthelred, attack the Danes at Merton, in Surrey, but are repulsed, and Æthelred is mortally wounded. He dies (23 Ap.), and his brother Alfred succeeds him.

The Danes, having been reinforced, advance and encamp at Wilton (from which Wilton-shire, now Wiltshire, owes its name). Alfred attacks them, but is repulsed, and he suffers a succession of small defeats. By a payment of money he purchases their withdrawal from Wessex, and they winter at London.

872. The Archbishop of Canterbury consecrates Cameleac as Bishop of Llandaff in Wales.

874. The Danes invade Mercia ; its king, Burhred, flees over the sea to Rome, where he dies ; they set up Ceolwulf as a puppet king, sack and burn the great abbey at Lichfield, which was the burial-place of the Mercian kings, and winter at Repton (in Derbyshire, about 7 miles S. W. of Derby).

875. The Danes divide their forces. One half, under Halfdene, marches north to ravage Bernicia and plunder its remaining monasteries ; thence through Cumbria,* where it burns Carlisle ; and thence into Strathclyde, where the Pictish king, Constantin, is battling against the Northmen from the Orkneys, under Thorstein (a son of Olaf the Fair) and Sigurd. The Picts, pressed between these forces and those of Halfdene, purchase peace by the cession of Caithness.

The other half of the Danish forces, under Guthrum, marches from Repton to Cambridge to prepare for a final attack on Wessex.

* This word is first used about this date to denote the southern portion of Strathclyde, south of the Solway Frith, now Cumberland.

876. Guthrum, having received large reinforcements, sets sail with an immense fleet from East Anglia, sails along the east and south coast to Dorset, where he lands and pitches camp at Wareham, near the mouth of the Frome. Alfred equips a few vessels, which cut off stragglers; he then marches against Wareham, but finding the Danes too strong, he purchases their withdrawal.

A part of Halfdene's forces in the north take horse, march across the country to Devon, and seize Exeter, then half-peopled by Britons.

Halfdene retires from Bernicia into Deira, where the Danes settle and divide the lands amongst them, becoming a new territorial aristocracy, many English remaining as tenants and tillers of the soil, but many others taking refuge in Cumbria. Traces of the Danish occupation still remain in local names ending in *by*, *thwaite*, and *dale*. Bernicia was not settled by them in the same way, but remained wholly English; no Danish traces remain north of the Tees. The division of Deira (now Yorkshire) into three Trithings, or Ridings, and of the Ridings into Wapentakes (equivalent to the Hundreds of the South) probably dates from this time.

877. The Danes divide part of Mercia among themselves. This portion, called Danish Mercia, included the present shires of Lincoln, Nottingham, Derby, Leicester, Rutland, and Northampton, and is still marked by Danish names. The territory afterward became known as "the District of the Five Boroughs"* (Derby, Leicester, Lincoln, Stamford, and Nottingham), and was self-governed, without a king, as a sort of confederacy, each Borough having its own government. The port of Grimsby, on the Humber, became a rival of York in trade and commerce.

The rest of Mercia (Cheshire, Shropshire, Stafford, Worcester, Gloucester, Hereford, Oxon, and part of Bucks) remained under the rule of Ceolwulf, the under-king whom the Danes had set up, and did not become Danish.

Northumbria remained an organized kingdom, under the stock of Inguar, or Ivar. with its capital at York.

The West Saxons, under Alfred, aided by a hired fleet outside, and by the wrecking of Guthrum's fleet in a storm, besiege Exeter, and starve it into surrender. †

* This title first occurs in 941.

† The 1000th anniversary of this capture, by which the tide of Danish success was first turned, was commemorated in 1877 by the unveiling of a statue of Alfred, at Wantage, his birthplace, by the Prince of Wales, his lineal descendant.

Guthrum, with the remnant of his forces at Wareham, withdraws across country to winter at Gloucester; and Hubba, Ivar's brother, with a fleet of Danes, ascends the Bristol Channel to aid him. Alfred disbands his forces.

At this time the West Saxon and Mercian Kings had no standing armies, but were dependent for defence upon temporary levies made on an agricultural population, so that their forces, being needed for work in the fields, could not be kept together for longer than a few months at a time. The Danish forces, on the other hand, were of the nature of standing armies of professional soldiers or freebooters, subsisting not by their own agricultural labors, but by plunder.

Rhodri Mawr (Rhoderic the Great), Prince of Wales, is killed by the Saxons; his dominions are divided among his three sons, who quarrel among themselves.

At this period large numbers of Northmen (Norwegians, Danes, Swedes, and Flemings) emigrate from Britain to Iceland, being among the first settlers there.

About this date the word "Scotti" is first used to designate, not only the Scots of Dalriada, but inhabitants of "Pict-land" proper.

878. Hubba, with 23 ships, makes his way to the coast of Devon, while Guthrum, with his forces, crosses the Somerset Avon into Wilts and advances to Chippenham. Wessex is completely surprised, and before Alfred can gather an army, they ravage the country, and drive part of the English across the Bristol Channel into Wales. Alfred, with a small band, takes refuge in the marshes at Sedgemoor, in Somerset, and throws up a fort at Athelney, at the confluence of the Tone with the Parret.* He spends three months here preparing for a new struggle. The men of Devon, under their ealdorman, Odda, cut Hubba's squadron to pieces while it is harrying the coast. By May, the whole West Saxon forces rally under Alfred, and totally defeat the Danes at Ethandun (probably Edington, in Wilts, about 15 miles S. E. of Bath), and fourteen days later capture their camp. By this defeat the spirit of the Danes is utterly broken; part withdraw to their old quarters in Gaul, and Guthrum makes peace with Alfred at Wedmore (a village near Athelney, in Somerset, between Bridgewater and Yeovil). By this Treaty England is divided between Alfred and the Danes. Alfred's realm included all England south of

* A memorial of Alfred's heroic stand at this place, in the shape of a jewel of blue enamel, enclosed in a setting of gold, with the words round it, "Aelfred mec heht gevvean" ("Ælfred had me wrought"), was found here in 1693.

the Thames, and the portion of Mercia under the rule of Ceolwulf. English Mercia was placed under Æthelred as ealdorman, with a separate Witenagemot. The Danish portion of Britain, or the Danelagh, or Danelaw, as it was called, stretched from the Tees to the Thames, east of the Pennine and Cotswold Hills. It consisted of three parts: Northumbria, Danish Mercia, and Guthrum's kingdom. This last included East Anglia, Essex, Middlesex, and Herts. Guthrum, by the Treaty, also promises to become a Christian; and he does so at Alre, near Athelney, taking the baptismal name of Æthelstan, Alfred acting as his godfather. The Danes observe the peace for six years, turning their attention to the Franks across the channel, and using the Danelaw as a base of attack.

879. The Peace of Wedmore had left Wessex almost ruined; the schools and monasteries, towns and villages, were in ruins, and large tracts of country lay wasted and without inhabitants. Alfred begins and carries on the work of restoration with characteristic vigor and success. He builds forts at places exposed to attack; colonizes wasted lands afresh; and founds new abbeys at Winchester and Shaftesbury, and a religious house at Athelney. In place of the old system of temporary levies of troops for two months, he creates a new military system, on a semi-feudal basis, which furnishes a solid nucleus of a well-armed permanent force in addition to the levy of all the freemen. This levy he divides into two halves, each taking its turn in the field, while the other defends its own locality. He also creates a national fleet to meet the pirates on their own element, which in a few years is strong enough to encounter the pirate fleet of East Anglia. He also reorganizes public justice on the basis that the monarch shall be the fountain of justice, so converting merely local systems into a national one. The law becomes the king's law; offences against it are offences against the king. He establishes mints at many places, including one in Mercia, at Oksnaforda (the earliest authentic form of the name Oxford). He fuses the three codes of Kent, Wessex, and Mercia into one, adding nothing, but rejecting, "with the advice of his Witan," what seemed not good, thus beginning the conception of a national law. He begins the restoration of learning, which had been rooted out by the Danes; his memory is full of English songs, which he teaches to his children.

880. Guthrum, with the remnant of his army, retires from Cirencester to East Anglia, where the Danes divide the lands among themselves, as they had done in Deira and Danish

Mercia. Another band of Danes winter at Fulham, a little west of London.

882. A Danish pirate fleet sails from the Loire, and attacks Wessex, but is driven off by Alfred's new fleet, four of their vessels being sunk or captured.

883. Harald Harfager (*i. e.* Hair-fair, or Fair-hair) wins a great fight at Hafursfiord (in Norway), and founds the kingdom of Norway.

885. Danish vessels from the Somme push up the Thames and attack Rochester, but the town holds out till Alfred comes to its relief, when the pirates are driven off, with the loss of their horses. The Danes of Guthrum's kingdom (East Anglia, Middlesex, Essex, and Herts) having, in breach of the Treaty of Wedmore, lent assistance in this attack, are punished by Alfred's fleet.

Guthrum-Æthelstan, in his present contest with Alfred, receives aid from Hrolf or Rolf (Latin, Rollo; French, Rou) of Norway.

The Welsh quarrel among themselves, and the Kings of Demetia and Brecknock own Alfred as overlord, in exchange for his pledge to protect them against their enemies, the princes of the house of Rhodri Mawr (Roderic the Great).

Alfred brings Asser from Wales and makes him Bishop of Sherborne.

886. Guthrum-Æthelstan and Alfred make a new peace. By this Alfred acquires London and the country west of the Lea, which is now probably first called Middlesex; also part of Herts. By the acquisition and fortification of London the valley of the Thames is closed against the Danes, and they are placed in a position of defence, instead of attack. This date marks the real foundation of a national monarchy of England. In this year, says the Chronicle, "all the Angel-cyn [English race] turned to Alfred, save those that were under bondage to Danish men."

About this date Alfred learns Latin, and begins to translate Latin books into English. He seeks to have every free-born youth in his kingdom read English, and sets up a school for the young nobles at his own court. He founds English prose literature, giving to England a national literature, then without a parallel in the western world, so that in the literatures of modern Europe that of England leads the way.

887. About this date Alfred takes in hand and re-edits the English Chronicle, the earliest and most venerable monument of English prose. The entries from 858 to 891 are probably Alfred's own compilation. With its appearance, English

history ceases to be mere local annals, as heretofore, and becomes national, and the heritage of the whole people, and so aids in the progress toward national unity.

889. About this date "Pictavia," the Land of the Picts, is for the first time called Alban.

890. Guthrum-Æthelstan, the Danish king of East Anglia and Essex, dies. (Æthelstan, his baptismal name, is the only one which appears on his coins.) Eorhic, or Yorick, probably his son, succeeds him.

Alfred makes Phlegmund, of Mercia, Archbishop of Canterbury. He brings over Grimbald, of St. Omer, to preside over the new abbey of Winchester; and John (probably from Westphalia, in Germany) to rule over the new monastery at Athelney.

893. Before this date, Harold Harfager, of Norway, at the head of the "Dubh-Gaill" (Black Strangers) or Danes, had driven the Wikings, or Northmen, from the Orkneys, Shetlands, Western Isles of Scotland, and the Isle of Man, and had founded an earldom in the Orkneys which had become a base of attack on the kingdom of Alban, whence the Danes had conquered Caithness and Sutherland, so that Alban was little more than the basin of the Tày.

Northmen, in a fleet of 250 vessels, gather at Boulogne, land at Lymne, in Kent, and establish themselves in the Andredsweald (the great forest of the Weald, 112 miles long and 30 broad); and Hasting, with 80 ships, enters the Thames, ascends the Swale, and forms a winter camp at Milton, in Kent.

Asser begins to write his "Life of Alfred."

894. The Northmen push their raids into Hants and Berks. Alfred advances, holds them at bay in the Andredsweald, and Hasting makes peace, gives hostages, and allows his two sons to be baptized. In breach of the peace, however, the invaders advance north, cross the Thames into Essex, and form camp on the Colne, where Alfred besieges them. On this the whole Danelaw rises to their aid; the Britons in Cornwall and in Wales also rise. Edward (Alfred's son) and Æthelred, of Mercia, attack the camp on the Colne, and sink part of the Norse fleet. The invaders form a new camp at Shoebury, then march up the Thames Valley, north of London, as far as the Severn Valley, and ravage Mercia. Alfred holds Exeter against the attacks of the Britons of Cornwall and Devon, who are aided by a Danish fleet from East Anglia which moors off the town. Edward and Æthelred march from Essex to Alfred's aid, and with forces gathered from all

Alfred's realm, overtake the pirate army at Buttington, in the Severn valley, and after a siege of some weeks, force it to fight, defeat it with great slaughter, and drive the remnant back to Essex. Hasting, with fresh forces from the Danelaw, crosses mid-Britain and takes refuge within the ruined walls of Chester,* where he is besieged through the winter by Æthelred.

895. Hasting abandons Chester, and withdraws across England to a camp on the River Lea, in Essex, where he is joined by those who have been beaten back from the siege of Exeter. The men of London are repulsed in an attack on the camp, and Alfred comes from the West to prepare for a decisive blow.

896. Alfred blockades the whole Danish fleet in the Lea, and forces the Danes to abandon it, and they strike across the country again for the Severn valley, where they encamp at Bridgenorth, in Shropshire.

897. The remnant of the Danish forces at Bridgenorth break up; part retire to their homes in the Danelaw, and Hasting's followers return to their former quarters across the Channel.

The house of Roderic, of Wales, submit to Alfred, and all Wales becomes subject to him. Alfred also forms an alliance with Eadwulf, of Bamborough, King of Bernicia.

With a view to curb the growing power of the Danes by continental alliances, Alfred gives his third and youngest daughter Ælfthryth (or Elfrith, or Elfrida) in marriage to Baldwin II., Count of Flanders.

901. Alfred the Great, probably the noblest monarch that ever sat on a throne, dies (28 Oct.), aged about 60, and is buried at Winchester. His son, Edward the Elder, is chosen king. He styles himself, not King of the West Saxons or Mercians, but "King of the Anglo-Saxons," or "King of the English" (Anglorum). His cousin Æthelwald, a son of Alfred's elder brother Æthelred, claims the throne, but being without support, is forced to fly, and takes refuge among the Danes of Deira, who choose him as their king, a step which marks the beginning of the fusion of the English and the Danes.

902. Edward the Elder is crowned (16 May).

The men of Kent defeat the Danes at the Holm in Kent.

The Irish drive the Danes from Dublin temporarily.

904. Æthelwald goes with a fleet to Essex, and the people submit to him.

* Chester had remained a waste since its destruction by Æthelfrith in 613.

905. Æthelwald goes to East Anglia and rouses the Danes there for an attack on Wessex.

906. He is defeated by Edward, and he and Eorhic, King of East Anglia, are slain; and Edward and the army of East Anglia renew the Peace of Wedmore.

907. Æthelred, Ealdorman of Mercia, and his wife Æthelflæd,* begin the restoration of Chester (destroyed in 613) and its walls, as a barrier to prevent the Welsh from uniting with the Danes.

Edward the Elder, in order to strengthen himself against the growing power of the Northmen and Danes, gives his daughter Eadgifu in marriage to the Frankish King, Charles the Simple.

910. The Danes from the Danelaw invade Mercia, but are repulsed at Tottenhale (or Tettenhall in Staffordshire) by the Mercians and West Saxons under Edward (6 Aug.), who follows the invaders across their border, and harries the Danelaw for five weeks.

Æthelflæd, of Mercia, fortifies Bramsbury.

A pirate force land at the mouth of the Severn, but are repulsed by levies from the neighboring shires. Edward's fleet of 100 ships is master of the English Channel.

911. A large force of Danes from Northumbria, under its kings, Ecwils and Halfdene, to avenge Edward's harryings, invade and ravage Mercia. Edward's forces march north, overtake them loaded with spoil, and inflict on them a total defeat at Wodnesfield (or Wednesfield, in Staffordshire), both kings and thousands of Danes being slain.

Danes from Dublin ravage South Wales.

912. Æthelred, Ealdorman of Mercia, dies; his widow Æthelflæd becomes sole ruler, with the title of "Lady of the Mercians." Edward detaches Oxford, London, and the lower valley of the Thames from Mercia, and annexes them to Wessex. He plants two forts on the site of what is now Hertford, one on each side of the Lea, near the Danelaw boundary, and occupies land on the Danish side. In Essex he also occupies Maldon (on the Blackwater) and Witham, cutting off the Danes from the Thames and appropriating the whole of southern Essex.

By the Treaty of St. Clair-on-Epte, Charles the Simple, King of the West Franks, grants to Hrolf, or Rolf (Latin, Rollo; French, Rou), the land at the mouth of the Seine, from the sea to the Epte (a small stream from the north,

* Daughter of Alfred the Great.

falling into the Seine at Vernon, on the boundary between Eure and Seine-et-Oise), which becomes known as "the land of the Northmen," and afterward as Normandy. Rolf himself was probably a Norwegian, but the greater part of his pirate followers were Danes. Rolf is baptized as Robert, and swears fealty to Charles as his lord.

913. Edward's sister, Æthelflæd of Mercia, strengthens her western boundary against the Welsh by erecting forts at Scargate and Bridgenorth, and firmly establishes herself on the line of Watling Street (the boundary between English and Danish Mercia) so as to bar any further Danish raids into English Mercia, by erecting fortresses at Tamworth and Stafford, the latter then being the most important strategical point in Middle Britain.

914. Æthelflæd erects a fortress at Warwick to bar access along the Fosse Road and the Avon Valley.

914-915. She erects fortresses at Cherbury (Shropshire), Warbury, and Runcorn (Cheshire).

915. Danish pirates try to land at Watchet and Porlock (Somerset), but many are killed, and the rest are driven off. They then invade Ireland.

915 or 918. A fleet of Danes from the south, probably Brittany, under Ohter and Hroald, enter the Severn and ravage the coast of Wales, but are driven off by the men of Gloucester and Hereford.

916. Æthelflæd storms the town of Brecknock, in Wales, and takes the wife of the Welsh king prisoner.

917. She captures Derby (Aug.), one of the Five Boroughs.

918. Edward captures Buckingham from the Danes, and secures his conquest by building forts on both sides of the Ouse to guard its passage. Its capture is followed by the submission of the chief men of Bedford and Nottingham.

Æthelflæd captures Leicester (another of the Five Boroughs). The people of York send her word of submission, but while she is treating for its surrender, she dies at Tamworth (12 June), and is buried at Gloucester. Mercia is brought under the direct rule of Edward.

Shire divisions were probably not introduced into English Mercia before its annexation by Edward in this year.

A fleet of Danes from Brittany ravage the coasts of Wales and the Severn; they are driven off, and then go to Ireland and re-establish themselves in Dublin.

919. Edward captures Bedford from the Danes, and builds a fort there on the south of the Ouse.

920. Sihtric, the Danish King of Dublin, is driven thence, and becomes king at York.

921. Edward seizes and fortifies the site of the ruined Towcester (in Northampton). This capture arouses the Danes of Mid-Britain to action. He erects fresh fortresses at Maldon (in Essex), and at Wigmore (in Herefordshire). An attack by the Danes of Mercia on Towcester is repulsed, and Northampton and the surrounding district submits to Edward.

The Danes of East Anglia attack Bedford, but are repulsed, and the English capture Tempsford and Colchester. A counter-raid by the Danes on Maldon is repulsed. Edward captures Godmanchester, and the Danes of all East Anglia and Essex submit to him.

922. Edward marches on Stamford (in Lincoln, one of the Five Boroughs), and it submits; he secures his conquest by a fort. He captures Northampton (the 4th of the Five Boroughs) and erects a fort there; and all Danish Mercia (and no doubt Lincoln, the 5th of the Five Boroughs) submits to him. The Welsh kings also submit to him.

In all his conquests, as well as within Wessex itself and English Mercia, Edward enforces the new principle of personal allegiance, under oath, to himself as supreme lord, and thus completes the foundation of the feudal system in England.

923. In order to cut off the Danes of Northumbria from succor from their brother Danes or Ostmen in Ireland, Edward builds a town and fortress at Thelwall, on the Mersey, and occupies the old Roman town of Mancunium (now Manchester), then in Northumbria, which had been a ruin since Æthelfrith's day (613).

924. These new additions to his realm he links with Nottingham and Derby by a fort at Bakewell (in Derby), on the upper Derwent. He also throws a bridge across the Trent at Nottingham, and builds a second fort there.

Constantin (King of Alban), the British princes of Strathclyde, and the lords of Bernicia, league themselves together to assist Northumbria against Edward's meditated attack. Edward marches through the Dore (or Door) Pass in Derbyshire, to attack them, but they submit and own him as "father and lord." It was upon this submission that English crown-lawyers in after-times based the claim of the English kings to the overlordship of Scotland. The people of Northumbria who "bowed" to Edward are separately named—"either English, or Danes, or Northmen."

Rolf having assisted Charles the Simple in his wars, Charles in recompense, grants him the district round Bayeux

(now in Côtes du Nord) as an addition to his former territory.

925. Edward the Elder dies (Jan.) at Fearndun (or Farn-don, in Northamptonshire); his son Athelstan succeeds him, and adopts the same title, "King of the Angul-Saxons." Sihtric, the Danish ruler in Deira, comes to Athelstan's court at Tamworth (Jan.), and marries one of his sisters. Athelstan marries another sister, Eadgyth, to Otto (the son of the German king, Henry), afterward Emperor as Otto the Great, thus pursuing the policy of Alfred and Edward, in seeking foreign alliances as a protection against the growing power of the Normans and Danes.

926. Sihtric dies, probably by violence; his son Guthferth, or Godfrey, succeeds him, and the old confederacy of the Northumbrians, Picts, Britons of Strathclyde, and the Welsh is renewed. The Britons in West Wales (Cornwall) also rise. Athelstan marches into Northumbria, drives out Guthferth and his brother Anlaf, or Olaf, who take refuge with Constantin, King of Alban, who gives his daughter in marriage to Olaf. Howel, King of the Welsh, Owen of Gwent (Monmouthshire), Ealdred, Lord of Bernicia, and the Alban King, Constantin, meet Athelstan at Eamot (12 July), and submit, and acknowledge him as King of the Northumbrians. Athelstan goes to Hereford, summons the Welsh chiefs, and forces them to own him as overlord as King of Mercia, to pay a yearly tribute, and to accept the Wye as the boundary between Mercia and Wales.

Athelstan gives his sister Eadhild in marriage to Hugh the Great, Duke of Paris, brother-in-law of Rudolf of Burgundy. Rudolf claims the West Frankish crown, in opposition to Charles the Simple, and his claim is backed by Hugh. Charles again falls back on the alliance of Rolf, and the Normans are thus kept engaged while Athelstan is completing the conquest of Wales and the Danelaw.

Athelstan marches to Exeter, in Devon, drives out the British half of its inhabitants, and builds a stone wall round it; he then goes into Cornwall, finally defeats the Britons (or West Welsh as they were called) at Bolleit by St. Buryan's, and fixes the boundary of the Britons at the river Tamar, the present boundary between Devon and Cornwall.

About this date Athelstan makes Odo, a Dane, Bishop of Ramsbury.

927. Athelstan styles himself "Monarch of all Britain."

A great synod meets at Greatanlea (now Greatley, near Andover, in Hants) and promulgates a code of laws for the

regulation of public order and the defence of property. A like code is promulgated at Witenagemots held at Exeter, Feversham (in Kent), and Thunresfield (probably in Surrey). One object of these codes was to check the growing lawlessness of the thegns, or nobles, by bringing them under the "king's justice" and banishing them from one part of the realm to another. Stringent laws against theft, which is made a capital offence, indicate the growing wealth of the country. Trade regulations are embodied in these codes. They provide for "one money all over the king's land," and prohibit "minting" (*i. e.*, coining) save "within port." The places where mints were in existence at this time were London, with 8 "moneyers," or coiners; Canterbury, with 7; Winchester, 6; Rochester, 3; Lewes, Southampton, Wareham, Exeter, and Shaftesbury, 2 each; and Hastings, Chichester, and other "burhs," 1 each. By Athelstan's day, shire-divisions had become a settled thing all over Wessex and the land of the East Saxons. The date of their institution in Mid-Britain is doubtful.

Rolf, Duke of Normandy, abdicates in favor of his son William Longsword, who vigorously carries on his father's work of converting and civilizing his people. These give up their own language and adopt that of the Franks, thus creating Norman-French. The English view their growing power with uneasiness, because of their consanguinity with the Danes of the Danelaw, and continue to seek alliances on the continent to guard against it.

929. In the Witenagemot of Northumbria Danish jarls (or earls), English ealdormen, and the Archbishops of York and Canterbury, sit together, a circumstance which indicates Athelstan's desire to fuse the two peoples, and make no distinction between them. He speaks of his realm as "the Kingdom of all Albion."

Charles the Simple is murdered; his widow Ældgifu, or Eadgifu (Athelstan's sister), and her young child Lewis (afterward King Louis D'Outremer, or "Over-the-sea") take refuge at the English court. William Longsword is left to contend alone against Rudolf of Burgundy, who now becomes the unquestioned master of France. Rudolf combines with the Bretons of Brittany in an attack on William.

931. Rodward, or Redewald, Archbishop of York, dies; Athelstan appoints an archbishop of his own, Wulfstan, and secures the loyalty of the northern clergy by grants to Beverly and Ripon. Danes, Welsh, and English sit together in a Witenagemot at Lewton; and English and Danes and the

Archbishop of York sit together (Mar.) in a great Witenagemot at Colchester, in Essex. At Lewton there were 95 attendants, namely, 2 archbishops, 2 Welsh under-kings, 17 bishops, 15 dukes, and 59 "ministers."

Alan, a ward of Edward the Elder, goes over to Brittany to assist the Bretons against the Normans. William Longsword defeats the Bretons and conquers Brittany; Alan flees back to the English court.

932. Danes and English sit together (Aug.) in a Witenagemot at Middleton (now Milton, in Dorset).

Rolf, ex-Duke of Normandy, dies probably about this date.

933. Athelstan styles himself "King of the English-folk and of all nations dwelling with them on every side," a title which continues to be used by the English Chancery during several reigns.

Athelstan's continental alliances having surrounded William Longsword with a ring of enemies, William seeks safety by doing homage to Rudolf, now King of France, who formally cedes to him his new conquest in Brittany as well as his old territory.

Ostmen (Danes) from Ireland, under Olaf or Anlaf,* King of Dublin, make a descent on the west shores of Northumbria; this awakes symptoms of revolt against Athelstan, and encourages Constantin, King of Alban, to renew the confederacy of Picts, Danes, and Britons against Athelstan.

934. Athelstan marches with an army to the north to prevent the threatened revolt in Northumbria, and he sends a fleet to harry the west coast of Constantin's territory (Scotland).

Danes, Welsh, and English sit together in a Witenagemot at Winchester; and again in one at Frome.

Athelstan styles himself "King of the Angul-Saxons and of all Britain;" also, "Angul-Saxon King and Brytenwealda of all these islands;" also "Basileus of the English and at the same time Emperor of the kings and nations dwelling within the bounds of Britain." While his claims are thus at their highest, his realm begins to disintegrate.

935-6. The influence of Olaf and Constantin, and of the new league against Athelstan, induces the Danish jarls to withdraw from the English court.

936. Rudolf, King of the Franks, dies; Duke Hugh, of Paris, refuses the crown, and the West Franks choose Lewis

* This seems to have been a different person from Sihtric's son, Anlaf, who had married the Alban King Constantin's daughter.

("Over-Sea") as king, and send an embassy to England with an offer of the crown; they find Athelstan at York, holding down disaffection in the Danelaw. He goes south, and sends an embassy to France to prepare the way for the return of Lewis, his nephew. The embassy visits the court of William Longsword (the first direct communication between England and Normandy), who consents to Lewis's accession. Longsword, in return, stipulates that Alan, the Breton refugee in England, shall return to Brittany, and pledge himself to peace, which he does.

Harold Harfager, King of Norway, dies. After a contest among his sons for the kingdom, Eric Bloody-axe gets the mastery over most of it. His younger brother Hakon promises the Norwegians to restore their old udal rights, and they rise in his favor, and Eric abandons his country and takes to piracy.

937. Olaf, King of Dublin, with a fleet of Danes from Ireland, appears off the Northumbrian coast, and the whole league, including the Picts or Scots under Constantin, the English of Bernicia, the Danes of Deira, and the Britons (or Welsh) of Cumbria and Strathclyde, under Owen, rises against Athelstan.

Athelstan meets the army of confederates at Brunanburh, and after a battle which lasts the whole day, inflicts on them a crushing defeat. Five kings, seven jarls, and Constantin's son, are among the slain; and Olaf only saves his life by hastily putting his boat to sea and steering for Dublin. The site of this battle is still undetermined; it has been variously located in the Lothians, in Northumberland, at Aldborough in Yorkshire, and at Brunby in Lincolnshire. The victory was celebrated in a noble war-song—"Song of the Fight at Brunanburh," which is still extant as embodied in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle.*

938. Eric Bloody-axe makes a raid on Northumbria. Athelstan makes a bargain with him in accordance with which he is baptized and receives the kingdom of Northumbria, in pledge to guard it against the Danes and other Northmen. Eric's conversion does not change his habits, and every summer he goes on plundering cruises to the Shetlands, the Hebrides, Iceland, and Bretland.

Athelstan ravages Cornwall and conquers the Scilly Isles.

Athelstan, in order to weaken the Danelaw still further,

*A spirited modernized version of it is given in Freeman's "Old English History," p. 155.

creates the Ealdormanry of East Anglia ; it includes, besides East Anglia proper, southern Lincolnshire, and probably Northamptonshire. Æthelstan, a noble of royal kin, is made its ealdorman.

About the same time he creates the Ealdormanry of Essex; it includes Essex, Herts, Oxford, Buckingham, and possibly Middlesex, with London. Ælfgar (the father of Æthelflæd, wife of Edmund, afterward king) is made ealdorman.

940. Athelstan dies (27 Oct.) at Gloucester ; his half-brother Edmund, a youth of 18, succeeds him. Edmund adopts the title “ King of All Britain,” but usually signs “ King of the English.”

Edmund makes known his intention of setting up another chief in Northumbria, in place of the piratical Eric. Eric thereupon sets off on a new cruise of piracy, adding the English coasts to his other fields of prey. On his departure the whole Danelaw prepares to resist Edmund, and calls for aid from its brother-Danes in Ireland.

941. Olaf, King of Dublin, responds to the call and appears in the Humber, whereupon the Danes of Northumbria and the District of the Five Boroughs (Danish Mercia) throw off their allegiance to Edmund and make Olaf their king.

942. Edmund makes Odo (Bishop of Ramsbury) Archbishop of Canterbury, the first Dane who filled the office.

Olaf, from Dublin, the Danish King of Northumbria, dies ; Olaf, Sihtric’s son, from Alban, succeeds him.

Constantin, King of Alban, retires to a monastery ; Malcolm, son of Donald (Constantin’s predecessor), becomes king.

943. Wulfstan, Archbishop of York, falls from his allegiance to Edmund, adopts the cause of the Danes, and commands their forces side by side with Olaf. They invade Mid-Britain, and capture Tamworth and Leicester. Edmund recovers Leicester.

Peace is made between Edmund and Olaf, Sihtric’s son, who is baptized, and made under-King of Bernicia, while Ragnald, Guthferth’s son, is made under-King of Deira (Yorkshire).

William Longsword, Duke of Normandy, is murdered ; his son Richard, a boy of ten, succeeds him.

At or before this date Northmen from Ireland and the Isle of Man settle in part of Cumbria, their territory becoming known as Westmoringa-land (“the land of the men of the Western Moors,” now Westmoreland).

944. Edmund reconquers the Danelaw, and drives out its two under-kings, Olaf and Ragnald.

Louis IV. (D'Outre-mer) conquers Normandy.

945. Edmund harries all Cumberland, which had been conquered from Northumbria by the Britons of Strathclyde. He grants the greater part of it to Malcolm, King of Alban, on condition that he shall be "his fellow-worker by sea and land." In this way Edmund disunites the Scots and Britons, or Welsh, and sets up a barrier against the invasion of the Danes from Ireland.

Edmund has a law passed which fastens the responsibility for murder on the person who commits it, and relieves his family or kin from the obligation of bearing the penalty, and protects them from the vengeance of the slain man's kin.

A fleet under Harald Blaatand (*i.e.*, "Blue-tooth"), King of Denmark, moors off the Cotentin (the northern part of the present department of Manche), calls the Normans to arms, and with the assistance of Hugh, Duke of Paris, defeats the Franks under Louis IV., who is taken prisoner and given up to Hugh. Normandy recovers its independence. Edmund demands the release of his cousin Louis, but Hugh refuses it.

946. Edmund is murdered at Pucklechurch (in Gloucestershire, near Bristol), by Leofa, a robber (26 May); his sons Eadwig and Eadgar being too young to reign, his brother Eadred is elected king by a Witenagemot at which Britons, Danes, and English are present, his election being the first national one; and his coronation (16 Aug.), jointly by the Archbishops of Canterbury and York, the first national one. Dunstan, Abbot of Glastonbury, a close friend of Eadred's, becomes, with the support of Athelstan (Ealdorman of East Anglia), his chief adviser. Eadred styles himself "King of the English and of the surrounding peoples," and signs himself "King of the English." The northern Danelaw quietly submits to him, and the Scots renew the oath of "fellow-workmanship."

947. Northumbria becomes restless, and Eadred advances to Taddenesylf (Tanshelf, near Pontefract in Yorkshire), and receives the oath of personal allegiance from the Northumbrian Witan.

948. In spite of this oath, the Northumbrians revolt, and make Eric Hring (a son of Harald Blue-tooth) their king. Eadred marches north, burns the minster at Ripon, and ravages all Northumberland. On his retreat, the Danes attack his rear at Chesterford, whereupon he threatens to return "and wholly ruin the land;" the Danes then abandon Eric, make compensation to Eadred, and again submit to his rule.

949. Olaf, Sihtric's son, reappears in Northumbria, and rules there for three years as under-king to Eadred.

952. Olaf is driven out by the Northumbrians, and Eric Hiring is again made king. Wulfstan, Archbishop of York, is seized as a rebel, and brought before Eadred at Jedburgh.

Ælfgar, Ealdorman of Essex, dies about this date.

954. Northumbria submits to Eadred, and again expels Eric, who dies shortly afterward. Wulfstan is released. Eadred reduces Northumbria to an earldom, and makes Oswulf (an Englishman, high-reeve of Bernicia) ruler over both Bernicia and Deira, as Earl of the Northumbrians, thus finally incorporating Northumbria with the rest of his kingdom. He adopts an imperial title, styling himself "Cæsar of the whole of Britain."

955. In the nine years previous to this date, Dunstan, from Glastonbury as a centre, had been spreading education throughout the country. In this year, Æthelwold, Dunstan's chief scholar and assistant, is made Abbot of Abingdon. He establishes a school there which more than rivals that of Glastonbury. From these two centres the movement spreads through Wessex and Mercia, and gives rise to a second old English literature, which bears the stamp of Wessex as the first had borne that of Northumbria.

Eadred dies at Frome (Nov.), and is buried at Glastonbury; his nephew Eadwig or Edwy (Edmund's eldest son), a boy of 15, is chosen king.

956. Eadwig is crowned at Kingston (Jan.) by Archbishop Odo. He leaves the coronation feast and retires to his private apartments to the company of Æthelgifu, a woman of high lineage, and her daughter Ælfgifu (Latin, Elgiva). The nobles present resent the slight, and Dunstan drags the king back to the feast by force, and threatens Æthelgifu with death. She has great influence over the king, and later in the year, in revenge, has Dunstan driven from the realm as an outlaw; he takes refuge in Flanders, where its count, Arnulf I., shelters him at the abbey of Ghent.

Æthelstan, Ealdorman of East Anglia, retires to a monastery, and his earldom is divided between his two sons.

Ælfhere, the leader of the king's kin, is made Ealdorman of the Mercians, thus dividing the purely English portion of Britain into two nearly equal parts, and tending to its disintegration.

957. Eadwig marries Ælfgifu (Æthelgifu's daughter), whereupon his kin leave his court and persuade his younger brother Eadgar to join them. Eadwig and Ælfgifu being kin, the marriage is against Church law, and Odo, Archbishop of Canterbury, finding his remonstrances against it

disregarded, also retires from court, declaring the marriage void.

Odo's sentence leads to a general revolt against Eadwig ; the Mercians, under Ealdorman Ælfhere, rise and choose Eadgar for their king. The whole Danelaw joins Mercia in revolt and acknowledge Eadgar as king ; only Wessex remains to Eadwig.

958. A joint meeting of the Mercian and West Saxon Witenagemots agrees upon the Thames as the boundary between the dominions of the two brothers. Eadwig becomes merely "King of the West Saxons." Eadgar styles himself "King of the Engle or English" or "King of the Mercians." He recalls Dunstan from exile (before June), and Odo consecrates him Bishop of Worcester. Odo, with an armed band, seizes Eadwig's queen, and carries her out of the realm, thus enforcing his own sentence of divorce ; he then threatens to depose Eadwig, who thereupon submits to the annulment of his marriage. Odo dies (2 June).

959. Eadwig dies (1 Oct.) ; Eadgar, a youth of 16, being accepted by Wessex as king, becomes sole monarch. Wessex is divided, and Ælfheah (a brother of Ælfhere, Ealdorman of Mercia) is made Ealdorman of central Wessex, or Southampton as it was sometimes called. In Eadgar's reign the words "England" and "hundred" first come to be used. Dunstan is made Archbishop of Canterbury ; he goes to Rome and receives the pallium from Pope John XII.

960. Dunstan returns from Rome, and takes the main direction of affairs, becoming virtually co-ruler with Eadgar.

962. St. Paul's Minster, in London, is burnt.

963. Æthelwold, Abbot of Abingdon, is made Bishop of Winchester.

964. Æthelwold instals Benedictine monks in place of "clerks" (clergy) throughout his diocese ; the beginning of the revival of monasticism in England.

965. Eadgar's wife, Æthelflæd the Fair, dies, leaving a son, Edward (afterwards king). Eadgar marries Ælfthryth (or Elfrida), daughter of Ordgar, one of his nobles. He makes a friendly alliance with Olaf, or Anlaf, King of the Ostmen (Danes) in Dublin. He also grants Bernicia north of the Tyne, including Edinburgh, to the Scottish king, Kenneth, to hold as his "man."

966. Eadgar divides Northumbria ; Oswulf is retained as Earl of Bernicia, south of the Tweed (now Northumberland) ; while Oslac is made Earl of Deira. The two earldoms become almost independent of Eadgar. In Northumbria the fusion of Danes and English goes on steadily ; the Danes, being compara-

tively few, are absorbed by the more numerous English. Eadgar promotes the fusion by employing Danes in his service, and giving them high posts in Church and State.

Thored (Gunner's son), a Northman, harries Westmoringaland (Westmoreland).

About this date, Ordgar, Eadgar's father-in-law, is made Ealdorman of Wealhcyne (*i.e.*, all Wessex west of Wilts).

968. War breaks out between Eadgar and Wales.

The Isle of Thanet is ravaged by Eadgar's orders, as a punishment for the practice of wreckage by its inhabitants.

About this date Eadgar's fleet begins to make annual voyages round Britain, to sweep the sea of pirates.

969. Oswald, Bishop of Worcester, introduces monks into Worcester and the neighborhood, the first reintroduction of monasticism into Mercia.

At a Council held by Dunstan the marriage of the clergy is forbidden under pain of deprivation.

973. Eadgar is crowned at Bath (11 May) by the two archbishops as "King of England." He was the first king who assumed that title.

975. Eadgar dies (8 July), aged 32. He leaves two sons, half-brothers, Edward (aged 13) by his first wife, and Æthelred (aged 7) by his second wife, Ælfthryth or Elfrida. Edward "the Martyr" is chosen king, and is crowned by the two archbishops, Dunstan and Oswald. Strife breaks out among the great earls, which leads to the disintegration of England. Æthelwine, Ealdorman of East Anglia, aided by the monastic party and by Ælfthryth (Eadgar's widow), attempts to set up Æthelred as king in opposition to Edward. Dunstan, Ælfhere (Ealdorman of Mercia), and the anti-monastic party, support Edward.

Oslac, Earl of Deira, is driven into banishment; and Bernicia and Deira are reunited under Waltheof, as Ealdorman of Northumbria.

By this date feudalism has become established throughout England, the free ceorls having been completely reduced to villenage.

During Eadgar's reign a witch was drowned at London Bridge, the first death for heresy recorded in England. This is also the first historical proof since the English conquest of the existence of a bridge at London.

977. A stormy Witenagemot is held at Kirtlington.

978. Another stormy Witenagemot is held at Calne. Dunstan takes the part of the king against the domination of the great earls.

979. Edward is murdered (18 Mar.) at Corfes Gate (now Corfe Castle in Dorset) at the instigation of his stepmother Ælfthryth, Æthelred's mother. Æthelred ("the Unrædig," that is, not "the Unready," but "the Uncounselled" or "Unwise"), a boy of 10, becomes king, and is crowned at Kingston (4 May), by Archbishop Dunstan, who exacts from him a stringent coronation oath. Dunstan withdraws to Canterbury, leaving the government to be assumed by the king's mother, Ælfthryth, and her kinsmen, Æthelwine and Byrhtnoth, Earls of East Anglia and Essex.

980. Ælfhere, Ealdorman of Mercia, removes the remains of Edward the Martyr from Wareham, and buries them with much worship at Shaftesbury.

980-982. Danish pirates raid the coasts of Wessex, Kent, Wales, and Cheshire.

983. Ælfhere, Ealdorman of Mercia, dies; his son Ælfric is appointed to succeed him.

984. Æthelwold, Bishop of Winchester, "father of monks," dies (1 Aug.).

985: The king's counsellors drive Ælfric, Ealdorman of Mercia, into exile, and put an end to his ealdordom.

986. The king's counsellors quarrel with the Bishop of Rochester, and by the young king's orders the lands of the see are ravaged; Dunstan stays the outrage by a threat of excommunication.

Harald Blaataud, King of Denmark, who has become a Christian, is mortally wounded in a battle with his rebel son, Swein (or Swegen), who has remained a heathen; Swein becomes King of Denmark. At his succession-feast, before ascending the throne, he makes a solemn vow that before three winters are over he will invade England and either kill Æthelred or drive him out of the country.

A "great murrain" among cattle visits England; the first on record.

988. St. Dunstan, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (19 May).

Danish pirates renew their raids on the coast of England; and Danes from Ireland levy a tribute on Wales. Since the beginning of Æthelred's reign (980) they had made raids at various points—Southampton, Thanet, Cheshire, Portland, Somerset, and Wales.

991. A body of Norwegian Wikings land on the east coast, plunder Ipswich, and march south against Essex; the men of Essex, under their ealdorman, Byrhtnoth, or Brihtnoth, meet them at Maldon, but are defeated, and Byrhtnoth is slain. By the advice of Sigeric, Archbishop of Canterbury, Æthelred

buys for £10,000 * a treaty of alliance with the victors, who bind themselves to help him against any foes who may attack England, and not to harbor any enemies of England. Æthelred also concludes an alliance with Richard the Fearless, Duke of Normandy.

About this time Meredydd † makes himself master of nearly all Wales, and in this year forms an alliance with the Northmen, and makes war against the English.

992. Æthelwine, Ealdorman of East Anglia, dies. Æthelred, now 23, determines to curb the power of the great earls and to become king in reality. Hence his title "Unrædig" or "Uncounselled," implying his rejection of the counsel of these nobles.

The Norwegian pirate force still remains on the English coast, and Æthelred prepares a fleet and a land force to attack it, the latter being commanded by Ælfric, Ealdorman of Central Wessex, and by Earl Thored. On the night before the projected attack, Ælfric, perhaps considering it a breach of the treaty of 991, goes to the pirates' camp and warns them, and they escape after a skirmish with the English fleet.

993. The Norwegian pirates sail along the east coast, ravage at the mouth of the Humber, and sack Bamborough. Æthelred orders Ælfric's son Ælfgar to be blinded.

994. A fleet of Northmen pirates, under Olaf (Anlaf) Tryggvason (a Christian), a claimant to the throne of Norway, and a fleet of Danish pirates, under Swein (a heathen), a son of Harald Blaataud, unite, and the joint forces of nearly 100 ships sail into the Thames (Sep.) and attack London, but are beaten back by the burghers (8 Sep.). They then sail along and harry the southern coast, land at Southampton, take horse, and march inland to Andover (in Hampshire), where they are met by an army under Æthelred. He and his advisers again (for £16,000 and a promise of winter supplies) buy a treaty of peace, and the invaders take up winter-quarters at Southampton. Ælfric returns to England and is restored to office as Ealdorman of Central Wessex.

Æthelred divides Northumbria, leaving Waltheof as Earl of Bernicia, and making Ælfhelm Earl of Deira. He divides Mercia, and makes Leofwine Ealdorman of the Hwiccas. Ulfcytel remains thane in East Anglia. Leofsige, a noble newly created by Æthelred, is made Ealdorman of Essex; Æthelweard and Ælfric remain Ealdormen of West Wessex and Central Wessex. The last three become Æthelred's principal advisers.

* Equal to one-fourth of the annual revenues of the Crown.

† Pronounced Meredith.

Sigeric, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies.

995. News comes that Jarl Hakon, King of Norway, has become unpopular, and Olaf Tryggvason is anxious to return thither and assert his claims to the throne. At the instance of Bishop Ælfheah and Æthelweard, Ealdorman of West Wessex, he meets Æthelred at Andover, and, in return for gifts, pledges himself to leave England and never return. His desertion forces Swein to withdraw also. Two years of peace follow, but Æthelred makes no attempt to organize a national defence against future invasions.

Ælfric, Bishop of Winchester, is made Archbishop of Canterbury (21 Ap.).

The city of Durham is founded.

996. Richard the Fearless, Duke of Normandy, dies, after a reign of 53 years; his son Richard the Good succeeds him.

997. A band of Danish pirates from Norman harbors enter the Severn and Tamar, harry Cornwall and Devon, and burn the monastery at Tavistock.

998. They harry Dorset, take up winter-quarters in the Isle of Wight, and levy supplies from the coasts of Hants and Sussex.

999. They enter the Medway, attack Rochester, and harry West Kent. Æthelred at last gathers a force to attack them, but his delay allows them to withdraw (in 1000) unharmed to Norman harbors.

1000. Æthelred, having no fleet fit to oppose that of the pirates, takes into his service a force of Danes, including Pallig, a brother-in-law of Swein. This fleet makes descents on the Norwegian settlements in Cumberland and the Isle of Man, probably by way of punishment for having given support to the pirate fleets; it then attacks the Normans in the Cotentin (part of Normandy), but is repulsed.

About this date, Eric, the Swedish king, dies; Denmark throws off the Swedish yoke, and recalls Swein to be king. Swein leagues with the Swedes and Jarl Hakon's son, Eric, and attacks Olaf Tryggvason, now King of Norway. Olaf is defeated and slain, and Swein becomes master of Norway as well as Denmark. In pursuance of his coronation-oath (in 986), he begins to prepare for a formidable attack on England.

1001. The Danes ravage the western counties, winning victories at Ethelingdene (probably Alton), and at Penhoe in Devon. They also ravage the Isle of Wight. There being neither fleet nor land forces to oppose them they plunder and destroy at will. "Then was it," says the Chronicle, "in every wise a heavy time, because they never ceased from their evil doings."

Æthelred, finding that his treaty of 991 with the Normans has not secured their neutrality in his contest with the Danes, resolves to attempt to secure it by a personal tie, and he negotiates with the Norman Duke, Richard the Good, a treaty, by which Richard agrees to give him his daughter Emma in marriage.

While these negotiations are proceeding, Æthelred sends Leofsige, Ealdorman of Essex, to the pirate fleet to buy a truce for £24,000.

1002. Æthelred (in Lent) marries Emma* of Normandy, and thereby apparently guards against Norman help to the expected attack of Swein. Emma brings a Norman train with her, and for the next 50 years, as either queen or queen-mother, exercises much influence in Anglo-Norman politics. Exeter is given to her as her "dowry town;" the command of it is given to Hugh, one of her Norman followers, as reeve.

Leofsige, by his "pride and daring," makes himself obnoxious to Æthelred, who, to curb his pretensions, makes a new favorite, Ælfic, high-reeve of England, an office somewhat analogous to that of prime minister. Leofsige at once breaks into Ælfic's house and murders him; and the Witan degrades and banishes Leofsige. Wulfgeat is made high-reeve in place of Ælfic. The dread of Swein's expected attack leads to a general panic throughout England and in the mind of Æthelred, and brings about a general massacre of Danes throughout England (St. Brice's Day, 13 Nov.), thousands of whom are either slain by the sword or burnt in their houses. Swein's sister Gunhilda is one of the victims. The reason for the massacre given in the Chronicle is that "it was made known to the king" that the Danes intended to treacherously murder him and his Witan.

1003. Swein, apparently with Norman connivance, with a fleet of Danes, lays siege to Exeter. Its Norman reeve, Hugh, surrenders it without a blow, and it is sacked and "wholly ruined." Swein marches through Devon and Dorset into Wiltshire; sacks Salisbury; is met by an English army, which, however, owing to quarrels among its leaders, breaks up without fighting; and Swein sacks Wilton, and marches unopposed by Old Sarum to the sea.

1004. Swein invades East Anglia and sacks and burns Norwich. Ulfcytel, Thane of East Anglia, buys a truce, during which the Danes march inland and plunder and burn Thetford. Ulfcytel then gathers an army, but is defeated. Swein's loss

* The English objected to her Norman-French name Emma, and christened her Ælfgifu, *i.e.*, "Elves' Gift" or "Fairies' Gift."

is great, however, and he does not pursue his victory, but returns (1005) with his fleet to Denmark.

1005. A great famine desolates England, "such as no man ever before recollected one so grim."

1006. A revolution breaks out in Æthelred's court; his high-reeve Wulfgeat is displaced and deprived of all his goods, and Eadric or Edric (afterwards nicknamed "Streona," *i.e.*, "the Acquisitor" or "the Rapacious") is made high-reeve. Eadric brings a firmer hand to the administration of affairs.

Ælfhelm, Ealdorman of Deira, is slain; Uhtred, a son of Waltheof, Earl of Bernicia, is made Earl of Deira.

Malcolm II., King of Scotia, invades Northumbria. Waltheof shuts himself up in Bamborough, and Malcolm advances to Durham, but is defeated by Uhtred. Æthelred gives to Uhtred his daughter Ælfgifu (Elgiva) in marriage, and makes him Earl of Northumbria (both Bernicia and Deira).

The Danes land at Sandwich and harry Kent; they "ravaged, and burned, and destroyed wherever they went." They then reappear on the southern coasts, but are held in check by Æthelred through the autumn, and they go into winter-quarters in the Isle of Wight. Æthelred marches to Shrewsbury to check the turbulence of the Welsh, and during his absence the Danes in the Isle of Wight march inland as far as Berkshire and Oxfordshire, and carry a large booty back to the Isle of Wight.

Ælpheah (St. Alphege) becomes Archbishop of Canterbury.

1007. The Danes being masters at sea, Æthelred finds it impossible to drive them from the Isle of Wight, and he and his Witan buy a truce with them for £30,000, which secures two years of peace, during which Æthelred at last takes measures for defence. He makes Eadric "Streona" Ealdorman of all Mercia except the Hwiccas (of which Leofwine remains ealdorman), and binds Eadric to him by giving him one of his daughters (Edith) in marriage. Æthelred exacts a general oath of allegiance from all his subjects, and promises them just laws and mild government.

1008. Æthelred and his high-reeve Eadric reorganize the military system by dividing the country into military groups, every 8 hides of land* to furnish one warrior with helmet and coat-of-mail; and by providing for local contributions (called

* A hide of land was originally the amount allotted for the support of a single family. In early times the hide seems to have been about 33 acres; in later it was 120 acres. Æthelred's system would seemingly compel every eight families to furnish one warrior; and every 310 families to furnish one war-ship and its crew.

the Danegeld) for the expenses of defence, for the payment of Danish tributes, and for building and repairing forts and bridges. They also create a new fleet of large war-vessels fitted to cope with those of the Danes, by providing that the owner or owners of every 310 hides of land shall build and equip a war-ship, and that the fleet shall assemble once a year.

This Danegeld and ship-levy were levied by the Witan of all England for the king's use, and constituted the beginnings of a national taxation. They were the first forms of that land tax which constituted the most important element in the national revenue from this time to the days of the Georges.

These measures of defence came too late, for by this time the people had become thoroughly cowed by 20 years of piratical ravages and harryings.

1009. Æthelred's new fleet, the largest ever brought together in England, assembles at Sandwich in Kent. A detachment of 80 ships, sent to clear the coast of Sussex of a pirate fleet of 20 ships under Wulfnoth of Sussex,* is partially wrecked in a storm, and Wulfnoth burns the vessels which survive the storm. The main fleet, when the news reaches it, is so discouraged that it goes to London and breaks up. Thereupon a Danish fleet of 40 ships and 3000 men, under Thurkill, sent by Swein, comes to Sandwich (Aug.), lays Kent under tribute, and ravages Sussex, Hampshire, and Berks. A force under Eadric is sent by Æthelred to cut off the retreat of the Danes, but it does not give battle, owing apparently to Eadric's treachery. The Danes winter on the Thames, make several unsuccessful attacks on London, and burn Oxford.

1010. Thurkill's forces land in East Anglia; defeat its thane, Ulfcytel, at Ringmere (18 May); harry East Anglia for three months; return to the Thames and raid into Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire and thence to Bedford; burn Northampton (Nov.) and harry the surrounding country; and then cross the Thames and plunder Wessex, returning to their ships at midwinter. The rapidity of their movements baffles resistance, and the people become so disorganized that one shire will not help its neighbor. The Danes withdraw on Æthelred promising to pay tribute.

1011. The high-reeve, Eadric Streona of Mercia, repels an attack of the Welsh, and ravages the Welsh coast as far as St. David's.

Æthelred fails to pay the Danes the promised tribute, and Thurkill sacks Canterbury and seizes Archbishop Ælfheah as

* Father of Earl Godwine. He had been charged with treason, and had turned pirate in consequence.

hostage for the payment. Æthelred makes a fresh promise of tribute.

1012. The Witan provides the tribute. Thurkill's Danes, on the refusal of Archbishop Ælfheah to redeem himself, murder him with circumstances of great brutality (19 Ap.). His body is carried to London and buried in St. Paul's Minster. St. Ælfeah or Alphege's day is 19 Ap.

The tribute of £48,000 is paid, and the Danish fleet sails from England, except 45 ships under Thurkill, who remains with them as a mercenary in English pay. In Denmark Swein is preparing a more formidable attack than any previous one.

1013. Swein, with an immense fleet intended not for merely ravaging, but for conquest, after landing at Sandwich (in Kent), suddenly enters the Humber and lands his forces. Uhtred, Earl of Northumbria, at once submits, and joins him with his forces; and the District of the Five Boroughs and East Anglia next submit at Gainsborough. Swein then invades and ravages English Mercia; captures Oxford; crosses the Thames there and captures Winchester, when central Wessex submits; attacks London, where Æthelred and Thurkill have taken refuge, but is repulsed; retreats westerly, crosses the Thames at Wallingford, and captures Bath, where Æthelmær, Ealdorman of West Wessex, and his thanes meet him and submit. London thereupon sends hostages, and Æthelred sends (Aug.) his wife Emma and her two sons, Alfred and Edward (afterwards "the Confessor," now about 9 years old), to her father, Duke Richard of Normandy. Æthelred himself takes refuge in Thurkill's fleet, and after hovering off the coast for some time, sails to Normandy at Christmas. From this time his two children are brought up in Normandy, and become thoroughly Normanized.

1014. Swein dies suddenly near Gainsborough in Lincolnshire (3 Feb.); the Danish army chooses his son Cnut, a youth of 19, as king. At the invitation of the Witan, Æthelred, leaving his wife and sons in Normandy, returns to England (at Lent) as king, puts himself at the head of his forces, and marches to attack Cnut at Gainsborough (Ap.). Cnut, hearing that his elder brother Harald, another son of Swein, has mounted the throne of Denmark, sails thither. Thurkill deserts Æthelred and also goes to Denmark. By his advice the two brothers agree that Harald shall be King of Denmark, while Cnut shall conquer England.

The Irish, under Brian Boru, defeat the Danes at Clontarf, near Dublin (Good Friday, 23 Ap.); but Brian is slain.

1015. Cnut, with a fleet even larger than Swein's in 1013, sails for England, lands in Poole Bay, Dorset, and harries Dorset, Wilts, and Somerset. Æthelred is sick at Corsham, and a quarrel breaks out between Edmund "Ironside" (now 26, the eldest son of Æthelred, by his first wife Ælflæd) and Eadric Streona, Ealdorman of Mercia. Eadric murders Sigeferth and Morkere, and attempts the life of Edmund; the English army breaks up without fighting; Eadric goes over to Cnut with 40 ships; and Wessex submits to Cnut. Edmund marries Sigeferth's widow, Aldgyth, and takes possession of the District of the Five Boroughs.

1016. Cnut and Eadric cross the Thames at Cricklade and ravage Mercia. Æthelred takes refuge in London, and Edmund goes to Northumbria, where his forces are joined by those of his brother-in-law, Earl Uhtred. Cnut advances to York; their joint forces break up; Uhtred submits to Cnut, but he and 40 of his followers are, with Cnut's sanction, soon afterwards murdered at the instigation of his old enemy Thurbrand. Eric the Norwegian, husband of Cnut's sister Estrith, is made Earl of Northumbria, with Eadwulf Cudel (a brother of the murdered Uhtred) as under-Earl of Bernicia.

Edmund takes refuge in London with his father. Cnut and Eadric march south to attack London; before they reach it Æthelred dies (23 Ap.), and the people of London and part of the Witan there elect and crown Edmund king. The rest of the Witan meet at Southampton and elect Cnut king.

It is now that London takes that leading part in English history which it has held ever since. Edmund hurries to Somerset and Devon, collects a small force, and returns to relieve London, which had been invested (7 May) by Cnut. Cnut marches to meet him and fights two indecisive battles on the borders of Wilts; Edmund rapidly makes fresh levies, crosses to the north of the Thames, relieves London, drives the Danes to their ships, and repels a sally at Brentford. He then retreats west to gather more troops; Cnut again besieges London, which holds out successfully, and the Danes are forced for want of supplies to raise the siege. They then ravage Mercia, and sail back to the Medway. Edmund again advances from the west, defeats the Danes at Otford in Kent, and drives them to the Isle of Sheppey. Eadric deserts Cnut and with the Mercian forces joins Edmund at Aylesford, and Ulfcytel joins him with the East Anglian forces. Cnut crosses the Thames into Essex, and Edmund marches to meet him; a terrible battle ensues at Assandun (now Ashington or Ashdon, on the river Crouch, in Essex), Eadric, with his forces, deserts to Cnut,

and in consequence Edmund is totally defeated, Ulfcytel and many other English nobles being among the slain. Edmund retreats to the Severn, pursued by Cnut ; Eadric acts as peace-maker, and the two rivals meet on the Isle of Olney, near Deerhurst, in the Severn (Oct.), and agree to divide England between them, Edmund being overlord and taking Wessex, East Anglia, and Essex, with London, and Cnut the rest.

After a reign of only seven months Edmund Ironside dies at London (30 Nov.), either worn out by his exertions, or possibly murdered by Eadric ; he is buried at Glastonbury beside his grandfather Eadgar.

1017. Cnut (now 22) is chosen King of all England and crowned at London, and the Danish conquest, begun in 866, is complete.

He divides England into four parts : makes Eadric Ealdorman of Mercia ; Eric, of Northumbria (with Eadwulf Cudel, a brother of the murdered Uhtred, as under-earl in Bernicia) ; Thurkill, of East Anglia ; and holds Wessex himself. He sets aside his Danish wife, by whom he has had one child (Swein), and as an act of policy marries (July) Æthelred's widow, Emma of Normandy, a woman ten years older than himself.

Before the end of the year he summons Eadric Streona to his court and has him murdered ; and three other nobles of high rank are condemned and killed. He makes Leofwine Ealdorman of Mercia in place of Eadric. He also procures the murder of Edmund Ironside's brother Eadwig or Edwy, and sends Edmund's children (Edward and Edmund) to Olaf, King of the Swedes, to be murdered, but Olaf sends them to Hungary, where they are well taken care of by the king, Stephen I. Having thus removed all his rivals, he reigns as a wise and temperate king.

Norway rises in revolt against its Danish king, Jarl Hakon (Cnut's nephew), and drives him from the kingdom ; St. Olaf, a Norwegian, is made king.

1018. Cnut calls a Witenagemot at Oxford, both English and Danish, and renews " Eadgar's Law."

Cnut's brother, Harald, King of Denmark, dies, and Cnut succeeds him.

Malcolm II., the Scot king, and Eugenius the Bald, King of the Strathclyde Britons, invade Northumbria, and Eadwulf Cudel, under-earl of Bernicia, is defeated at Carham on the Tweed. Lothian (the country between the Forth and the Tweed) is annexed to Scotia.

1019. Cnut goes to Denmark with his brother-in-law

Jarl Ulf, and makes him governor, thus reducing Denmark practically to a sub-kingdom, ruled from Winchester.

1020. Cnut returns to England; he makes Godwine, an Englishman, Earl of Wessex; and Godwine is thenceforth his chief adviser. Godwine marries Gytha, a sister of Jarl Ulf. Cnut commences to build a church at Assandun, on the site of his victory; it is finished in 1032.

1021. Cnut banishes Thurkill, Earl of East Anglia.

1023. He banishes Eric, Earl of Northumbria; Eadwulf Cudel (under-Earl of Bernicia), a brother of the murdered Uhtred, is made earl in his place.

He has the body of Archbishop Ælfheah (St. Alphege), murdered in 1012 by Thurkill's followers, carried to Canterbury, following the remains himself.

1025. He demands the submission of Norway to his rule; its king, St. Olaf, returns a mocking answer; Cnut negotiates for the purpose of gaining time for his intended attack.

He sends Harthacnut, his son by Emma of Normandy (a boy of 7), to Denmark as its ruler, in charge of his brother-in-law, Jarl Ulf, the governor there.

1026. Richard the Good, Duke of Normandy, dies; his son Richard III. succeeds him.

Cnut sets out on a pilgrimage to Rome.

1027. He obtains from the Emperor Conrad the restoration of the land beyond the Eider seized by Otto II. in 980, and makes a treaty for the future marriage of Gunhild (a child of 8), his daughter by Emma of Normandy, to the son of Conrad, afterwards Emperor Henry III.

Denmark revolts in favor of Harthacnut and the regent Ulf, and is threatened with attack by Sweden and Norway.

William the Conqueror, an illegitimate son of Robert the Devil (afterwards Duke of Normandy), is born at Falaise (Dec.).

1028. Cnut promulgates a code of laws. He sails to Denmark with 50 ships, suppresses the revolt there, and puts Jarl Ulf to death. He then sails to Norway, drives out King Olaf, conquers it, and reinstates his nephew Hakon as ruler or jarl.

Richard III., Duke of Normandy, dies; his brother Robert the Devil succeeds him.

1029. Cnut speedily puts down a revolt of the Norwegians, and they acknowledge his rule till his death. He returns to England.

1031. The Scots under Malcolm make another raid into Northumbria; Cnut marches against them, and Malcolm at once submits and does homage to Cnut as his overlord; Cnut, in return, adds northern Bernicia (*i.e.* Bernicia north of the

Tweed) to Malcolm's sub-kingdom, and this English district thenceforth remains part of Scotland. It becomes the most important part of that kingdom, and the centre of power shifts to it, Edinburgh becoming the capital. The Scotch kings gradually cease to be Gaelic chieftains of a Gaelic people, and become Anglicized in language* and to a certain extent in feeling, thus paving the way to the ultimate union of England and Scotland.

1034. About this date Robert the Devil, Duke of Normandy, lays claim to the English crown on behalf of his nephew Alfred, the eldest son of Æthelred, and fits out a fleet to invade England, but it is wrecked on the coast of Jersey.

Malcolm II., King of Scotia,† dies (25 Nov.); Duncan I. succeeds him.

1035. Robert of Normandy goes on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land. Before setting out he compels his nobles to choose his illegitimate son William, a boy of 7, as their future ruler. On returning from Palestine he is poisoned (2 July) at Nicæa, in Asia Minor, and William becomes Duke of Normandy. The nobles rise against him, he is compelled to flee from one refuge to another to save his life, and the dukedom becomes a scene of anarchy.

Cnut dies at Shaftesbury (12 Nov.), aged about 40 ; his empire at once falls to pieces.

During Cnut's peaceful reign of 18 years, England made considerable advance in commerce, wealth, and civilization. The villages and towns increased in population. The three principal were : London, the largest and wealthiest; York, the second, with a population of 10,000 and 2000 houses; Norwich, the principal seaport (pop. 6000 or 7000). Oxford divides with London the traffic along the Thames, levying tolls on herrings in barges, among other things. Nottingham, with two churches, becomes a centre of internal navigation, and has a merchant-guild. The Severn has at least 65 fisheries along its course, the principal being at Worcester and Gloucester, where Cnut establishes a Benedictine abbey. Chester does a large trade with the Northmen in Ireland, in cheese, bannock and barley-bread, fish, and slaves. Bristol also rises into prominence, becomes the seat of a mint, and does a large trade with Ireland,

* The Scottish dialect of the Lowlands, as seen in Scott's novels and Burns's poems as well as in the speech of the people, remains to this day nearer to the Old-English of Cnut's day than modern classical English does.

† This is the first occasion that the word "Scotia" was applied to the Alban kingdom ; the name being thus finally transferred from Ireland to Scotland.



DEATH OF NELSON.—P. 310.





RICHARD I. BIDDING FAREWELL TO PALESTINE.—P. 145.



QUEEN PHILIPPA AT THE FEET OF THE KING.—P. 176.

especially in slaves, the Danes at this time acting as the slave-dealers for half Europe. Girls were hired out for prostitution and often sold in a state of pregnancy. Exeter does a little trade with the Franks; and Wareham (the shire-town or capital of Dorset) is the principal town on the southern coast. Portsmouth and Southampton had hardly come into existence. In Kent, Dover and Sandwich (which had risen beside the ruins of Richborough) were the principal ports, the latter being, however, little more than a fishing village. The eastern ports did a large continental trade in iron and steel from Scandinavia, and in ropes, skins, ship-masts, silks, gems, gold, garments, pigments, wine, oil, ivory, brass, copper, tin, silver, and glass. Direct trade was carried on with Mediterranean ports as far as Constantinople. The fisheries of the North Sea, particularly the herring, were very lucrative. Among the principal eastern towns besides York and Norwich were Ipswich, with 500 houses and 2000 or 3000 people, Dunwich, Grimsby, Lincoln, and St. Botulf's-town (now shortened into Boston).

London, under Cnut, became the commercial and military centre of England, and soon afterwards the political centre also. It extended over a mile along the Thames east of the Fleet River and Ludgate, and was a little over half-a-mile wide between Moorfields and the Thames. Its principal port was at Billingsgate, and it did a large trade with Flanders, Ponthieu, Normandy, France, Liège, and Neville. The leading articles of merchandise were pepper and spices from the East, gloves and gray cloth (probably from Lombardy), wool, iron-work from Liège, French wine and vinegar, and the agricultural exports of England itself—cheese, butter, lard, eggs, and live swine and fowls. Its wealth is shown by the fact that when Cnut in 1018 called for a national tribute or Danegeld of £82,500 for the whole kingdom, no less than £10,500 of it was assessed against London.

Cnut, at his death, leaves four children, Swein by his first wife, Harald by Ælfgifu (or Elgiva) of Northampton, and Harthacnut (now a youth of 17) and Gunhild by Emma of Normandy. By his will he leaves England and Denmark to his third son, Harthacnut, who had been trained in Denmark from early childhood, and was still there. Swein was already King of Norway, but on Cnut's death Norway throws off the Danish yoke, expels Swein, and chooses Magnus (a child, a son of St. Olaf) as king. Swein then goes to Denmark to share the kingdom with his half-brother Harthacnut, but dies a few months later. Harthacnut makes a treaty with

Magnus that, if either should die childless, his dominions should go to the other.

Edward, Æthelred's younger son, comes from Normandy with 40 ships to assert claims to the throne of England, and attacks Southampton, but is repulsed.

Godwine, Earl of Wessex, who had been Cnut's chief adviser for 15 years, becomes the chief political power in England. He was to some extent Danish in his sympathies, having married a Danish wife, and christened his two sons with Danish names, Swein and Harold. Though Harthacnut is more Danish than English, Godwine favors his succession, but the English people, headed by Leofric, Earl of Mercia, prefer Cnut's second son Harald Harefoot (so-called from his swiftness of foot), who was the son of an Englishwoman (Ælfgifu or Elgiva of Northampton), and had been brought up in England. The Witan meets at Oxford and compromises the dispute by dividing England between the two half-brothers, giving Wessex to Harthacnut (who is still in Denmark) as under-king, and the rest of England to Harald with the title of overlord.

1036. Wessex is discontented at Harthacnut's continued absence, and Alfred (Æthelred's eldest son in Normandy), thinking the moment opportune to assert his claims, but ostensibly to visit his mother Emma (Cnut's widow), lands at Dover with a train of Normans, and proceeds through Surrey towards Winchester. He is seized at Guilford, taken over the Thames to Harald Harefoot, and, by his orders, is blinded and left to die at the Ely monastery, and his Norman followers are killed or sold as slaves. The seizure of Alfred is attributed to Godwine, and a desire to revenge the murder is awakened among the Normans, especially against Godwine and his house; and Emma herself is converted from a friend of his into an enemy.

1037. A Witan assembles which deposes Harthacnut as King of Wessex, proclaims Harald Harefoot King of all England, and banishes Emma. Godwine submits to Harald, and is continued as Earl of Wessex. Emma takes refuge with Baldwin V., Count of Flanders, and urges her son Harthacnut (who is still in Denmark) to strike a blow for the crown of England.

1038. Siward the Strong, a man of Danish blood, becomes Earl of Deira; Eadwulf (a brother of Ealdred) is Earl of Bernicia, which, since the cession of the northern portion to Malcolm, has consisted only of the district between the Tweed and the Tees (now Northumberland and Durham).

Eadwulf devastates Cumbria.

1039. Harthacnut sails to Flanders to devise with his mother Emma a plan for the conquest of England.

Lanfranc, a wandering scholar from Pavia in Lombardy, sets up a school at Avranches in Normandy, which soon becomes famous.

1040. Harthacnut returns to Denmark and prepares a fleet of 60 vessels for the invasion of England.

Harald Harefoot dies at Oxford (17 Mar.), and is buried at Westminster; the Witan chooses Harthacnut as king. He receives the news at Bruges, and sails with his fleet to Sandwich (Kent) and lands peacefully (17 June). One of his first acts is to order his half-brother Harald Harefoot's body to be dug up, beheaded, and thrown into a ditch.

Godwine purges himself on oath of the charge of betraying the murdered Alfred (Æthelred's son), and he is enabled, by making costly gifts to Harthacnut, to retain his earldom.

Duncan I., King of Scotia, makes a raid into Northumbria, as far as Durham, but is repulsed by the Durham burghers, under Eadwulf, Earl of Bernicia.

Macbeth, Mormaer or under-King of Moray, a general of Duncan I., King of Scotia, against the Norwegians under Thurkill, turns traitor, murders Duncan near Elgin (14 Aug.), and divides the kingdom with Thurkill, taking for himself all Scotland south-west of the Tay. Duncan's two sons, Malcolm and Donalbain, take refuge with their uncle Siward, Earl of Deira.

1041. Siward, Earl of Deira, with Harthacnut's connivance, murders Eadwulf, Earl of Bernicia, at Harthacnut's court, and becomes Earl of all Northumbria.

1042. Harthacnut, in expectation of death, sends to Normandy for his half-brother Edward ("the Confessor"), Æthelred's surviving son, and names him his successor; Edward returns to Normandy.

Lanfranc leaves his school at Avranches (Normandy) and becomes a monk of the Benedictine abbey of Bec, which, in a few years, becomes the most famous school in Christendom.

Harthacnut, after two years of misgovernment and heavy taxation, dies (8 June) while standing "at his drink" at the marriage-feast of his standard-bearer Tovi, in Lambeth; and with him Cnut's line and Danish rule in England come to an end.

Even before Harthacnut's burial the English choose Edward the Confessor as their king.

CHAPTER VI.

THE NORMAN CONQUEST.

1043. Edward the Confessor, now about 40 years old, comes from Normandy to England, and is crowned king at Winchester (Easter-day, 3 Ap.), by both archbishops. He had been in Normandy for 30 years, spoke Norman-French, and had become thoroughly Norman in feeling and sympathies ; and in accepting the crown he relies to a great extent on Norman support. He brings a large Norman train with him, and two Norman priests as chaplains ; also Robert, Abbot of Jumièges (in Normandy), who becomes his most trusted counsellor.

Northumbria is in a semi-anarchical and semi-barbarous condition, infested with robbers, torn with savage feuds, and the marriage-tie is of the loosest description. Siward, its earl, rules almost independently ; as also does Leofric, Earl of Mercia. Godwine, Earl of Wessex, however, becomes so powerful in the government that Edward becomes a puppet in his hands, a state of things which he bitterly resents. Macbeth is still king of southern Scotland.

1043-45. Godwine creates a new earldom out of the counties Hereford, Worcester, Warwick, Gloucester, Oxford, Berkshire, and Somerset, of which he makes his eldest son Swein earl. He makes his second son Harold Earl of East Anglia, and his nephew Beorn earl of a district comprising the shires of Leicester, Nottingham, and Lincoln. All south-eastern England, from the Humber and the Severn to the English Channel, thus passes into the hands of the house of Godwine.

1044. A great famine in England.

Edward makes Robert of Jumièges Bishop of London.

1044-9. Geoffrey Martel, Count of Anjou, conquers Poitou and Maine, thereby making his territory conterminous with Normandy.

1045. King Edward marries Godwine's daughter Eadgyth or Edith (23 Jan.).

Magnus I., King of Norway, lays claim to the throne of

England (as the nearest of kin surviving of Cnut), and prepares for an invasion ; an English fleet gathers at Sandwich to meet him. The expected attack is postponed on account of Swein Estrithson, King of Denmark, gaining successes over Magnus.

About this date Edward creates the office of Chancellor, who has the custody of the great seal, which he also first introduces in England.

1046. Godwine's son Swein, Earl of south-west Mercia, abducts the abbess of Leominster and sends her back great with child ; he is outlawed and driven from England, and takes refuge at Bruges, with Baldwin V., Count of Flanders.

A very severe winter in England ; "even birds and fishes perished through the great cold and famine."

Lanfranc becomes Prior of the Benedictine Abbey of Bec in Normandy.

1047. Godwine proposes to send 50 ships to help Swein Estrithson (his nephew) against Magnus, but the Witan rejects the proposal. Magnus defeats Swein Estrithson and conquers Denmark, but dies soon afterwards, which probably saves England from invasion. Harald Hardrada becomes King of Norway, and Swein Estrithson is welcomed back as King of Denmark.

Guy, a grandson of Richard the Good, lays claim to the dukedom of Normandy on the ground of William's illegitimacy, and stirs up a revolt against him. When the plot breaks out William is hunting in the Cotentin (now La Manche), and only saves himself from capture by a hasty flight from Valognes to Falaise. William (still a youth of 20) seeks and obtains aid from the French king, Henry I., and their united forces defeat the rebels at Val-ès-Dunes (a few miles south-east of Caen, in Calvados), and William thus makes himself undisputed master of Normandy.

1049. Geoffrey Martel, Count of Anjou, being at war with Henry I., King of France, William, Duke of Normandy, assists the latter, and captures Alençon and Domfront ; peace is made, and the two fortresses, with the surrounding country, are added to Normandy.

Edward the Confessor makes Ulf, one of his Norman chaplains, Bishop of Dorchester (in Oxon), a diocese which stretched from the Humber to the Thames.

An Irish fleet, assisted by the Welsh, devastates the English coast along the Bristol Channel (July).

Baldwin V., of Lille, Count of Flanders, has been for some years in alliance with Godwine, Earl of Wessex. William of

Normandy, apparently with an eye to the English crown, and in order to detach Baldwin from his English alliance and acquire his support, seeks from him his daughter Matilda in marriage.

A Council, summoned by Pope Leo IX., meets at Rheims (3 Oct.), to which Godwine sends Duduc, Bishop of Wells, and two abbots to represent England. Instigated probably by Duduc, the Council prohibits, under pain of excommunication to Baldwin and William, the proposed marriage between William and Matilda as incestuous, by reason of being within the prohibited degrees. Matilda's mother Adela, before her marriage with Baldwin, had been betrothed to William's uncle, Richard III., an act which created a spiritual affinity between the countess and the ducal house, and thus gave grounds for the prohibition. Baldwin declines to submit, and the Emperor Henry III., as the secular arm of the Church, marches against him and calls for naval aid from England, which is at once given, and Baldwin submits without further struggle. Godwine then obtains from him a renewal of their former alliance.

Godwine's son, Swein, with some ships, returns and craves from King Edward pardon and the restoration of his lands; Swein, however, has Beorn (to whom part of his territory had been granted) carried on shipboard and murdered, and he is again driven from England, and once more takes refuge in Flanders, then at war with England as above mentioned.

1050. Ealdred, Bishop of Worcester, goes to Flanders, and on his return brings back Swein, and makes peace for him with the king, who reverses the sentence of outlawry, and restores him as Earl of the western shires.

Macbeth, King of Scotia, goes to Rome, probably to get absolution for the murder of Duncan.

Eadsige, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies. The Canterbury monks, no doubt influenced by Godwine, select Ælfrie, a kinsman of Godwine, as his successor.

1051. The nomination of the archbishop, however, rests constitutionally with the king in full Witenagemot, and a Witenagemot is held at which Edward nominates his counselor, Robert of Jumièges (Bishop of London), a Norman and a foreigner, as archbishop in place of Godwine's nominee. Godwine, to counterbalance this appointment, obtains the election of Spearhafoc, a partisan of his, as Bishop of London. Robert of Jumièges goes to Rome and obtains from Pope Leo IX. his pallium as archbishop, and also a condemnation of Spearhafoc's appointment, and on his return refuses to con-

secrete the latter. Spearhafoc, however, takes possession of the bishopric.

To cement the alliance between Godwine and Baldwin, Count of Flanders, Godwine's third son, Tostig, is married to Judith, Baldwin's sister.

Eustace, Count of Boulogne, an ally of William of Normandy and a brother-in-law of King Edward, visits the king's court at Gloucester, and his visit is viewed with suspicion by Godwine's party. While returning homewards a conflict occurs between Eustace's armed escort and the men of Dover, over 20 being killed on each side, and Eustace is driven from Dover and flees to Edward. The king summons Godwine from Tostig's marriage-feast, and bids him avenge the wrong; Godwine refuses to attack his own people on behalf of a foreigner, and he and his two sons, Earls Swein and Harold, gather a large force near Gloucester, and demand the surrender of Eustace and other Normans (Sep.). Leofric, Earl of Mercia, and Siward, Earl of Northumbria, however, with their forces, come to the king's aid, and Godwine's demand is refused. The dispute is left to the Witenagemot, which meets at London (21 Sep.), declares Swein (Godwine's son) an outlaw, and summons Godwine to appear before it, whereupon Godwine, whose forces have in great part deserted him rather than fight against their king, flees with three of his sons, Swein, Tostig, and Gyrth, to Baldwin's court in Flanders, and Godwine is outlawed. His other two sons, Harold and Leofwine, take refuge in Dublin, with Dermot, a native king of both Danes and Irish. A reaction in Godwine's favor arises among the English, who dread that the loss of his experience and counsel will bring the country into disaster. Edward sends his wife Eadgyth (Edith), Godwine's daughter, to a monastery (Sep.); Swein's earldom is broken up, part being given to the king's nephew Ralf, and part, with western Wessex, to Odda, another kinsman of Edward's; East Anglia (Harold's earldom) is given to Leofric's son Ælfgar; Spearhafoc is driven out of his see, and William, one of Edward's Norman chaplains, is made Bishop of London.

1052. William, Duke of Normandy, with a large train of Normans, taking advantage of Godwine's fall, visits King Edward (at Easter), who welcomes him and (so it is said) promises again to bequeath him the crown.

Count Baldwin V. negotiates unsuccessfully with Edward for Godwine's restoration, and many of Godwine's English supporters go to Flanders to share his exile with him. His son, Swein, goes barefooted on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land

to expiate his crimes, and while returning dies in Lycia, in Asia Minor. Godwine gathers a fleet in the Yser for the invasion of England, and his son Harold gathers another at Dublin. Edward gathers a fleet at Sandwich to meet them. Godwine's fleet sails (Aug.), but is driven back to Bruges by a storm. Edward takes his fleet to London to refit (Sep.), and while he is thus absent Harold's fleet of 9 ships sails from Dublin, and after landing and ravaging at Porlock in Somerset, rounds Land's End, joins Godwine's fleet at the Isle of Wight, and the combined forces enter the Thames. As Godwine advances the country rises in his favor, and other ships join him, and on arriving at London his fleet far outnumbers Edward's 50 ships, and London declares in his favor. Edward's soldiers refuse to fight against their fellow-countrymen, his Norman nobles and ecclesiastics desert him, Godwine protests his loyalty to him, and in a Witenagemot held at London, Edward is forced to accept Godwine's purgation of the charges against him, and to restore him and his house to their former possessions and offices. They regain their earldoms, and Godwine's daughter Edith is brought back to court and reinstated as queen (Sep.). Some of Godwine's Norman rivals, including Robert of Jumièges, take refuge in Normandy, and others with Macbeth, the Scot king; Robert is deposed as Archbishop of Canterbury and outlawed, and Stigand, Bishop of Winchester, a supporter of Godwine, is appointed in his place. Ralf, however, is retained as Earl of Hereford, and Odda is created Earl of the Hwiccas; Leofric's earldom of Mercia (Staffordshire, Cheshire, and Shropshire) is increased by the addition of the shires of Lincoln, Leicester, Warwick, and Oxford; and Nottingham is added to Northumbria under Earl Siward, who is also made Earl of Northampton and Huntingdon.

Emma of Normandy, widow of Æthelred and Cnut, and mother of Edward the Confessor, dies (6 or 14 Mar.); she is buried at Winchester.

Robert of Jumièges goes to Rome to appeal to the Pope against his deposition and the appointment of Stigand as archbishop.

1053. Pope Leo IX. being a prisoner in the hands of the Normans, who are founding a state in southern Italy, William of Normandy takes advantage of the circumstance to marry Matilda, daughter of Baldwin V. of Flanders, in defiance of the prohibition of the Council of Rheims, and Rome lays Normandy under an interdict. Lanfranc, Prior of Bec, also condemns the marriage, and William banishes him, but before he quits the duchy is reconciled to him, and sends him to

Rome to secure a dispensation for the marriage. Revolts against William break out, which he speedily suppresses.

Godwine, Earl of Wessex, the first great lay statesman of England, is seized with a fit at the king's table (12 Ap.) and dies (15 Ap.), aged about 63. His son Harold (now 32) becomes Earl of Wessex, his earldom of East Anglia being restored to Ælfgar, the son of Leofric, Earl of Mercia.

Henry I. of France invades Normandy, but is defeated at Arques (near Dieppe).

1054. Henry I. of France allies himself with his old enemy, Geoffrey Martel of Anjou, and again invades Normandy. His army marches in two divisions; one, north of the Seine, is cut to pieces at Mortemer by the Normans under Robert of Eu; the other, south of the Seine, under Henry himself, which is confronted by the Normans under William, breaks up in panic, and retreats towards Paris.

Edward the Confessor sends Ealdred, Bishop of Worcester, to the court of the German emperor, Henry III., at Köln (Cologne) to negotiate with Andrew I., King of Hungary, for the return to England of Edward "the Outlaw" (the surviving son of Edmund Ironside), who had been sent out of England by Cnut in 1017. The exile is now about 38 years old. He had married Agatha (daughter of the Emperor Henry II., and niece of Stephen I., King of Hungary), and has three children, Edgar, Margaret, and Christina. Edward wishes to name him as his successor. Hungary, however, is at war with the Empire, and Ealdred, after waiting at Cologne for a year, returns unsuccessful to England.

Macbeth, the Scottish king, by allying himself with the Norse jarls of Orkney, and receiving the Norman refugees from Edward's court in 1052, has become a source of danger to England, and Edward orders Siward, Earl of Northumbria, to attack him. Siward invades Scotland, defeats Macbeth in a desperate battle (27 July), and places Duncan's son Malcolm on the Scottish throne; Macbeth takes refuge with his Norse allies, and wages war with Malcolm for four years, when he and his son are killed, and Malcolm becomes sole king.

There is "a great murrain" among cattle in England this year.

1055. Siward, Earl of Northumbria, dies at York; he is buried in the church of St. Olaf, built by himself, at Golmanho, a suburb of York. He leaves only one son, Waltheof, too young to govern, and Harold, Earl of Wessex, has his brother Tostig made Earl of Northumbria (including Nottinghamshire), and also Earl of Northampton and Huntingdon, by

Edward and the Witan. Tostig, being neither a Dane nor a Northumbrian, but an Englishman, is looked upon by the Danes of his earldom as something of a foreigner. During Siward's rule Northumbria had been semi-independent, and the king's writs did not run there; but under Tostig it becomes more a part of England, and Edward's writs commence to run. Tostig enforces order by severe but just penalties.

Leofric, Earl of Mercia, being old and sickly, his son Ælfgar, Earl of East Anglia, becomes practically the ruler of Mercia. In order to counterpoise the power of the house of Godwine, now established to the north of him as well as to the south, Ælfgar forms an alliance with Gruffydd (or Griffith), King of Wales. At Harold's instance the Witan banishes and outlaws Ælfgar, who goes to Ireland, collects a Danish force there, joins Gruffydd's forces in Wales, raids Herefordshire, defeats Ralf, its earl, and sacks and burns Hereford (24 Oct.). Harold comes into the field, a compromise is made, and Ælfgar is reinstated as Earl of East Anglia.

Henry I. of France makes peace with William of Normandy. Guy, Count of Ponthieu (the district on the French coast between Normandy and Flanders), who had been taken prisoner at Mortemer, is released by William on condition of acknowledging him as overlord. William marches against Geoffrey Martel, and Mayenne abandons Geoffrey and submits to William as overlord.

1056. Gruffydd, King of Wales, again invades Hereford; he defeats the English at Cleobury (17 June), and Leofgar, Bishop of Hereford, is slain. Harold again marches against him, and Gruffydd makes peace and swears allegiance to King Edward as his overlord.

Odda or Æthelwine, Earl of the Hwiccas, who had become a monk, dies at the monastery which he had built at Deerhurst, and Harold adds his domain to his own earldom of Wessex.

1057. Edmund Ironside's son, Edward the Atheling (now aged 43), comes from Hungary to England, and King Edward names him his successor. He dies at London shortly afterwards, and is buried at St. Paul's minster. He leaves his widow and three children, Edgar the Atheling, Margaret, and Christina. Edgar is but a boy, and is of feeble intellect, and Harold now begins to entertain the design of making himself king.

Leofric, Earl of Mercia,* dies (30 Sep.), and is buried at

* This is the Earl Leofric of whose wife Godgifu or Godiva the story is told of her riding naked through Coventry in order to induce

Coventry. His son Ælfgar becomes earl, with territory much reduced, and his own earldom of East Anglia is given to Harold's brother Gyrth, Oxfordshire being afterwards added to his territory. A new earldom is created for Harold's other brother, Leofwine, consisting of Essex, Middlesex, Herts, Kent, Surrey, and possibly Bucks.

Ralph, Earl of Hereford, dies, and is buried at Peterborough. Harold adds his territory to his own earldom of Wessex, and all England except Ælfgar's Mercia is now held by Harold and his brothers.

1058. About this date Harold goes on a pilgrimage to Rome, and he probably obtains from Pope Benedict the pallium for Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury. Ælfgar, Earl of Mercia, who has been again outlawed, taking advantage most probably of Harold's absence, comes back, with the help of Gruffydd, King of Wales, and the crews of some Norse ships, to his earldom by force. About this date, probably, he gives his daughter Ealdgyth (or Aldgyth) to Gruffydd in marriage.

Ealdred, Bishop of Worcester, consecrates the minster at Gloucester, and then goes on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, being the first English bishop who did so.

1060. Harold founds the religious house known later as Waltham Abbey, in Essex; it is hallowed (May) by Cynesige (or Kinsey), Archbishop of York.

Henry I. of France again invades Normandy, but is defeated by William near Varaville on the Dive, and makes peace with him by which Tillières is restored to Normandy. After six years' negotiations Pope Nicholas II. grants to William a dispensation allowing the validity of his marriage with Matilda.

Ealdred, Bishop of Worcester, returns from his pilgrimage to Jerusalem. Cynesige, Archbishop of York, dies, and Ealdred is made archbishop.

1061. Tostig, in company with his brother Gyrth and Archbishop Ealdred, makes a pilgrimage to Rome; during his absence the Scots under Malcolm ravage Northumbria.

1062. About this date Ælfgar, Earl of Mercia, dies; his son Edwin is made earl.

Gruffydd, King of Wales, having again harried English territory, the Witenagemot held as usual at Gloucester (Dec.) authorizes Harold to invade Wales. Harold marches to Rhuddlan, but Gruffydd escapes in a ship, and Harold burns his palace there.

1063. Harold sails with a fleet from Bristol (May) round her husband to repeal a tax which he had imposed on the people. The story is a mere legend, having no foundation in fact.

Wales and meets his brother Tostig with a land force from Northumbria, and the joint forces ravage all Wales ; the Welsh submit, give hostages, and promise to pay tribute ; and they themselves kill Gruffydd (15 Aug.) and bring his head to Harold, who sends it to King Edward. Part of the Welsh border is added to Wessex and Mercia, and Edward divides Wales between Gruffydd's two brothers, making Bleddyn (or Blethgent) King of North Wales, and Rhiwallon (or Rigwatla) King of South Wales. The two kings give hostages and swear fealty to Edward as overlord. Gruffydd was the last Welsh king who reigned over all Wales.

1064. About this date, probably, Harold, while cruising in the channel, is wrecked on the coast of Ponthieu (the country between Normandy and Flanders), and, in accordance with the barbarous practice of the time, Guy, its count, imprisons him and demands a ransom for his release. Harold sends to Guy's overlord, William of Normandy, who compels Guy to deliver Harold up to him ; and William, as the price of his release, makes Harold swear to marry one of his daughters, and possibly also (though this is very doubtful) to support his claim to succeed Edward as King of England.

1065. Harold has a house commenced (July) at Portskewet or Porth-iscoed, in Welsh territory near the Severn, as a hunting-seat for King Edward ; the Welsh under Caradoc kill Harold's workmen (24 Aug.).

Tostig, Earl of Northumbria, by the imposition of heavy taxes, and by killing some Northumbrian thanes (possibly in punishment for their lawlessness or misdeeds), has apparently become unpopular in his earldom ; an assembly of the thanes of Northumbria meets at York (3 Oct.) while Tostig is absent at Edward's court, at Britford in Wilts, deposes and outlaws him, and chooses Morkere (or Morcar), a son of Ælfgar, as earl. The thanes also kill about 200 of Tostig's followers, and plunder his treasury. Morkere collects his forces and marches south to Northampton, where his brother Edwin, Earl of Mercia, joins him. Harold meets them there, with a message from the king, commanding them to desist from rebellion and to state their grievances peaceably ; they make their complaints against Tostig, and demand that he be banished or they will hold the king as an enemy. Harold carries this message to the king, and Tostig charges him with instigating the insurrection against him. While Harold is absent, the Northumbrians plunder and burn in Northamptonshire, make some hundreds captives, and advance to Oxford. There Harold again meets them (27 Oct.), and Tostig is outlawed and

banished, and Morkere is confirmed as Earl of Northumbria. Tostig, with his wife and children, takes refuge in Flanders, with Baldwin V., his wife Judith's brother. Oswulf is made ruler (probably under Morkere) of Northumberland, as English Bernicia now begins to be called.

Westminster Abbey, built by Edward the Confessor, is finished, and consecrated (28 Dec.). The king is too ill to be present, and his queen, Edith, goes in his place.

1066. Edward the Confessor dies (5 Jan.), and is buried at Westminster Abbey (6 Jan.), being the first notable Englishman interred there. Harold is elected king by the Witan (5 Jan.), and crowned at Westminster Abbey (6 Jan.) by Ealdred, Archbishop of York.

William of Normandy at once begins immense preparations for the invasion of England, for the purpose of vindicating his claim to the crown by force.

The Northumbrians refuse to acknowledge Harold. He goes to York (Jan.) and holds an assembly, when they submit and acknowledge him as king (Ap.). He marries Ealdgyth, the sister of Earls Edwin and Morkere, and widow of Gruffydd, King of Wales.

A great comet is seen in England (Ap 24-30).

Tostig, hearing at Bruges of his brother Harold's election as king, gets a fleet together, and failing to induce William to join him, ravages the Isle of Wight and the south-east coast of England as far as Sandwich in Kent (May), and then sails to Lincolnshire and plunders there, but is driven off by Earls Edwin and Morkere, and goes to Scotland to King Malcolm (May), whence he either goes to Norway or opens negotiations with its king, Harold Hardrada, for a concerted invasion of England.

After about eight months' labor, William of Normandy completes his preparations (Aug.), and a fleet of 696 transports, with 60,000 soldiers, assembles at the river Dive, and waits for a south wind to carry it to England ; but none blows for over a month.

Harold prepares for William's threatened invasion, and by May has brought together the largest army and fleet that had ever been seen in England. He keeps the army together for over four months (till 8 Sep.), on which day, however, partly from want of supplies, and partly because the men are needed for harvest and other work, it is compelled to break up, and the country is left without special defence, so that William's fleet being wind-bound was probably a fortunate circumstance for him.

Harold Hardrada, King of Norway, with his fleet, joins that of Tostig, at the mouth of the Tyne (Sep.); the combined fleets sail up the Humber and the Ouse to Riccall (9 miles from York); their forces land there and march towards York; at Fulford, on the Ouse (2 miles from York), they defeat the forces of Earls Edwin and Morkere (Wednesday, 20 Sep.); York surrenders (Sunday, 24 Sep.); and the invading army withdraws to Stamfordbridge, on the Derwent (8 miles north-east of York). Harold is in London when the news of Tostig's landing reaches him; he at once collects an army and marches "night and day," by the old Roman road, to Yorkshire (as Deira now begins to be called); reaches Tadcaster (24 Sep.); enters York the next morning; and on the same day (Monday, 25 Sep.) marches to Stamfordbridge and totally defeats the invaders, both Tostig and Harold Hardrada being among the slain. Harold offers peace to Hardrada's son Olaf and the Earls of Orkney, who are in charge of the Norse fleet at Riccal; they accept, give hostages, and swear friendship to England, and Harold allows them to return home with 24 ships.

A west wind blows, and William's fleet sails from the Dive to Saint Valery at the mouth of the Somme in Ponthieu, where it is nearer to England. At last a south wind comes up, and during the night of 27-28 Sep. the fleet sails from St. Valery across the channel to Pevensey in Sussex, where William's army lands (28 Sep.). He marches to Hastings (29 Sep.), and from thence as his headquarters he harries the surrounding country, with a view to force Harold to attack him.

While Harold is celebrating his Stamfordbridge victory by a feast at York (1 Oct.), news of William's landing and harryings reaches him. He at once sets out with part of his army (his brothers-in-law, Earls Edwin and Morkere, whose territories he has just saved from Tostig and Harold Hardrada, traitorously refusing to join him with their forces), marches back to London,* collects additional levies (6-12 Oct.), marches from London (12 Oct.) into Sussex, and fortifies himself (Friday, 13 Oct.) on a hill afterwards known as Senlac, 8 miles from William's camp at Hastings, and awaits his attack. There William attacks him, and a terrible battle ensues (Saturday, 14 Oct.), lasting from morn till sunset, when Harold is killed by an arrow which pierces his right eye; his two brothers, Leofwine and Gyrth, are also slain; and the Eng-

* Full justice has never yet been done to these two wonderful marches of Harold's army from London to Stamfordbridge and back, which are equal to anything of the kind recorded in history.

lish are totally defeated. The spot where Harold fell was afterwards marked by the high altar of Battle Abbey, commenced by William in 1067, and consecrated in 1094. The site of the altar can still be identified within a few feet.

The story of the battle of Senlac or Hastings, from Harold's shipwreck on the coast of Ponthieu till the end of the battle, is told in the famous Bayeux tapestry. This was worked, in part at least, by Matilda, William's queen. It is of wool, is 214 feet long and 20 inches wide; and is divided into 72 compartments, each giving an episode of the story, with a Latin superscription descriptive of the scene delineated. It was worked for the cathedral of Bayeux. The tapestry is still to be seen, in excellent preservation in spite of the lapse of 800 years, in the Museum of Bayeux. A complete series of photographs of it was published in 1879 by J. Comte.

Edwin and Morkere, Earls of Mercia and Northumbria, come to London with their forces. The Witenagemot, on receiving the news of Harold's death, meets and elects Edgar the Atheling king (15 Oct.). Edwin and Morkere promise allegiance to him, but notwithstanding this they withdraw with their forces to their earldoms (1 Nov.), and send their sister Ealdgyth, Harold's widow, to Chester. By thus deserting Edgar they destroy any chance which England might have had of withstanding William.

William marches from Hastings (20 Oct.) into Kent, and captures Romney (20 Oct.), Dover (21), and Canterbury (29). After lying ill at Canterbury for a month he sends to Winchester, the dower city of Edith (Edward the Confessor's widow and Harold's sister), who lives there, and it submits to pay tribute (1 Dec.). William marches to the Thames and burns Southwark (Dec.), the suburb of London on the south side of the river; ascends the Thames valley to Wallingford in Berks, crosses the river there, and advances toward London, so as to cut it off on the north side. London thereupon submits, and Edgar gives up his claim to the crown. When William reaches Berkhamstead, Edgar, Ealdred (Archbishop of York), and other leading Englishmen, go to him and offer him the crown. William then goes to London and is crowned at Westminster Abbey (25 Dec.) by Ealdred, as "King of the English." He begins the erection of the Tower of London, and then withdraws to Barking, in Essex.

1067. Earls Edwin and Morkere come to Barking and submit to William; Waltheof, Earl of Northampton and Huntingdon (Siward's son), probably does the same. Oswulf, Earl of Bernicia, is deprived of his earldom (Feb.), and William

gives it to Copsige (a lieutenant of Tostig's); but soon after Copsige takes possession of his earldom he is slain by the partisans of Oswulf, who, however, is himself killed by a robber.

William visits Normandy (at Easter) leaving the government in the hands of his half-brother Bishop Odo and William Fitz-Osbern, whom he makes Earls of Kent and Hereford. He takes with him in his train Edgar the Atheling, Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury, and Earls Edwin, Morkere, and Waltheof, and he remains in Normandy till Dec. During his absence Odo and Fitz-Osbern build castles everywhere and govern oppressively. Eadric "the Wild," of Hereford, allies himself with the Welsh kings Bleddyn and Rhiwallon (set up by Harold in 1063) and they ravage and plunder that part of the district which has submitted to the Normans. The men of Kent rise against Odo, and send to Eustace, Count of Boulogne, to help them. He comes; their united forces attack Dover Castle, but are routed, and Eustace returns home. Other English send to Swein, King of Denmark, offering the crown to him.

William returns to England (Dec.), holds an assembly at Westminster, which confiscates much land and grants it to Normans, and outlaws Count Eustace. He sends the English abbot Æthelsige to Swein as ambassador, to win him over, and sends other embassies to other foreign powers. He makes Remigius of Fécamp Bishop of Dorchester, and Gospatric Earl of Northumberland (as Bernicia now begins to be called) in place of the dead Copsige.

1068. Northern, central, and western England being still unsubdued, William prepares to complete their conquest. Exeter (where Harold's mother Gytha and probably his sons Godwine, Edmund, and Magnus have taken refuge) is becoming a centre of resistance, and William sends demanding its submission; the inhabitants offer to pay tribute, but refuse to acknowledge him otherwise, wishing to be a "free city." William marches against it with an army of English, harrying Dorset on the way, and captures it after a siege of 18 days, Gytha and her grandsons escaping to Ireland. William conquers all western England (Dorset, Devon, Somerset, Cornwall, and probably Gloucester and Worcester). Large confiscations of land follow; nearly all Cornwall is granted to Count Robert, William's half-brother, besides lands in other shires.

Matilda is consecrated queen at Westminster (at Pentecost, 11 May). A son is born to her (afterwards Henry I.).

The north, under Earls Edwin, Morkere, and Gospatric, with Edgar the Atheling, rises against William, and seeks help

from Wales, Scotland, and Denmark, York being the centre of resistance. William marches with his English forces, and the two armies meet at Warwick, when Edwin and Morkere submit, and their army disperses, some retiring and holding Durham. Gospatric, with Edgar and his mother and sisters Margaret and Christina, takes refuge with Malcolm, the Scot king. William conquers the country as far as York, building a castle there and at the other towns which he captures. He is now master of all England except Northumberland, Durham, and north-west Mercia, with Chester.

Harold's three sons, with a force from Ireland, attack Bristol, but are driven off; they then fight a battle with the men of Somerset under Eadnoth, who is slain. After plundering the coast they sail away.

William makes Robert of Comines Earl of Northumberland (Dec.), in place of Gospatric.

1069. Robert of Comines, with a large force, goes to take possession of his earldom; with the help of Æthelwine, Bishop of Durham, he takes peaceable possession of Durham, but he allows his men to plunder, and the townsmen kill him and all his followers, about 900 (29 Jan.). The people of Yorkshire rise, welcome back Edgar the Atheling and Gospatric, and besiege York Castle; but William marches north, drives them off, builds another castle, and leaves William Fitz-Osbern, Earl of Hereford, in command. As soon as William leaves, the English again attack the castles at York, but are repulsed by Earl William.

Harold's sons make a descent on and plunder Devonshire, but are driven off (June).

The west rises, and the English besiege the new castles at Montacute (in Somerset) and Exeter; and Eadric the Wild and the Welsh attack Shrewsbury, but the rising is put down. Staffordshire also rises.

Swein, King of Denmark, sends a large fleet, under his brother Osbeorn and his sons Harold and Cnut, to help the English. After some vain attempts on Dover, Sandwich, Ipswich, and Norwich, it enters the Humber, and the Danes are joined by Edgar and Gospatric from Scotland, and by Earl Waltheof. Ealdred, Archbishop of York, dies (11 Sep.) as their forces approach York. They capture York, slay the garrison of 3000 Normans, but after destroying the castles the English disperse and the Danes return to their ships.

William marches north, leaves his half-brother Robert in Lindesey (Lincolnshire) to keep the Danes in check, subdues Staffordshire, and recaptures York. He then lays waste

Yorkshire, destroying the crops and orchards, burning the towns and villages, and killing the sheep, cattle, and the people, their dead bodies lying on the roads and in the fields, with no one to bury them. A terrible plague breaks out among the survivors, and altogether over 100,000 people perish; sixty years later the country still lay waste and bare.

1070. William sets out (Jan.) to subdue Durham and Northumberland, when Earls Waltheof and Gospatric submit and are restored to their earldoms, and Waltheof marries William's niece Judith. Edgar the Atheling returns to Scotland, where his sister Margaret marries the king, Malcolm III. William then ravages Durham and Northumberland. He also bribes the Danish commander Osbeorn, and it is agreed that the Danes may plunder the English coast through the rest of the winter, on condition that they shall return to Denmark in the spring.

William next marches (Feb.) from York to Chester, his troops suffering terrible hardships from the winter weather and the almost impassable nature of the country. He captures Chester, thus completing the conquest of all England, except the small district held by Eadric the Wild on the Welsh border, and the Isle of Ely (in Cambridgeshire), which is still unsubdued. He builds castles at Chester and Stafford, and then marches to Salisbury and reviews and dismisses his army. At Easter two papal legates come to England and place William's crown on his head.

The Danish fleet, instead of returning to Denmark, comes to the Wash, and the Danes ascend the Ouse to Ely (May), and are welcomed by the English under Hereward the Wake, and the united forces plunder the abbey of Peterborough (1 June), before Turolf, the new Norman abbot appointed by William, gets there with his soldiers. The Danes return to Denmark laden with spoil, but Swein banishes his brother Osbeorn for having taken bribes from William and done so little for England. Hereward holds out at Ely during the rest of the year.

Malcolm of Scotland, as the ally of Edgar the Atheling (who still claims the throne of England), invades and cruelly ravages Northumberland, destroying almost everything that William had left, and carrying large numbers of the people back to Scotland as slaves.

Thomas, a canon of Bayeux, is made Archbishop of York (at Pentecost), vacated by the death of Ealdred. A council is held (Aug.) which deposes Stigand as Archbishop of Canterbury, and Lanfranc is appointed to the office (15 Aug.).

Stigand's bishopric of Winchester is given to Walkelin, another Norman. Stigand takes refuge with Hereward at Ely.

Eadric the Wild, of Hereford, submits to William.

1071. The Earls Edwin and Morkere leave William's court; Edwin tries to reach Scotland, but is killed on the way; Morkere goes to the Isle of Ely to assist in its defence. William marches to attack the isle, and after many months' fighting, it surrenders (Oct.). Morkere and Stigand surrender and are imprisoned, but Hereward refuses to submit and sails away; his after-career and fate are uncertain. William builds a castle at Ely, and all England is now subdued.

He puts an end to the earldoms of Edwin and Morkere, but makes Roger of Montgomery Earl of Shrewsbury, and another Norman, Hugh of Avranches, Earl of Chester, their duties being to guard the Welsh border. Ralph de Guader, an Englishman who had fought under William in Brittany, is made Earl of Norfolk, to guard the coast against the Danes.

William Fitz-Osbern, Earl of Hereford, goes to Flanders to marry its countess, Richildis, and win her territory, but is killed; his son Roger is made Earl of Hereford.

1072. William goes to Normandy, to watch the course of events in Flanders. He returns to England, and sets out (Aug.) to invade Scotland by land and sea to punish Malcolm's harryings in 1070. Malcolm meets him at Abernethy, in Fife, submits, surrenders his son Duncan as hostage, and swears fealty to him as his overlord, and William becomes lord of all Britain.

He removes Gospatric from the earldom of Northumberland, and makes Waltheof (already Earl of Northampton and Huntingdon) earl in his place. Waltheof kills the sons of Carl, in pursuance of an hereditary feud, their father Carl having killed his grandfather Ealdred. Gospatric goes to Scotland, where Malcolm gives him land.

1073. Maine revolts against William's rule; he goes over to Normandy with an English army, ravages Maine, and captures its chief city, Le Mans. He makes peace with Fulk, Count of Anjou, apparently the overlord of Maine; and William's eldest son Robert is made Count of Maine, and swears fealty to Fulk as his overlord.

1074. William goes to Normandy. Edgar the Atheling relinquishes his claims to the crown, and goes over to Normandy, where he is received "with much pomp" by William; and he becomes a great friend of William's eldest son Robert.

1075. Contrary to William's commands, Roger, Earl of Hereford, gives his sister Emma in marriage to Ralph, Earl

of Norfolk. The two earls conspire to kill William, and to divide England between them, and Earl Waltheof joins in the plot. Waltheof repents and discloses the conspiracy to Lanfranc, on whose advice he goes to Normandy and confesses to William. The two other earls revolt openly, but receiving little support from the English, Ralph flees to Denmark, while his wife holds Norwich Castle. The Danes, under Cnut, sail up to York and plunder the minster. Norwich Castle surrenders to William's forces under Lanfranc; Roger of Hereford is imprisoned; and William returns from Normandy with Waltheof.

Edith, widow of Edward the Confessor, dies (18 Dec.), and is buried beside him at Westminster Abbey.

1076. Waltheof is tried twice for treason, condemned to death, and beheaded near Winchester (31 May), being the only man put to death by William except in war. The English look on him as a martyr and a saint, and believed that miracles were wrought at his tomb at Crowland. Walcher, Bishop of Durham, is made Earl of Northumberland in Waltheof's place. William goes to Normandy, and besieges Dol in Brittany, but is repulsed, thus suffering his first defeat.

A great earthquake is felt in England.

1077. London is burnt (14 Aug.).

1079. William's eldest son Robert, because his father will not grant him the dukedom of Normandy, seeks to gain it by force, and obtains the help of Philip I., King of France, who puts him in possession of the castle of Gerberoi; William lays siege to the castle, but fails, narrowly escaping death at the hands of his son Robert, and is reconciled to him.

By William's orders the New Forest in Hampshire is formed.

1080. Malcolm of Scotland, having made another raid into Northumberland, William sends his son Robert to avenge it. Robert does little, but on his way back founds a castle on the Tyne (now Newcastle). He again quarrels with his father, and goes to France.

About this date or later William's second son Richard is killed by a stag in the New Forest, Hampshire.

Bishop Walcher, Earl of Northumberland, rules laxly, and on his failure to punish the murderers of Ligulf, an Englishman of high rank, an Assembly meets to try the case, and the people kill Walcher and his followers (14 May). William sends his half-brother, Odo, Earl of Kent, to punish the slayers of Walcher, but Odo accepts bribes, puts innocent men to death, and ravages the land.

1081. William goes on a pilgrimage to St. David's in Wales,

and also founds a castle at Cardiff in South Wales. He quarrels with his queen, Matilda, on account of her sending presents to her son Robert in exile.

An earthquake does great damage in England.

1082. William's half-brother, Odo, Bishop of Bayeux and Earl of Kent, desiring to become pope, collects an army in England for the purpose of going to Rome and carrying out his design. William comes from Normandy to England, calls an Assembly, and formally accuses Odo, and as all present fear to arrest him on account of his sacred office, William himself seizes him, and imprisons him at Rouen, where he remains till William's death.

1083. Queen Matilda dies (2 Nov.) ; she is buried at Caen in Normandy.

A revolt against William breaks out in Maine under Viscount Hubert.

1083-1086. Viscount Hubert holds the castle of Sainte-Susanne for three years against William, and in 1086 William receives him into his favor.

1085. Cnut (the son of Harold Hardrada), now King of Denmark, is joined by his father-in-law, Robert of Flanders, and by his brother Olaf, King of Norway, and collects a large fleet to invade England ; and William brings over a large army of mercenaries from Normandy to meet the expected attack. Cnut, however, quarrels with his brother Olaf, and (in 1086) is killed in a church by his own men.

At an Assembly held at Gloucester (Dec.) William proposes a general survey of the whole of England, which is carried out, and results, after some four or five months' labor, in the Domesday Book, which gives a record of the ownership and value of all the lands in England, both in Edward the Confessor's time and in William's, showing that nearly all the land had passed into the possession of Normans.

1086. Shortly after the completion of the survey, William calls an Assembly at Salisbury (Aug.) of all the principal landowners, and requires them to take the oath of fealty to him. He soon afterwards levies a tax of six shillings on every hide of land, a grievous burden at that time.

William goes to Rouen, the capital of Normandy, and undergoes medical treatment to reduce his immense bulk.

1087. The French in Vexin (a disputed territory between Rouen and Paris) make inroads into Normandy ; William retaliates by harrying Vexin (Aug.) and burning its chief town, Mantes (15 Aug.). While riding about the burning town his horse stumbles, he is thrown forward on the tall bow of

his saddle, and receives a wound which proves mortal. He is taken to the priory of St. Gervase, near Rouen, where, being told to prepare for death, he bequeaths Normandy to his eldest son Robert, and England to his third son, William, and sets free a number of prisoners in Normandy and England, including his half-brother, Bishop Odo, Earl of Kent, and the Earl of Morkere. He then dies (9 Sep.), and is buried at Caen, in his own minster of St. Stephen.

Robert "Courthose" becomes Duke of Normandy.

William, called Rufus from his ruddy complexion, goes to England and is crowned king at Westminster (26 Sep.) by Archbishop Lanfranc. He restores his uncle, Bishop Odo, to his earldom of Kent.

A great fire burns a large part of London, including St. Paul's.

1088. The Norman nobles in England, headed by the king's two uncles, Bishop Odo and Count Robert, rebel against William; he throws himself upon the allegiance of his English subjects, and 30,000 men respond to the call; they defeat the rebels, and maintain the king on his throne. This was the last occasion on which English and Normans fought against each other on English soil; and the Norman conquest is now practically complete.

1089. Lanfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (24 May), aged about 84. The king allows the office to remain vacant for four years, and appropriates its revenues.

A great earthquake is felt in England (13 Aug.).

1090. William II. goes to Normandy and carries on war against his brother Robert Courthose.

1091. He deprives Edgar, the Atheling, of his lands in Normandy, and Edgar goes to Scotland to his brother-in-law Malcolm, who again takes up arms in his cause, and invades and harries Northumberland (May.). William returns to England (Aug.) with his brother Robert, and prepares an army and fleet to attack Scotland. The fleet is wrecked (Sep.); but William and his brother march into Lothian; through the intervention of Robert and Edgar peace is made, and Malcolm swears fealty to William as his lord. Edgar returns to Normandy, his lands being restored.

In London 600 houses are blown down by a whirlwind.

1092. William, with a large force, goes north to Carlisle, restores the town, builds a castle there, drives out Dolphyn (or Thorfinn), who holds Cumbria from the Solway Firth to the Derwent and to Stanmore for Malcolm of Scotland, and annexes Cumbria south of the Solway Firth to England. Mal-

colm complains of this as a breach of his rights, and William summons him to a conference at Gloucester; he comes, but they fail to agree, and part in anger.

Anselm, a native of Aosta in Burgundy (near the border of Lombardy), now Abbot of Bec, and the most famous ecclesiastic of western Europe, comes to England (8 Sep.) at the invitation of Hugh of Avranches, Earl of Chester, who is ill.

A gemot or assembly held at Gloucester (Dec.) resolves to petition the king that a prayer be offered up in all churches that God would put it into the king's heart to appoint some fit person to the see of Canterbury, vacant since 1089.

The greater part of London is destroyed by fire.

1093. William Rufus, being sick and in a penitential mood, sends for Anselm and appoints him Archbishop of Canterbury (6 Mar.). At a special gemot held at Winchester, the king renews his pledges of good government made at his coronation.

Malcolm harries Northumberland worse than ever before, but is drawn into an ambush near the river Alne (either at Alnwick or Inneraldan), his army is cut to pieces or drowned, and he and his eldest son Edward are slain (13 Nov.). His illegitimate brother Donald Ban, or Donalbain, seizes the throne of Scotland, and reigns six months. Malcolm's widow Margaret dies from the shock of her husband's and son's deaths (17 Nov.).

Anselm is consecrated as Archbishop of Canterbury by Thomas of Bayeux, Archbishop of York (4 Dec.).

At a gemot held at Gloucester (Dec.) a hostile message from Robert of Normandy is considered, and war is decreed.

1094. William Rufus quarrels with Anselm regarding the smallness of his contribution to the war expenses (Jan).

The troops (20,000) for the invasion of Normandy assemble at Hastings (4 Feb.), but are delayed for a month by contrary winds. Anselm consecrates the church of Battle Abbey (11 Feb.), begun in 1067 by William the Conqueror. He preaches against the fashion of long hair for men, extravagance in dress, etc.

The king goes over to Normandy (4 Mar.), leaving the troops behind. By his instructions his unscrupulous minister Randolf or Ranulf Flambard, Bishop of Durham, obtains from the troops ten shillings given to each by his shire to pay his expenses (£10,000 in all), dismisses the troops, and sends the money to William, who uses it to buy off the French king from Robert's side. William returns to England (28 Dec.).

1095. Anselm asks William's leave to go to Rome for his

pallium (Feb.). At this time the papacy is in dispute between Urban II. and Clement III., and Anselm has recognized the former. William denies Anselm's right to recognize a pope without the king's sanction, refuses him permission to go to Rome, and sends for the pallium himself. At Anselm's request the king summons a council at Rockingham (near the borders of Leicestershire and Northamptonshire), which meets (11-14 Mar.), and adjourns to 20 May, without settling the dispute. Cardinal Walter, Bishop of Albano, comes to England as legate with the pallium, and induces the king to recognize Urban. The king asks the legate to depose Anselm; he refuses, and the king and Anselm meet at Windsor and are temporarily reconciled (10 June). Anselm refuses to accept the pallium from the king (being a layman), and the legate places it on the altar of Canterbury Cathedral, whence Anselm takes it himself.

Robert of Mowbray, Earl of Northumberland, plunders some Norwegian merchants, refuses to appear before the King's Court, and shuts himself in his castle at Bamborough. This was the outbreak of a widespread conspiracy to dethrone William and give the crown to Stephen of Aumale, a son of William the Conqueror's sister Adela. William captures the earl by a stratagem, and his wife Matilda surrenders Bamborough Castle. The earl is imprisoned for the rest of his life, and his earldom is forfeited, and the others concerned in the insurrection are punished. During the king's absence in Northumberland Anselm guards Kent against rebellion and an expected attack from Normandy.

Pope Urban II. preaches the first crusade at the Council of Piacenza (Mar.), and again at that of Clermont in Auvergne (Sep.). Robert of Normandy, in order to raise money to pay his expenses of joining the crusade, proposes to mortgage Normandy to William Rufus for three years.

Gilbert, Bishop of Lisieux in Normandy, observes a remarkable display of falling stars on the night of 4-5 April.

1096. The proposed mortgage is completed (Sep.), William advances 10,000 marks, and takes possession of Normandy, where he remains till Mar. 1097.

1097. William returns to England and holds a gemot at Windsor (Ap.). He makes a great expedition into Wales, and compels the country into a nominal submission. He sends a petulant message to Anselm, complaining of the poor equipment of the troops sent by him for the Welsh expedition.

Anselm, wishing to lay before the pope charges against the king respecting his treatment of the clergy and the Church,

asks permission of the king to go to Rome (June); the king refuses it; Anselm repeats his request twice (Aug., Oct.), and the enraged king orders him to pay a fine for his persistence. Anselm threatens to go without leave; the king gives it, but stipulates that he must not take any of the property of his see; Anselm blesses the king at Winchester (15 Oct.), leaves Dover (Nov.), lands at Whitsand (in Normandy), and spends his Christmas at Cluny (now in Saône-et-Loire). On his departure, William seizes on the estates of his see.

William Rufus builds a wall round the Tower, a bridge across the Thames, and Westminster Hall.

1098. Magnus Barefoot, King of Norway, turns pirate, and conquers the Orkneys, the Western Isles of Scotland, and the Isle of Man. From the latter place as his headquarters he sails to attack Anglesey; the Earls of Shrewsbury and Chester oppose his landing, and the former is killed. His brother, Robert of Belesme, succeeds him, and has to pay £3000 to the king as feudal succession dues (relief); he builds a strong castle at Bridgenorth to complete the defence of the Severn valley.

Anselm completes his "Cur Deus Homo" ("Why God became Man"), a treatise on the Incarnation, written in Latin.

1100. William Rufus, while hunting in the New Forest, is shot with an arrow, whether purposely or accidentally is uncertain, by Walter Tyrrel, and killed (2 Aug.). His eldest brother, Robert of Normandy, has not yet returned from Palestine, and his younger brother, Henry, who was also hunting in the Forest, immediately rides to Winchester and gets possession of the royal treasure (2 Aug.); goes to London, and with the assistance of the Earl of Warwick, is chosen king (3 Aug.), and is crowned at Westminster Abbey (5 Aug.) by Maurice, Bishop of London. Having been born and brought up in England he is welcomed by the people as an English king.

One of his first acts is to imprison Ranulf Flambard, the instrument of Rufus's despotism, in the Tower (14 Sep.). Henry I. wishes to marry Edith or Matilda, daughter of Malcolm, King of Scotland, and of Margaret, the sister of Edgar the Atheling. Matilda being a great-granddaughter of Edmund Ironside, Henry, by marrying her, would unite the Norman and Saxon lines. Matilda, for the past seven years, has been educated by her aunt Christina (the younger sister of Edgar), at the Abbeys of Romsey (in Hampshire) and Wilton (in Wiltshire), and has worn the veil as a protection against the insults or the addresses of Norman nobles, and there is a doubt

whether this will not be a bar to her marriage. Henry I. recalls Anselm from Lyons (Sep.); Anselm lands at Dover (23 Sep.), and holds a council at Lambeth (Oct.), which decides that Matilda is free to marry; and the marriage takes place and Matilda is crowned queen at Westminster Abbey (Sunday, 11 Nov.).

Robert, Duke of Normandy, Henry's elder brother, returns to Normandy from the crusade (Sep.).

Henry restores to Anselm the temporalities of his see, demanding from him the usual homage for them; this Anselm refuses, as being contrary to the new law of the Church. Henry proposes to leave the question open till Easter, 1101, submitting it to the pope in the meantime, to which Anselm agrees.

1101. Henry I. grants a charter of liberties, agreeing to put in force the laws of Edward the Confessor, promising not to sell or farm benefices, to abolish arbitrary feudal exactions, and other reforms. It soon becomes partially inoperative.

Ranulf Flambard escapes from the Tower (4 Feb.), goes over to Normandy, and incites Robert to put forth his claim to the English throne. Robert sails with an army to England, lands at Portchester (19 July), and is joined by several Anglo-Norman nobles. The two armies meet near Alton, in Hampshire (16 miles E. N. E. of Winchester), when, through the influence of Anselm and some of the leaders, peace is made between the two brothers, Robert relinquishing all claim to England, and Henry yielding Normandy (except Domfret) to Robert, and agreeing to pay him 3000 marks yearly. Robert remains a guest at his brother's court for six months.

Queen Matilda goes to the Abbey of Abingdon (in Berkshire) before the birth of her son (William the Atheling), to be under the care of Abbot Faricius, the famous surgeon.

Henry's envoys return from Rome with the pope's decision refusing to recognize Henry's claim to the right of investiture and homage. Henry sends another embassy to Rome, including Gerard, Archbishop of York, who gets his pallium; the envoys return with a false report that the pope substantially recognizes Henry's claim, and Henry proceeds to appoint two or three bishops. Anselm receives a letter from the pope, upholding his former position, and refusing to recognize Henry's claim, but the report of the envoys silences him for a time.

1102. Henry I. asks Anselm to consecrate these bishops, but Anselm refuses.

Henry confiscates the estates of the nobles who had joined his brother Robert, including those of Robert de Lacy of Yorkshire,

Robert Malet of Suffolk, and Ivo of Grantmesnil. He cites Robert of Belesme, Earl of Shrewsbury, to appear before the King's Court. The earl refuses, and Henry, with 60,000 men, marches against him, and captures his castles of Arundel, Tickhill, and Bridgenorth. He then marches against Shrewsbury where Robert is; the earl surrenders, is banished, and his estates are confiscated; he goes to Normandy and stirs up strife between its duke and Henry.

Henry summons a special council at Westminster for the reform of abuses (Sep.), which prohibits slavery, the marriage and concubinage of the clergy, and the gross forms of vice prevalent during the reign of William Rufus.

1103. Henry I. demands the submission of Anselm in the matter of investiture and homage; he refuses, and Henry asks him to go to Rome and prevail on the pope to give way (Feb.); Anselm requests that this proposal be referred to the gemot, which meets at Westminster (Ap.), and urges him to go. He leaves Dover (27 Ap.), crosses to Whitsand, and stays at Bec till Aug. At Rome he finds William of Warelwast as Henry's advocate. The pope, however, remains obdurate, and Anselm goes to Lyons (Dec.), determined not to return to England till the question is settled. Henry confiscates the revenues of Canterbury, but appoints two of Anselm's men to see that the tenants are not oppressed.

Queen Matilda gives birth to a daughter, named at first Adelaïs or Alice, but afterwards Matilda (the future empress).

1104. Henry I. sends another embassy to Rome, but the pope, much as he wishes Henry's support, remains firm, stating that he cannot set aside the canons of a Roman council. Henry still keeps up a friendly correspondence with Anselm.

Robert of Normandy visits England with hostile intent, but is won over and induced to give up his annual pension of 3000 marks.

1105. Henry, in consequence of his brother Robert's misgovernment in Normandy, and of Norman nobles stirring up sedition in England, invades it for the purpose of conquest, landing at Barfleur or Barbaflot (Ap.), near Carentan in the Cotentin. He and Robert hold a conference at Whitsuntide, but come to no agreement.

Anselm goes from Lyons to Normandy (July) and threatens to excommunicate Henry for the wrong done to God by his conduct towards the Church and clergy in England during the past two years. Adela of Blois (Henry's sister) is lying ill; Anselm goes to her, and she arranges a meeting

between him and Henry at Laigle (22 July); Henry offers to restore Anselm the revenues of his see if he will return and recognize the bishops invested by Henry; Anselm declines to do this without permission from Rome, and another embassy is sent thither to obtain it.

Henry returns to England and taxes the whole clergy to raise money for the prosecution of the war in Normandy. The queen and the court bishops implore Henry to write to Anselm to return. Anselm writes reproving Henry for punishing the clergy, a thing which should be done only by their bishops; he also orders that the penalties of deprivation and excommunication be enforced against any clergy infringing the prohibition against marriage.

Henry settles a body of Flemings in Pembrokeshire, Wales.

1106. The envoys return from Rome with instructions from the Pope allowing Anselm to pardon the offending bishops who have acted under Henry's investiture, and allowing bishops and abbots to do homage for their temporalities to the king, as their secular lord.

Robert of Normandy comes to England, and has a fruitless interview with Henry at Northampton (Lent).

Henry invades Normandy with a larger army. He sees Anselm at Bec (15 Aug.), and pledges the removal of all taxes on the clergy, and the repayment within three years of those already collected; Anselm thereupon returns to England and resumes his primacy. Henry remains and defeats Robert at Tenchenbrai (28 Sep.), conquers Normandy, and makes it a dependency of the English crown. Thus on the 40th anniversary of the Conqueror's landing at Pevensey, is the battle of Senlac avenged. Robert is taken prisoner at Tenchenbrai, and sent to Cardiff Castle, where he is kept confined, but well treated, till his death in 1135. Edgar the Atheling is also taken prisoner, and lives in England for the rest of his life.

1107. A great gemot held at London (1 Aug.) declares in favor of the compromise agreed to by Anselm and Henry, and assented to by the pope, that the right of investing bishops and abbots belongs to the spiritual power alone, but that the king remains entitled to the homage of the bishop elect. [By a treaty made at Worms (4 Feb. 1111) a similar compromise is made by the pope, Paschal II., and the emperor, Henry V.] Anselm invests and consecrates the bishops who had been appointed by Henry (11 Aug.).

Ranulf Flambard, Bishop of Durham (imprisoned in 1100), is allowed to return to his see.

Henry and his queen introduce the custom of making royal progresses through different parts of the country.

1108. They hold court for the first time at the recently completed castle at New Windlesore (so-called from the winding of the Thames there), now Windsor. William the Conqueror had used the place as a hunting-seat, and built a castle there; but Henry had made great additions and improvements, and made it a royal residence. Henry goes to Normandy.

1109. Henry returns to England and holds court at Windsor, where his daughter Matilda (6 years old) is married by proxy to the Emperor Henry V., now 45 years old.

Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (21 Ap.), aged about 76.

1110. Henry levies a tax of three shillings on every hide of land, by which about £50,000 is raised as a marriage portion for his daughter Matilda, who is sent to Germany and married to Henry V. in the cathedral of Mentz, and crowned empress by the Archbishop of Cologne.

1111. A revolt breaks out in Normandy in favor of William Clito, son of the ex-Duke Robert, whose cause is supported by Louis VI., King of France, and Fulk, Count of Anjou, who lays claim to Maine in opposition to Henry. Henry goes over to Normandy, and war breaks out.

1112. He again captures Robert of Belesme, and imprisons him for the rest of his life.

1113. He makes peace with Louis VI. and Fulk of Anjou; they abandon William Clito, and he takes refuge in Flanders. Henry returns to England.

1114. The Emperor Henry V. and the Princess Matilda (now 11 years old) are again married and crowned in Mentz Cathedral (7 Jan.).

Ralph d'Escures is made Archbishop of Canterbury. Thurstan is elected Archbishop of York (15 Aug.), but refuses to receive consecration from the Archbishop of Canterbury. He was eventually consecrated in Rome by Pope Calixtus II. (19 Oct., 1119).

Stephen of Blois, the third son of Adela, the Conqueror's daughter (now a youth of 20), is sent to the court of his uncle, King Henry I. He becomes a favorite with the people on account of his pleasant manners and social disposition.

1115. Henry I. takes his son, William the Atheling (now 13 years old), to Normandy, and the nobles and freemen swear fealty to him as their future duke.

Henry and Matilda spend Christmas at the abbey of St. Albans (in Herts), then just completed, where the queen has her

portrait painted in miniature. It is still extant, preserved in the Golden Book of St. Albans, now in the British Museum.

1116. Henry I. holds a gemot at Salisbury, and appoints William, the Atheling, his successor, and requires the chief men of the kingdom to swear fealty to himself as king, and to William as future king.

Peterborough Monastery is burnt (3 Aug.).

About this date Henry completes his new palace and park at Woodstock (8 miles N. N. W. of Oxford), and forms there the first zoölogical collection of wild animals ever seen in England. It includes lions, leopards, lynxes, camels, a "stryx" or porcupine, and "other curious beasts."

1117. A fresh revolt breaks out in Normandy, and Henry, with his son William, goes over to put it down. Henry returns to England at Christmas, the queen being in ill-health.

1118. Henry I. again goes to Normandy to prosecute the war against Louis VI. of France and Fulk of Anjou, who have again espoused the cause of William Clito.

Queen Matilda dies (1 May), aged about 41, and is buried in Westminster Abbey by the side of her great-uncle, Edward the Confessor. She leaves two children, William (the Atheling) and Matilda (the empress).

Fulk of Anjou defeats Henry I. before Alençon (Dec.).

The military order of Knights Templars is founded by Baldwin II., King of Jerusalem.

1119. Henry defeats Louis VI. at the almost bloodless battle of Noyon or Brenneville (20 Aug.) Peace is made between them, and Henry's son William marries Alice or Matilda (12 years old), a daughter of Louis's ally Fulk, Earl of Anjou, at Lisieux, in Burgundy (June).

1120. Henry enters into a contract (16 Ap.) to marry Adelicia, Adeliza, Adelais, or Alice of Louvaine, a daughter of Godfrey, Duke of Brabant.

Henry sails from Barfleur, in Normandy, for England (25 Nov.), with his son's bride Alice. His two sons, William and Richard, and his daughter Mary, with a large train of nobles, also sail, in another vessel, "the White Ship," which strikes on a rock, and all on board (about 300), except one, are drowned (25 Nov.). When Henry receives the news he falls senseless, and is never afterwards seen to smile.

- His proposed marriage with Adelicia of Louvaine is delayed by a dispute between Roger le Poer, Bishop of Salisbury, and Ralph, Archbishop of Canterbury, as to which shall perform the ceremony, Roger claiming the right on the ground that Windsor (where it is to take place) is within his diocese. An

ecclesiastical council is called, which decides that wherever the king and queen may be in England, they are the parishioners of the Archbishop of Canterbury.

1121. Henry I. is married to Adelicia of Louvaine, at Windsor, by the Archbishop of Canterbury (24 Jan.), and the two are crowned at Westminster Abbey (Sunday, 30 Jan.).

The Welsh invade and ravage Cheshire; Henry defeats them, and pursues them far into their country.

1123. Fulk, Count of Anjou, makes war on Normandy in favor of William Clito, and is joined by several Norman nobles. Henry goes over to Normandy (June) and defeats Clito at Terroude, near Rouen.

1124. Queen Adelicia goes to her husband in Normandy.

1125. The Emperor Henry V., husband of Henry's daughter Matilda, dies (23 May).

1126. Henry I. and his queen return to England with his daughter the Empress Matilda (Sep.). In order to insure a peaceable succession to the crown, Henry calls a great council at London (25 Dec.), and all the chief men, including Stephen of Blois, Count of Mortain and Boulogne, swear to receive Matilda as their "Lady" (*i.e.*, as queen); also Matilda's uncle, David I. of Scotland, who is on a visit to Henry I.

1127. Matilda goes to Normandy and marries Geoffrey, a son of Fulk, Count of Anjou (26 Aug.). Her father, King Henry, is present. The marriage is unpopular with the Normans on account of their enmity with the Angevins. Henry returns to England.

1128. Another rebellion against Henry breaks out in Normandy, under William Clito, now Earl of Flanders. Henry goes over, and William Clito is accidentally killed (27 July). A rebellion breaks out in England; and Waleran, Count of Meulan, is imprisoned for taking part in it.

The new order of Cistercians (founded in 1098 at Citeaux, near Dijon, in Côte d'Or, France) establish their first house in England at Waverley, in Surrey.

Geoffrey of Monmouth, a Welshman of Norman descent, publishes his *Historia Britonum* ("History of the Britons"), in Latin.

1129. Henry of Blois, a younger brother of Stephen, and a nephew of Henry I., is made Bishop of Winchester (11 Oct.), and consecrated (17 Nov.).

A great earthquake is felt in England (6 Dec.).

1131. A gemot held at Northampton renews the oath of succession in favor of Matilda (Sep.).

1133. A fire burns down the greater part of London.

Henry (afterwards king), a son of Matilda and Geoffrey of Anjou, is born at Le Mans, in Anjou.

Henry I. summons his last gemot, and the oath of succession of Matilda is renewed, her infant son being included in it.

Robert Pulein or Pulleyn, a Breton, reads lectures on the Bible, at Oxford, the beginning of its history as a seat of learning.

1135. A total eclipse of the sun is seen in England, which is held to presage coming disasters.

Henry's elder brother, Robert Courthose, ex-Duke of Normandy, dies in prison at Bristol (10 Feb.).

Henry I. dies in Normandy (1 Dec.), and his body is embalmed and brought to England, and buried at the abbey of Reading, in Berkshire, built by himself. Stephen of Blois, Count of Mortain and Boulogne (Henry's nephew), is present at Henry's death. Notwithstanding his oath of fealty to Matilda in 1126, he goes to London, and gets himself chosen king by the citizens and the Witan. After some hesitation, William de Curbellio, Archbishop of Canterbury, crowns him (26 Dec.). He puts forth a charter repeating the promise of good laws made by Henry I., and being personally popular, his succession is ratified by general consent.

David I., King of Scotland, declares in favor of his niece Matilda, but Stephen buys him off by the cession of Carlisle and the grant of the earldom of Huntingdon to his son.

1136. Baldwin of Redvers, Earl of Devon, rebels, and holds Exeter Castle against the king, and Miles of Beauchamp holds Bedford Castle against him, recognizing Stephen merely as feudal lord and not as national king. Stephen compels their submission, but weakly compromises and grants terms to the garrison of Exeter.

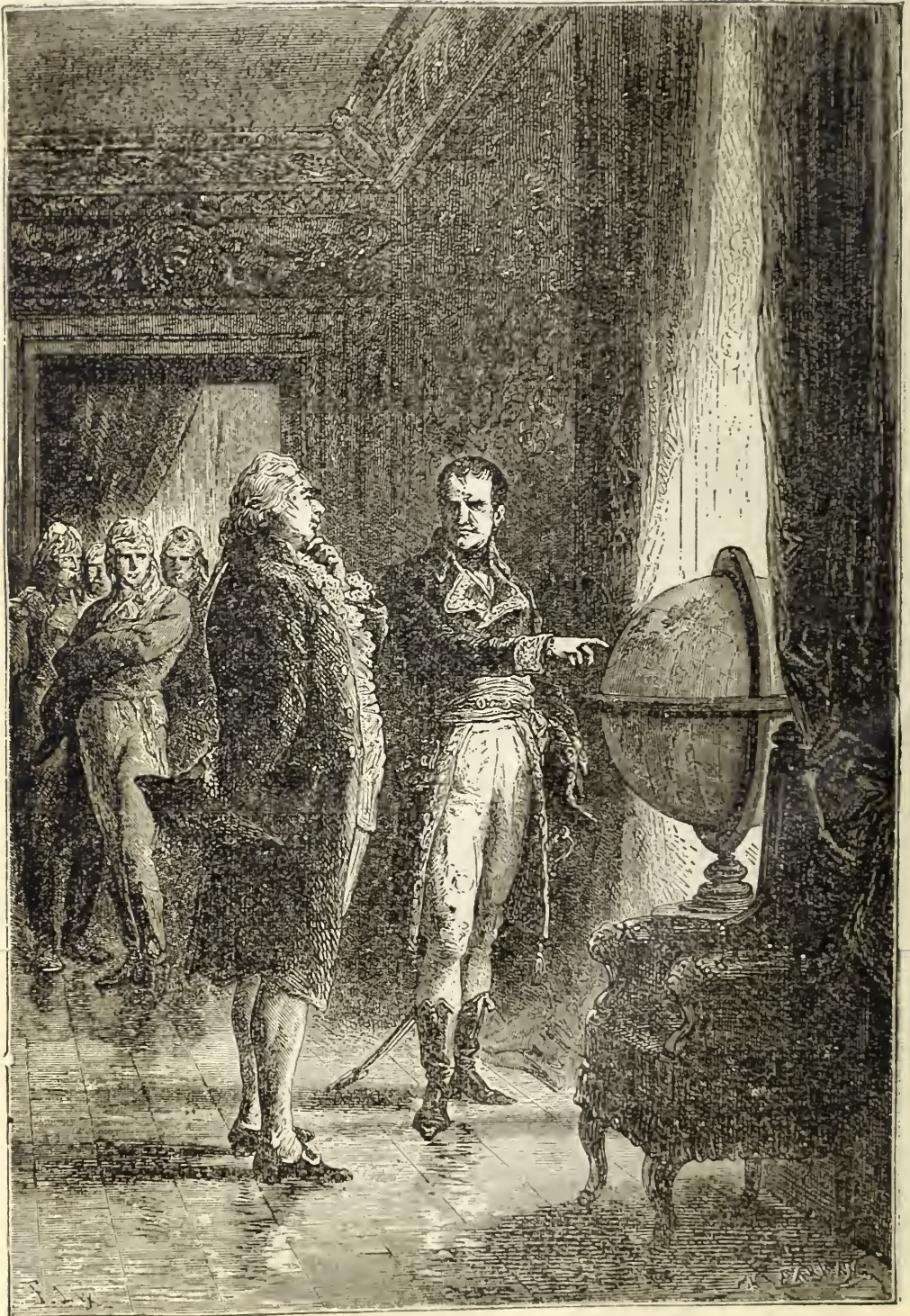
1137. Stephen makes a successful expedition to Normandy, and makes peace with Geoffrey of Anjou, Matilda's husband. Stephen's son Eustace does homage to Louis VI., King of France, for the Duchy of Normandy.

1138. David I., King of Scotland, invades Yorkshire, but is defeated at "the battle of the Standard," at Northallerton, in Yorkshire, by the English under Thurston, Archbishop of York (22 Aug.).

Robert, Earl of Gloucester, an illegitimate son of Henry I. (and therefore a half-brother of Matilda), rebels against the king. Stephen, instead of relying on his English subjects, hires Flemish and Breton mercenaries to put down the revolt. He also foolishly tries to win over the feudal lords by concessions and gifts, thereby creating jealousy against himself, and



MASSACRE AT QUIBERON.—P. 308.



MR. FOX AND NAPOLEON BONAPARTE.—P. 309.



SIMNEL PRESENTED TO THE EARL OF KILDARE.—P. 215.



LANDING OF HENRY VIII. AT CALAIS.—P. 233.

leading each lord to deem himself a petty monarch. When he has no more to give, they revolt, build feudal castles all over the country, and make war on each other and on the people.

Theobald, Abbot of Bec, in Normandy, comes to England at the invitation of Stephen. He is elected Archbishop of Canterbury (Dec.).

1139. Theobald is consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury (8 Jan.). Henry, Bishop of Winchester, is appointed papal legate.

Having been falsely informed that Roger le Poer, Bishop of Salisbury and Justiciary of the kingdom, and the Bishop of Lincoln are conspiring against him, Stephen seizes them while at his court at Oxford, and compels them to surrender their castles (June). He refuses to reinstate them, whereupon the whole clergy, with his brother Henry, Bishop of Winchester, at their head, fall away from him; all government ceases, and the country is given over to anarchy and ruin.

Matilda and her half-brother Robert, Earl of Gloucester, come from Anjou and land at Portsmouth, in Hants, with a small force (30 Sep.). Robert goes to his castle at Bristol, leaving Matilda at Arundel Castle with her stepmother, Adeline, the widow of Henry I. Stephen besieges the castle, but in accordance with the chivalry of the time, allows Matilda to depart, giving her safe-conduct to Bristol Castle under the escort of his brother Henry of Blois, Bishop of Winchester, and Waleran, Earl of Mellent.

1140. Ranulf, Earl of Chester (a son-in-law of Robert of Gloucester), though he has received favors from the king, rebels against him, and goes over to the Empress Matilda's side; he captures Lincoln Castle by surprise.

Stephen's queen, Matilda, with her son Eustace (4 years old), goes to France to make alliances; and Eustace is married to Constance, a sister of Louis VII., King of France. Louis, as overlord of Normandy, invests Eustace with the duchy. Queen Matilda sends to England bands of foreign mercenaries from Boulogne and Normandy, whose conduct has an injurious effect on Stephen's cause.

1141. At the request of the citizens of Lincoln Stephen lays siege to the castle; Ranulf escapes, and he and Robert, Earl of Gloucester, advance to its relief, and defeat Stephen at Lincoln (2 Feb.), make him prisoner, and confine him in Bristol Castle. The empress wins over Henry of Blois, the legate, and enters Winchester in triumph (7 Feb.), David I., King of Scotland, being with her; and Henry of Blois excommunicates Stephen's adherents.

Archbishop Theobald visits Stephen in prison and asks permission to transfer his allegiance to the empress.

Henry of Blois (now the principal power in England) calls a synod of bishops and abbots at Winchester (7 Ap.), which elects the Empress Matilda "Lady of England." Many of Stephen's adherents are executed.

Stephen's queen, Matilda, returns from Normandy and appeals to the citizens of London to aid her; they send delegates to the synod at Winchester praying the release of Stephen (9 Ap.); this is refused, and after negotiations, the delegates acknowledge the empress as "Lady" (24 June). Stephen's queen also writes to the synod, but Henry of Blois dissolves it, and declares the empress duly elected.

On receiving the news of the battle of Lincoln Geoffrey of Anjou persuades the barons in Normandy to transfer their allegiance from Eustace to the Empress Matilda and her son Henry.

Stephen's queen sues the empress for Stephen's release, and her suit is backed by Henry of Blois; the empress rejects her appeal; and also refuses the request of Henry of Blois that Stephen's son Eustace might be placed in possession of his father's fiefs of Boulogne and Mortain; and Henry goes over again to the side of his brother Stephen. He also, at the entreaty of Stephen's wife, absolves Stephen's followers from excommunication. The empress obtains possession of Oxford Castle, and goes to London to get crowned queen, but offends the people by her pride and her demands for money. An army of citizens gather in the streets, and she and her adherents flee towards Oxford; her followers desert her, and she enters Oxford with only Robert of Gloucester and David I. of Scotland. Having collected forces they occupy Winchester, but Henry of Blois fortifies his castle there and holds it against them.

Stephen's queen, Matilda, who has held Kent for him, advances to London with a large force; the citizens welcome her joyfully, and the united forces advance, and, at "the rout of Winchester" (14 Sep.), defeat the empress, burn Winchester, and capture Robert of Gloucester and send him to Rochester Castle, in Kent. The empress and David of Scotland flee to Lutgershall, and thence to Devizes (in Wilts) and Gloucester. The Earl of Gloucester's wife Aimabel, who has the custody of Stephen at Bristol, exchanges him for her husband (1 Nov.).

Henry of Blois holds a council at Westminster, and excommunicates the Empress Matilda's adherents (7 Dec.).

1142. Stephen resumes hostilities successfully, and the empress sends to her husband Geoffrey (now in possession of Normandy) for aid. He refuses it, unless Robert of Gloucester will come and ask for it in person. Robert goes to Normandy, leaving Matilda at Oxford Castle. Stephen besieges her there for three months, but she escapes (20 Dec.) in the night in the snow, clad in white so as not to be seen, walks six miles to Abingdon, and there takes horse to Wallingford in Berkshire, where she is welcomed by Robert, who has returned from Normandy with her son Henry (now 9 years old). Geoffrey remains in Normandy with his other son Geoffrey. Henry remains in England for four years.

1143. Robert of Gloucester defeats Stephen at Wilton (in Wiltshire), and Stephen and his brother, Henry of Blois, retreat.

Stephen gets his nephew William Fitzherbert elected Archbishop of York; the great Cistercian houses of the north oppose the election as having been procured by undue influence, one of the strongest opponents being Henry Murdach, Abbot of Fountains. In consequence of this opposition some of Fitzherbert's kinsmen sack the abbey of Fountains.

Stephen seizes Geoffrey of Mandeville, Earl of Essex, while at his court at St. Albans, compels him to give up his castles, and then releases him. Geoffrey raises a band of men, ravages the country, takes Cambridge and Ramsey Abbey, and converts it into a stronghold for his troops, but is at last slain by the king's forces.

Pope Innocent III. dies; Celestine II. becomes pope. Innocent had favored Stephen's side, but Celestine reverses this policy, and, at the instance of Thomas à Becket, a clerk in Theobald's household (afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury), appoints Theobald papal legate in place of Henry of Blois, Bishop of Winchester.

1144-45. The civil war goes on with varying success.

1145. Eugenius III. becomes pope; he also favors the cause of the Empress Matilda and her son Henry against Stephen.

1146. Geoffrey of Anjou sends for his son Henry, who returns to Normandy.

1147. Robert, Earl of Gloucester, dies at Gloucester (31 Oct.), and is buried at Bristol. The Empress Matilda retires to Normandy (Nov.), and sends over her son Henry (now 14) to carry on the contest. He and his cousin Roger of Warwick hold Worcester and its castle, and repel an attack by the royal forces.

Stephen and his queen keep their Christmas at Lincoln, and several barons take the oath of fealty to Eustace (now 12) as heir-apparent.

The pope deprives William Fitzherbert (Stephen's nominee) of the see of York, and makes Henry Murdach (Abbot of the Fountains) archbishop.

1148. Stephen, on account of the pope's adverse action, forbids the English bishops to attend the Council of Rheims. Theobald, Archbishop of Canterbury, disobeys the injunction, and Stephen banishes him. Theobald excommunicates Stephen and his adherents, and the pope lays England under an interdict. Stephen gives way, restores Theobald, and recognizes Murdach as Archbishop of York.

Stephen and his queen found the royal abbey at Feversham in Kent.

1149. The young prince, Henry of Anjou (now 16 years old), goes from Normandy to Scotland, and is knighted by his uncle King David I. Stephen gathers an army to meet their expected invasion, and Henry, not being strong enough to risk a battle, returns to Normandy, which Geoffrey makes over to him as its duke.

Theobald brings Vacarius from Rome to lecture on the civil law at Oxford.

1151. Matilda of Boulogne, Stephen's queen, dies (3 May), aged about 45, and is buried at her own recently erected abbey at Feversham. She leaves three children, Eustace, William, and Mary.

Louis VII., King of France, as overlord of Normandy, confers the duchy upon Henry of Anjou (now 18). Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou, dies (7 Sept.); his son Henry succeeds him, becoming Count of Anjou, Touraine, and Maine, as well as Duke of Normandy.

Stephen sends his son Eustace (now 16) to the court of Louis VII., who, having quarrelled with Henry of Anjou, re-invests Eustace with the Duchy of Normandy and attacks it; Henry successfully defends himself.

Theobald holds a council at London, which adopts the cause of Henry, as successor to Stephen.

1152. Henry of Anjou marries Eleanor of Aquitaine (18 May), and thereby becomes master of Aquitaine.

Stephen asks Theobald to crown his son Eustace as the acknowledged heir to the throne, but neither he nor any bishop will perform the ceremony. Theobald produces a letter or bull from Pope Eugenius III. forbidding them to allow it. This bull has been procured by the foresight of Thomas à

Becket. Stephen is incensed at the refusal, and Theobald sends Thomas a Becket to Normandy to invite Henry of Anjou to come to England to assert his right to the succession.

William, eldest son of Henry of Anjou, is born.

1153. Henry, having made a truce with Louis VII., lands in England (Jan.) with a small force, and being joined by other troops advances to relieve Wallingford, where Bryan Fitz-Count (a partisan of Henry's) is being besieged by Eustace, Stephen having gone to London to raise men and supplies. Stephen comes to Wallingford and opens negotiations for peace with Henry, but nothing is settled, and the armies separate. Bigot declares for Henry and holds Ipswich in Suffolk for him. Stephen goes to besiege the town, ravaging the country and plundering the monastery of Bury St. Edmunds on the way. Henry goes by way of Nottingham to relieve Ipswich. Eustace dies (18 Aug.), most likely of brain-fever, and is buried beside his mother at Feversham Abbey. Through the intervention of Theobald and Henry, Bishop of Winchester, a formal treaty between Stephen and Henry of Anjou is signed at Winchester (7 Nov.), Stephen to remain king as long as he lives, Henry to succeed him, and Stephen's sole surviving son William to take the countships of Boulogne and Mortain. Stephen adopts Henry as his son and heir, and the barons swear fealty to him at Oxford as their future king.

Henry de Pudsey (or Puisey), a nephew of Stephen's, is made Bishop of Durham. David I., King of Scotland, dies (24 May); his grandson Malcolm IV. succeeds him.

1154. While riding near Dover, Stephen's son William attempts to capture Henry of Anjou, but is thrown from his horse and breaks his leg. Henry escapes to Canterbury, and then goes to Normandy. Stephen dies at Dover Priory (25 Oct.), aged about 60, and is buried beside his wife at Feversham Abbey. Henry Plantagenet of Anjou succeeds to the throne without disturbance as Henry II.

With Stephen the Norman line of William the Conqueror may be said to terminate. During his anarchical reign the condition of England was more dreadful than it has been at any other period of its history. A terrible picture of the horrors of the time is drawn in the contemporary pages of the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle. "When the traitors [*i.e.*, the barons] perceived that he [Stephen] was a mild man, and soft and good, and did no justice, then did they all wonder. They had done homage to him, and sworn oaths, but kept no faith; for every powerful man made his castles, and held them against him, and they filled the land full of castles. They cruelly

oppressed the wretched men of the land with castle-works. When the castles were made they filled them with devils and evil men. Then they took those men that they thought had any property, both by night and by day, peasant men and women, and put them in prison for their gold and silver, and tortured them with unutterable tortures; for never were martyrs so tortured as they were. They hanged up men by their feet and smoked them with foul smoke. Some were hanged up by their thumbs, others by the head, and burning things were hung on to their feet. They put knotted strings about men's heads, and writhed them till they went to the brain. They put men into dungeons where adders and snakes and toads were crawling, and killed them so. Some they put into a chest, short and narrow, and not deep, and that had sharp stones within, and forced men therein so that they broke all their limbs. In many of the castles were hateful and grim things called rachenteges, which two or three men had enough to do to carry. It was thus made: it was fastened to a beam, and had a sharp iron to go about a man's neck and throat, so that he might noways sit, or lie, or sleep, but he bore all the iron. Many thousands they killed with hunger; I cannot and may not tell all the wounds or all the tortures which they inflicted on wretched men in this land, and that lasted the nineteen years while Stephen was king; and ever it was worse and worse. They laid imposts on the towns continually, and when the wretched men had no more to give they robbed and burned all the towns, so that thou mightest well go all a day's journey and thou should'st never find a man sitting in a town, or the land tilled. Then was corn dear, and flesh, and cheese, and butter, for there was none in the land; wretched men starved with hunger; some lived on alms who had ere-while been rich; some fled the country; never yet had more wretchedness been in the land, nor never acted heathens worse than these. At length they spared neither church nor churchyard, but they took all that was valuable therein, and then burned the church and all together. Nor forbore they a bishop's land, nor an abbot's, nor a priest's, but robbed monks and clerks, and every man another who anywhere could. If two or three men came riding to a town, all the township fled before them, imagining them to be robbers. The bishops and the clergy constantly cursed them, but nothing came of it; for they were all accursed, and forsworn, and lost. However a man tilled, the earth bare no corn, for the land was all foredone by such deeds; and they said openly that Christ and his saints slept."

CHAPTER VII.

THE ANGEVIN OR PLANTAGENET KINGS.—THE STRUGGLE FOR
SUPREMACY BETWEEN THE CROWN AND THE
FEUDAL ARISTOCRACY.

1154. Henry Plantagenet of Anjou (now 21), after repressing an insurrection in Guienne, and securing the friendship of Louis VII., comes to England (7 Dec.), and is crowned at Westminster Abbey, as Henry II. (19 Dec.). He is now ruler of England, Normandy, Maine, Touraine, Anjou, and Aquitaine; also overlord (in some sort) of Wales and Scotland, and after 1166 of Brittany, and after 1172 of Ireland.

He appoints Thomas à Becket (already Archdeacon of Canterbury and Provost of Beverly) his chancellor, and guardian of the Tower of London.

Eugenius III. dies, and Nicholas Breakspear, the only Englishman who has ever filled the office, is made pope as Adrian IV.

1154-6. During these years Henry destroys an immense number (1150 according to some authorities) of feudal castles throughout the country, and brings the great feudal lords into subjection.

1155. He expels Peveril (who had poisoned Ranulf, Earl of Chester) from his earldom of Nottingham (Feb.).

Malcolm IV., King of Scotland, invades England and occupies the three northern counties; Henry marches against him, compels him to restore them, and makes him do homage as Earl of Huntingdon, which he had claimed as a descendant of Waltheof.

Prince Henry, the king's second son, is born at London (28 Feb.).

Pope Adrian IV. issues a bull authorizing Henry to conquer Ireland.

1156. Henry II.'s younger brother Geoffrey claims Anjou, and Henry, leaving the administration of English affairs to Robert, Earl of Leicester, his justiciary, goes over and reduces Anjou by force of arms. On the invitation of the people of

Nantes, Geoffrey goes there and becomes their lord. Henry returns to England and completes the defeat of Malcolm IV. by recapturing the castles at Bamborough, Newcastle, and Carlisle; Malcolm again does homage to him for Huntingdon, and for several years follows Henry to his wars as a great English noble.

Henry II. has fealty sworn to his eldest son William (now 4), as future king; but William dies soon after, leaving Prince Henry as heir-apparent.

1157. Henry leads an expedition into Wales against Owen Gwynneth at the instigation of Cadwallader, his fugitive brother, but is unsuccessful. This occasion is noteworthy as being the first on which money was accepted instead of the personal service required by feudal custom. This money-payment, called "scutage" (or shield-money), did much to weaken the feudal lords by enabling their tenants to exempt themselves from personal service and so cease to be soldiers.

Henry's third son Richard ("the lion-hearted") is born at Oxford (13 Sep.).

1158. Henry's brother Geoffrey dies, and Henry goes to Normandy to take possession of Nantes as his heir. To effect this object he sends Becket as ambassador to Louis VII. to ask his daughter Margaret in marriage for Prince Henry (now 3 years old). King Henry meets Louis on the Epte, returns with him to Paris, and receives from Louis the young princess, whom he entrusts to Robert of Neuburg, Judiciary of Normandy. Henry then secures Nantes without difficulty, and with it a hold on Brittany.

Geoffrey, fourth son of Henry II., is born (23 Sep.).

1159. Henry undertakes "the War of Toulouse," to enforce his wife's claims to the country of Toulouse (the country along the Mediterranean between Toulouse and the Rhone.) Malcolm of Scotland joins him with 45 ships; a Welsh prince also joins the army, and Becket comes at the head of 700 well-armed men. The practice of paying scutage in lieu of personal service is now definitively established, the payment being fixed at two marks for every knight's fee.* Louis VII. of France goes to the aid of Toulouse, and Henry refrains from attacking him, but gains his object by ravaging the country and capturing the castles.

He makes a contract of marriage between his son Richard

* A mark was 13s. 4d., and as there were at this time about 60,000 knight's fees in England, the total sum which ought to have been raised was £80,000. The sum actually paid seems not to have been more than £16,000.

(now 2 years old) and Berengaria, the daughter of Count Raymond of Barcelona in Spain.

1160. Henry II. and Louis VII. make a treaty of alliance (Oct.), and Prince Henry (now 5 years old) is formally betrothed to Louis's daughter Margaret, and the marriage takes place (2 Nov.).

1161. Theobald, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (18 Ap.). Henry, acting in conjunction with Louis VII. of France, and with the same object as the Emperor Frederick Barbarossa, has determined to check the growing pretensions of the Church, which has for some time claimed, among other innovations, that ecclesiastics are not amenable to secular jurisdiction.* Henry, deeming Becket a good instrument to effect his intended reforms, offers him the vacant see, but he declines it.

1162. Becket is prevailed on to accept, and is ordained priest and elected archbishop (24 May) and consecrated (27 May).

1163. He attends the Council of Tours (19 May), and returns filled with high notions as to the power of the Church. He resigns his chancellorship and other secular offices, and becomes an ambitious and fanatical ecclesiastic. He opposes a change which Henry proposes in the assessment of a certain tax (probably the Danegeld), and they quarrel in consequence. He demands homage from some barons as tenants of the see of Canterbury and not of the king, and refuses to pay the customary tax for the sheriff. An ecclesiastic named Philip Brois commits a murder, and is found guilty at the Dunstable assizes. Becket insists on his being withdrawn from the secular jurisdiction, and sentences him to two years' loss of his benefice. Henry, incensed at this miscarriage of justice, calls a council at Westminster (Oct.), and demands of the bishops whether they will accept the ancient customs of the country; and they all, including Becket, agree to accept them, adding, however, by Becket's advice, the words, "saving their order."

1164. Henry, so as to bind the clergy beyond equivocation, has these customs put into writing, and he calls a coun-

* This and other preposterous claims were based upon the False Decretals and the Decretal of Gratian. The genuine Decretals are letters of the early popes answering questions raised by the bishops, and were first collected in 550 by Dionysius Exiguus. The False or Isidorian Decretals were similar letters purporting to be written by the early popes, exaggerating the papal authority, forged between 835 and 845, and interpolated into the collection of genuine decretals; they were sanctioned by Pope Nicholas I. about 860. Gratian's Decretal was a collection of papal decisions produced for the first time in 1151 by Gratian, a Benedictine monk of Tuscany.

cil at Clarendon (25 Jan.), near Marlborough, in Wilts, which passes them in the form known as "the Constitutions of Clarendon," containing 16 clauses. Ecclesiastics guilty of crimes were to be amenable to the civil courts; questions as to land claimed by the clergy were to be tried by a jury; the king was to be the ultimate hearer of appeals; bishops were not to excommunicate the king's men or to leave the country without license; elections of bishops were to be held in the king's chapel, with the consent of those whom he should summon, and the bishop elected was to swear fealty to the king. Becket, after much hesitation, seals these constitutions (25 Jan.). The pope, Alexander III., refuses to acknowledge their validity, whereupon Becket repents of having accepted them, and gets absolution from the pope for having done so.

Henry, apparently determined to compel Becket's submission, calls a council at Northampton (7 Oct.), at which three suits are brought against him for lands and money, and he is also ordered to account for the sum of 30,000 marks received by him as chancellor from vacant benefices. On resigning the chancellorship he had been discharged from all liability on this account by Prince Henry and Richard de Lucy the justiciary, but not by the king. Becket declines to plead to the charge, places himself and the Church under the protection of the pope and of God, leaves Northampton at night (13 Oct.), crosses the Channel, lands at Gravelines in Flanders (2 Nov.), and takes refuge in the abbey of St. Bertin, and afterward at the Cistercian Abbey at Pontigny in Burgundy. Both parties appeal to Pope Alexander III., then at Sens in France, who, though leaning to the side of Becket, decides nothing. Henry confiscates the revenues of the see of Canterbury, banishes all Becket's adherents, and forbids all intercourse between England and the pope.

1165. The Emperor Frederick Barbarossa sends his chancellor, Reginald of Cologne, to England to ask two of Henry's daughters in marriage, one for his son, the other for Henry the Lion, of Saxony. Henry sends an embassy in return with a view to joint action with Frederick against the pope. The pope now temporizes with Henry.

Henry again invades Wales without much success.

1166. A treaty of marriage is made between Henry's fourth son Geoffrey, and Constance, the daughter of Conan of Brittany and Richmond, who grants Brittany (except Guingamp) to Henry; the barons of Brittany swear fealty to Henry at Thouars.

A council at Oxford condemns 30 German heretics, who, being branded and cast out, die of hunger.

Henry, at the Assize of Clarendon, establishes a new judicial system, formally instituting the jury system in criminal trials.

The pope returns from Sens to Rome, and Becket, freed from his moderating influence, goes to Vezelay, and in the church there excommunicates those who have entered into possession of his confiscated estates in England, and also the Archdeacon of Canterbury for not remitting the income of the see (12 June).

Diarmid or Dermot, King of Leinster, being driven from Ireland, comes to Henry II. and offers to become his vassal, if reinstated. Henry refuses the offer, but allows him to apply to his barons.

1167. The pope, who is in need of all the help he can get to carry on his contest with Frederick Barbarossa, and consequently does not wish to break entirely with Henry, disapproves of Becket's violent proceedings, and with a view to thwart him appoints legates to examine into his dispute with Henry, thus superseding Becket's legatine authority. The legates conditionally remove the excommunications pronounced by Becket, and the pope suspends him from the exercise of his office as archbishop. Becket, however, repeats his excommunications.

Louis VII. of France makes war on Henry; disturbances break out in Brittany; and the Counts of Marche, Angoulême, and Limousin lay waste his dominions in south-west France.

1168. Henry suppresses the disturbances in Brittany.

The pope sends him a commission, and he is compelled virtually to accept Becket's demands, but the quarrel still remains open.

1169. Henry II. makes peace at Montmirail (6 Jan.) with Louis VII. and his other enemies. He meets Becket at Montmirail in the presence of Louis, but Becket refuses to submit except with the condition, "saving the honor of God," and nothing is done. Another equally fruitless meeting takes place at Montmatre. The pope is anxious to end the quarrel, and absolves the Bishops of London and Salisbury whom Becket had excommunicated.

At the invitation of Diarmid, or Dermot, King of Leinster, in Ireland, Robert Fitz-Stephen and his half-brother Maurice Fitzgerald, with a band of about 600 Welsh and Normans, cross from Wales to Wexford (24 June), to assist Dermot against Roderic O'Connor of Connaught.

1170. Henry II. has his eldest surviving son, Henry (now 15), crowned at Westminster as heir-apparent by the Archbishop of York and other prelates (14 June). This being an invasion of the rights of the Archbishop of Canterbury, produces a great outcry, and Becket threatens to lay England under an interdict; Louis VII. of France is also angry because his daughter Margaret (Prince Henry's wife) was not crowned with him. The feeling is so strong that Henry yields completely, goes over to France, and at Frétheval or Frétaval (near Blois) meets Becket, and is outwardly reconciled to him (22 July), though Henry still refuses the kiss of peace. Henry remains in France; but Becket ventures back to England (1 Dec.), and continues his obstinate course by excommunicating the lay occupants of the property of his see, and also the Archbishop of York and the Bishops of London and Salisbury, the last three for having taken part in the coronation of Prince Henry. When King Henry in Normandy hears of these proceedings, he cries out in rage: "Will no one deliver me from this turbulent priest?" Four of his knights, William de Tracy, Hugh de Morville, Richard Brito, and Reginald Fitz-Urse, take him at his word, cross over to England, demand from the archbishop the withdrawal of the excommunications against the bishops, and on his refusal they murder him on the steps of the altar of Canterbury Cathedral (29 Dec.). On 3 Mar., 1173, he was canonized by Pope Alexander III. as St. Thomas; and his shrine at Canterbury was for three centuries the favorite place of pilgrimage for Englishmen. His saint's day is 29 Dec., the day of his death.

At the invitation of Dermot, King of Leinster, Richard of Clare, Count of Strigul and Earl of Pembroke (surnamed Strongbow), following in the wake of Robert Fitz-Stephen, sails from Milford Haven to Wexford with a larger force (Aug.). He takes Waterford and Dublin, and marries Dermot's daughter Eva.

1171. Henry II. sends ambassadors to the pope, to deny all complicity with Becket's murder. The pope excommunicates the murderers, and appoints legates to ascertain the guilty parties. Henry returns from France to England.

Dermot, King of Leinster, dies, and Strongbow, as his son-in-law and heir, succeeds him as king. Henry, dreading the establishment of an independent Norman power in Ireland by his own vassal, determines to go thither himself. Pope Alexander III. grants him a bull (confirming that of Adrian IV. of 1155) authorizing the conquest of Ireland, in order that (in the words of the bull itself) "the barbarous

people of Ireland, by your means, be recovered from their filthy life and abominable conversation ; that, as in name, so in manners and conversation, they may be Christians." Henry reaches Waterford (18 Oct.) with a fleet of 400 ships and an army of 4000 or 5000 men, and Strongbow and several Irish chiefs swear fealty to him as their lord. Roderic O'Connor, the overking of the island, receives his envoys.

All the Irish bishops and archbishops take the oath of fealty to Henry, and at the Synod of Cashel (6 Nov.) the Roman discipline is introduced. Henry goes to Dublin (12 Nov.), and, in a wooden palace just outside the walls, grants various lands in Ireland to his vassals ; English colonists are placed in Dublin and other towns ; and he makes Hugh de Lacy Earl of Meath and viceroy.

1172. Henry II. leaves Ireland (17 Ap.). Prince Henry is recrowned, his wife Margaret, daughter of Louis VII., being crowned with him. Henry II. goes to Normandy (May), and at Avranches meets the papal legates (21 May) ; he swears that he had no hand in the murder of Becket, and, among other things, promises to support Alexander III. against the anti-pope and to abrogate the Constitutions of Clarendon ; whereupon the pope becomes reconciled with him. The question of the supremacy of the civil power was, however, in reality still left open.

1173. Richard Fitz-Gislebert, Earl of Pembroke, is made viceroy in Ireland. Eleanor, King Henry's queen, having become estranged from him, encourages their sons to rebel against him. For this offence she is imprisoned for 16 years, till Henry's death in 1189. The king's sons, Henry, Richard, and Geoffrey, flee to France (8 Mar.).

1174. Henry arranges for a marriage between his youngest son John and the daughter of Count Humbold of Savoy, promising to give Chinon, Loudon, and Mirabeau to John. Prince Henry protests against the treaty, goes to Louis VII. at St. Denis, and they make war on Henry, against whom a general insurrection breaks out, the outcome of the feeling roused against him by Becket's death. Aquitaine and Brittany revolt ; the earls of middle and northern England revolt ; the Flemings, headed by the Earl of Leicester, invade Suffolk ; Philip of Flanders assembles a fleet at Whitsand ; Henry's sons Richard and Geoffrey join the insurgents ; William the Lion, King of Scotland, invades Northumberland, and after besieging in vain the border castles, advances to Alnwick.

The Flemings are defeated at Farnham. near Bury St. Edmunds, in Suffolk ; Henry wins a great battle at Dol in

Brittany, returns to England, and does penance at Becket's shrine at Canterbury (12 July); Ranulf de Glanvil defeats the Scotch at Alnwick and takes William the Lion prisoner (13 July); and by July the English nobles return to their allegiance, and Prince David withdraws the remnant of the Scot-tish force. Henry returns to Normandy and raises the siege of Rouen (14 Aug.); the insurrection is finally put down, and Henry and Louis VII. make peace. Henry grants to his son Richard two castles in Poitou, with half its revenues; and to his son Geoffrey two castles in Brittany, with half its revenues. William the Lion is released (8 Dec.) on condition of swearing fealty to Henry.

Bulls from Rome are received and accepted in Ireland, authorizing Henry's conquest of the country, and the collection of Peter's pence.

Richard, Prior of Dover, is appointed to the see of Canterbury, vacant since Becket's death in 1170.

1175. Henry II. holds a council at Windsor at which Roderic O'Connor, the Irish king, makes his submission; a treaty is made by which he agrees to pay a yearly tribute and is acknowledged as chief of all the Irish princes save King Henry and his knights. Outside the small district actually conquered, and known as the English Pale, the native Irish laws, known as the Brehon Law, continue to prevail. The English Pale was at this time nearly coextensive with the present counties of Louth, Meath, part of Westmeath, Dublin, Kildare, and Wicklow, occupying about one-tenth of the island. In consequence of repeated attacks from the Irish outside it shrank in size, till by the time of Henry VII. (1485) it had become reduced to about half of its original area.

William the Lion of Scotland, his brother, and all his barons, come to York and swear fealty to Henry, doing homage for Scotland, for Galloway, and for their English possessions; and the Scotch clergy acknowledge the supremacy of the Archbishop of York.

1176. Prince Henry leaves the court of Louis VII. and becomes reconciled to his father, King Henry II.

A great Assize is held at Northampton, at which judicial and constitutional changes are made, and the country is divided into six circuits.

1178. Henry II. restricts the Curia Regis ("King's Court") to five persons, reserving final appeals to himself and the old Curia Regis, which becomes his ordinary council, now represented by the Privy Council.

1179. Louis VII., King of France, makes a pilgrimage to Becket's tomb at Canterbury (Sep.).

1180. Louis VII., King of France, dies (18 Sep.); his son Philip Augustus (Philip II.) succeeds him, and proves as inimical to Henry II. as his father had been.

1181. The Assize of Arms revives and reorganizes the old national militia, or fyrd of the Anglo-Saxon times; all freemen are required to furnish arms suited to their rank and means.

1183. The barons of Aquitaine, under Bertram de Born, rise against the rule of Henry's son Richard, and are joined by Henry's other sons, Prince Henry and Geoffrey of Brittany, backed by Philip II. King Henry goes to the assistance of Richard; Prince Henry dies at Martel, near Limoges (11 June); and King Henry and Richard subdue the refractory barons.

1184. Henry II., as a recompense for his assistance, demands from Richard a part of Aquitaine for his favorite son John; Richard refuses it, and his brothers John and Geoffrey make war on him. Henry II. commands them to make peace; and the three brothers are reconciled at a council held in London (30 Nov.).

Heraclius, Bishop of Jerusalem, comes to France and England to urge the two kings to undertake a new crusade.

1185. Geoffrey demands Anjou from his father Henry II., and on being refused, goes to Philip II., King of France.

1186. Geoffrey is accidentally killed at a tournament in Paris (19 Aug.), and Philip II., as overlord of Brittany, claims the guardianship of his young son Arthur.

1187. War again breaks out between Henry II. and Philip II.

At the great battle of Hettin or Tiberias (4 July), in Palestine, the Christians are defeated by the Mohammedans under Saladin; Saladin captures Jerusalem (2 Oct.), and a third crusade for its recovery is decided on.

1188. In order to be free to join in the crusade, Henry II. and Philip II. meet under an old elm at Gisors (the usual place of treaty between the English and French kings) and make peace (18 Nov.). Henry imposes a tax ("the Saladin tax") of a tenth on all property in England, to cover the expenses of the crusade.

1189. Richard (Henry's son) attacks Raymond of Toulouse, a feudatory of Philip II.; Philip thereupon vows eternal hostility against the English, and has the old elm at Gisors cut down. Richard quarrels with his father, and, with other

nobles, goes over to the side of Philip II., who attacks Henry II. successfully, capturing Le Mans and Tours (14 June). Henry thereupon meets Philip II. and Richard at Colombières and makes submission, promising to pay Philip 50,000 marks for the restoration of the territory conquered by him (28 June). Henry asks for a list of those who had joined Richard in rebellion, and on finding at the head of it the name of his favorite son John, he dies of a broken heart (6 July) at Chinon, aged 56. His rebellious son Richard "the lion-hearted" succeeds him.

Richard I. liberates his mother Eleanor (July), arrives in England (13 Aug.), is crowned at Westminster Abbey (3 Sep.).

Jews* are prohibited from attending the consecration of Richard as king; some of them attend in spite of the prohibition and are attacked by the soldiery, which leads to assaults upon them in all parts of London and in other places in England, so that some purchase safety by conversion.

In order to procure money to pay the expenses of joining the crusade, Richard puts up for sale all offices, including earldoms, bishoprics, seats on the judicial bench, and city charters, and relinquishes the overlordship of Scotland for 10,000 marks (5 Dec.). Richard then leaves England (11 Dec.) to join in the third crusade, constituting William Longchamp (Bishop of Ely, chancellor, chief justiciary, and papal legate) regent during his absence.

1190. The persecution of the Jews continues, many being killed in Stamford and Nottingham. In York they take refuge in the castle, and on being besieged, kill their women and children, set fire to the tower, and perish in the flames (17 Mar.).

An English fleet, with troops for the third crusade, sails from Dartmouth in Devonshire (Ap.) to the Mediterranean, reaches Marseilles (22 Aug.), and Messina in Sicily (14 Sep.).

Richard I. collects at Tours an army from his possessions in France, joins Philip II. and the French forces at Vezelay (1 July), embarks at Marseilles (7 Aug.), and reaches Messina (23 Sep.).

1191. Philip II. of France sails with his army from Sicily (30 Mar.), and reaches Acre in Syria (20 Ap.).

* Jews had been admitted into England for the first time during the reign of William the Conqueror, and had established themselves in various towns, in separate districts called Jewries. In consequence of their religion they were viewed by the people with hatred and contempt, were not admitted to full citizenship, nor under the protection of the common law, but were entirely in the king's power.

The dowager queen, Eleanor (widow of Henry II.), arrives at Messina with Princess Berengaria, daughter of Sancho VI., King of Navarre. The English fleet sails from Sicily (10 Ap.) for Palestine, but is scattered by a storm ; Berengaria is driven to Cyprus ; Richard I. reaches Rhodes (22 Ap.), goes to Cyprus, and marries Berengaria at Limasol (12 May), and she is crowned queen (12). Richard arrives at Acre (8 June), and it surrenders (12 July). The two kings quarrel, and Philip II. abandons the crusade, and sails from Acre (31 July) for France. Richard defeats the Saracens at Arsouf (7 Sep.).

During Richard's absence his younger brother John, wishing to promote his own speedy succession to the throne, seizes the royal castles at Nottingham and Tickill ; William Longchamp, the regent, instead of upholding Richard's authority, supports the claims of Arthur of Brittany, the son of John's elder brother Geoffrey. Envoys from Richard come to England, and dismiss the regent from his office (10 Oct.) ; he takes refuge in France ; and Walter, Archbishop of Rouen, is put in his place.

1192. Philip II. returns from Palestine to Paris (Dec.), and intrigues with John to make him master of England and Normandy ; the dowager queen, Eleanor (widow of Henry II.), puts a stop to the plot ; but, nevertheless, affairs in England fall into disorder.

Richard I. defeats Saladin (Aug.), but falls ill, and makes a truce with him for three years and eight months (2 Sep.), which gives to Christians freedom of pilgrimage to Jerusalem. Richard sails from Acre (9 Oct.) ; his ship is driven to Corfu (11 Nov.), and afterwards wrecked in the Adriatic ; he lands and attempts to make his way through Germany in disguise, as "Hugh the Merchant." At Vienna he is recognized, seized by Leopold, Duke of Austria (20 Dec.), and by him sold to the emperor, Henry VI. (28 Dec.), who imprisons him at Dürrenstein, on the Danube, about 50 miles west of Vienna.

1193. John, when the news of his brother Richard's imprisonment reaches him, goes over to France and makes an alliance with Philip II., and returning to England, gets possession of Wallingford and Windsor. Philip co-operates by invading Normandy, but meets with a shameful repulse before Rouen.

Richard I. is tried before the diet at Hagenau (after Easter, 28 Mar.) on charges connected with his conduct in Palestine ; he clears himself on oath from the murder of Conrad ; and his ransom is fixed at 150,000 marks (equal to about £1,250,000 in present money), 28 June.

1194. About 70,000 marks having been paid on account of Richard's ransom, and hostages given for the remainder, he is liberated (4 Feb.). An English fleet goes to Antwerp for him, and he lands at Sandwich in Kent (20 Mar.), and John's intrigues against him at once collapse; John's accomplices are punished at a council held at Northampton. Richard, in order to remove the stain of his captivity, has himself recrowned at Winchester (17 Ap.). He then goes to Normandy (May), and begins a war with Philip II., which lasts almost continuously during the remaining 5 years of his reign. He defeats Philip at Frétaval (15 July); the French retire from Normandy, Touraine, and Maine, and beg a year's truce (23 July). During his absence, Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, justiciary and papal legate, administers well the affairs of the country as regent.

1197. Philip II. is taken prisoner by Richard's ally, Baldwin IX., Count of Flanders, but is liberated on promising peace.

1198. Richard I. defeats Philip II. at Gisors (20 Sep.), Philip narrowly escaping with his life.

1199. Through the influence of the pope, a 5 years' truce is made between Richard and Philip (13 Jan.).

Before disbanding his troops, Richard leads them to an attack on the castle of Chaluz, to recover some treasure which he claims from the Count of Limoges. Richard is wounded in the shoulder by an arrow shot by Bertrand de Gourdon (28 Mar.), and dies (6 Ap.), aged 41. Richard is said to have ordered his slayer's life to be spared, but Mercadi, the leader of his mercenaries, has Bertrand flayed and hanged. Richard had named John as his successor, thus setting aside the superior claims of Arthur (now 12 years old), the son of John's elder brother Geoffrey.

Geoffrey's widow Constance takes the young Prince Arthur to Philip II., who invades Normandy; but John, with the assistance of his mother Eleanor (ex-queen of Henry II., now 77 years old), repels the invasion, and is crowned at Rouen (25 Ap.). He had already sent Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, and others to England, where they had compelled the nobles to take the oath of allegiance to him; and John himself now follows, and is crowned at Westminster Abbey (27 May).

1200. Philip II. marries Ingelborga of Denmark, but soon puts her away and marries Agnes de Méranie, whereupon Pope Innocent III. lays France under an interdict; under these circumstances Philip is glad to give up the cause of Arthur and make peace with John (23 May).

John carries off Isabella, the daughter of the Count of Angoulême, from the Count de la Marche, her betrothed husband, and marries her ; and a revolt breaks out in Poitou in consequence. John and Isabella are crowned together at Westminster Abbey (8 Oct.).

William the Lion, King of Scotland, comes to Lincoln, and does homage to John as overlord of Scotland (22 Nov.).

John wants to raise an army to put down the revolt in Poitou, but his barons refuse, meet at Leicester, and demand their rights.

1201. John goes to Paris on the invitation of Philip II. (July) ; the barons of Poitou (probably instigated by Philip) lodge complaints against him ; the feudal Court of Peers gives judgment against him, declaring all the fiefs held by him from Philip II. (including Normandy) forfeit ; and Philip again raises the claims of Arthur.

1202. Arthur (now 15) invades Poitou and besieges Eleanor (his grandmother, the ex-queen of Henry II.) in Mirabeau ; John advances, rescues his mother (31 July), takes Arthur prisoner, and imprisons him at Falaise in Normandy.

1203. Arthur is removed from Falaise to Rouen, in charge of Robert de Vipont, and disappears. The commonly accepted story was that he was there murdered by John (his uncle), and that his body was thrown into the Seine (probably in Ap.). The Norman barons desert John and go over to Philip, and John returns to England (Dec.).

1204-5. Philip II. conquers Normandy (July) and part of Poitou.

1205. Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, and principal minister of John, dies (13 July). The younger monks elect Reginald as his successor ; the elder monks, backed by John, elect John de Grey, Bishop of Norwich. The bishops, not having been consulted, object to both elections. All parties appeal to Pope Innocent III. to settle the question.

1206. John invades France (June), takes Montauban (1 Aug.), burns Angers (Sep.) ; makes a two years' peace with Philip II., giving up all claim to Normandy and Poitou (Sep.) ; and returns to England (Dec.).

1207. The pope rules that neither the bishops nor the king have a voice in the election of the Archbishop of Canterbury, but that the election rests solely with the monks. He, however, declares the election of Reginald irregular, and orders the monks (many of whom have come to Rome) to at once elect his friend and fellow-student Stephen Langton (Cardinal of St. Chrysagonus). This they do, and the pope consecrates

him at Viterbo (17 June). John refuses to recognize the election, and drives the monks of Canterbury from their monastery (15 July).

1208. The pope lays England under an interdict of the severest form (23 March); all services of the Church except baptism and extreme unction are forbidden, and the dead are not allowed to be buried in consecrated ground. The interdict is entrusted by the pope to the Bishops of London, Ely, and Worcester, and is published. John thereupon shows such violent hostility to the Church that all the bishops except those of Winchester, Durham, and Norwich flee from England; the clergy are put beyond legal protection, and are ordered to be driven from their benefices.

1209. John advances with an English army to invade Scotland; its king, William the Lion, makes complete submission, pays a large sum of money, and delivers hostages (including his daughters Margaret and Isabella) to John (Aug.).

The pope excommunicates John (Nov.), a blow which shakes the fidelity even of his ministers. John, however, will not give way, and raises money to send to his nephew, the Emperor Otho, to help him against Philip of Swabia, whom the pope has set up as a rival emperor.

1210. Hugh de Lacy, the viceroy in Ireland, having assumed almost regal rights, John crosses over to Waterford (June), establishes order, introduces the English form of administration, makes John de Grey (Bishop of Norwich) his representative, and returns to England (Aug.).

1211. In order to put down constant warfare along the Welsh border, John marches across Wales to Snowdon, where Llewellyn and other princes submit and give hostages (July). The Welsh again rise, and slaughter the castle garrisons; John hangs their hostages at Nottingham, and prepares to march into Wales again. News, however, reaches him of disaffection among the northern barons, and he goes to Northumberland, and seizes fresh hostages from the suspected nobles.

He forms a league with the Emperor Otho and the excommunicated princes of northern Europe (Flanders, Brabant, and Boulogne) against the pope and Philip II. of France.

In order to carry on the expeditions into Ireland and Wales John exacts money in the most arbitrary manner; the clergy are compelled to pay £100,000; the Cistercians, £30,000 or £40,000; and the Jews (many being tortured to disclose their wealth), 60,000 marks. These exactions and the employment of foreign mercenaries create universal discontent throughout England.

1212. Alexander, the son of William the Lion, King of Scotland, comes to London, is knighted, and swears fealty to John as his lord.

Pope Innocent III. absolves John's subjects from their allegiance, and Philip II. of France prepares to invade England.

1213. The pope declares John's crown forfeited, and appoints Philip II. of France to carry out the sentence. John collects an army at Barhamdown, near Canterbury, to meet Philip's expected invasion. The pope sends Pandulf to England as legate, and John submits, promises to receive Stephen Langton and the exiled bishops, to restore all Church property and make good all losses, and at Dover resigns the crowns of England and Ireland to Pandulf and receives them from him as the pope's feudatory (15 May). Pandulf goes to France and forbids Philip to attack John, now that he has become the pope's vassal. Nicholas of Tusculum comes to England as legate, and he and John fill vacant benefices with devoted adherents of John, a proceeding which creates further discontent. The pope revokes John's excommunication (20 July), takes him under his protection (4 Nov.), and removes the interdict (6 Dec.).

1214. John goes to France (15 Feb.) to make war on Philip, and at Valenciennes joins the Count of Flanders and the Emperor Otho, but the combined forces are decisively defeated by Philip at Bouvines (27 July). On his return to England (Oct.) John demands scutage from those barons who had not followed him to France, and an insurrection breaks out.

William the Lion, King of Scotland, dies (4 Dec.) ; his son Alexander II. succeeds him.

1215. The barons present their demands to John at the New Temple, London (6 Jan.) ; he defers his answer till Easter. John prepares to resist, and summons troops from Poitou ; the barons assemble at Brackley, besiege Northampton Castle, are given possession of London (24 May), and become masters of more than half England. John yields, and at Runnymede (on the Thames, near Staines, in Surrey) seals (15 June) the 49 articles prepared by the barons, which were afterwards embodied into the 63 articles of the Great Charter (Magna Carta). It guarantees the Church the right to elect its prelates ; tenants against the oppressive enforcement of feudal obligations ; to cities and towns their ancient franchises ; to merchants freedom to buy and sell throughout England ; to villeins freedom of their wainage from distraint for fines ; that the Court of Common Pleas shall be held at a fixed

place ; that fines shall be imposed in proportion to the offence by upright men on oath ; that weights and measures shall be uniform ; that sheriffs shall not abuse their powers ; and that no freeman shall be amerced either in person or property "except through the lawful judgment of his peers and the law of the land ;" and the king pledges himself not to sell, refuse, or delay justice to any one.

The Charter received numberless confirmations in succeeding reigns ; but its final form was fixed at its 5th confirmation, in 1225, when it was reduced to 37 clauses (9 Hen. III., cap. 29).

John, never having intended to keep the Charter, sends to Rome to get it annulled (13 Sep.), and the pope disallows it and orders Stephen Langton to excommunicate the king's enemies, which, however, the archbishop declines to do.

John gets a large army of mercenaries from Poitou (Sep.), and overruns England, burning and slaying everywhere.

1216. The barons, in despair, send for Prince Louis (Mar.), the Dauphin (the eldest son of Philip II., who had married John's niece), with a view to offer him the crown ; he arrives with an army (21 May), obtains some successes, and becomes master of the east and south of England ; but excites jealousy by granting fiefs to his French followers, and John's cause again becomes hopeful.

Pope Innocent III. dies* (16 or 17 July). Honorius III. succeeds.

The Scotch invade England and advance to Carlisle ; the Welsh attack the border. John captures Lincoln (22 Sep.) and crosses the Wash, but the rising tide destroys his train ; he dies at Newark (19 Oct.), either from grief at his loss, or from over-eating, or by poison. His leaders, the Earl of Pembroke and Gualo, the papal legate, declare John's son Henry (a boy of 9) king, and he is crowned at Gloucester as Henry III. (28 Oct.) by Peter, Bishop of Winchester. Pembroke is made regent, accepts the Charter, and by a policy of conciliation wins over many of the revolted barons. Hubert de Burgh successfully defends Dover against the French.

1217. Pembroke marches against Louis and the insurgent barons who remain with him, and completely routs them in a battle fought in the streets of Lincoln, called "the Fair of Lincoln" (20 May), capturing most of the English leaders. The English fleet, under Hubert de Burgh and D'Albini, also defeats the French fleet under Eustace the Monk, near Dover (24 Aug.). Louis is granted peace on easy terms, and leaves England. This peace was signed at Kingston on Thames (11

Sep.), and is memorable as the first written treaty between England and any foreign nation.

1218. Pandulf is elected (but not consecrated) Bishop of Norwich, and appointed papal legate.

Henry III. abolishes trial by ordeal in England.

1219. The Earl of Pembroke, Regent of England, dies (Mar.). Pandulf, regarding England as a fief of the papal see, assumes the government as legate. Henry III. is again crowned, at Westminster (17 May), by Stephen Langton, Archbishop of Canterbury. With France Pandulf renews for four years the Peace of Chinon.

1221. Stephen Langton, Archbishop of Canterbury, goes to Rome, and procures from the pope the cancellation of Pandulf's appointment as legate; and Hubert de Burgh, the chief justiciary, becomes regent *ex-officio*. He rules well for 8 years, in spite of the opposition of the foreign party, headed by Peter des Roches (Bishop of Winchester) and Faukes de Breauté. This party consisted mostly of foreign mercenaries whom John had raised to power, and who still occupied the royal castles.

Peace is made with the Scots, and Alexander II., King of Scotland, marries Henry's sister Joan, at York (25 June).

Thirteen Dominicans or Black Friars* come to England and found their first English house at Oxford. Their second house in England is soon afterwards established at "Black Friars" in London. In a few years they found establishments all over the country.

1223. Philip II., King of France, dies (14 July); his son Louis VIII. succeeds him.

1224. Faukes de Breauté, one of Hubert de Burgh's opponents, is deprived of all his offices and banished.

War breaks out between England and France; it ends in Poitou being annexed to France.

Nine Franciscans† (or Friars Minor, Minorites, "Lesser Brethren," or Grey Friars, as they were variously called) land at Dover (Tuesday, 10 Sep.). Their superior is Brother Agnellus, of Pisa, appointed by St. Francis himself to be pro-

* Founded in 1215, at Toulouse, by St. Dominic, a Spaniard, a canon of Osma, for the purpose of preaching against heretics. In 1216 a bull of Pope Honorius III. confirmed their rule, giving them the distinctive name of *Fratres Prædicantes* ("Preaching Friars" or Brethren, the word friar being simply a modified form of the Latin *frater*, French *frère*).

† The Franciscans were founded in 1207 by St. Francis of Assisi. The order was provisionally sanctioned by Pope Innocent III. in 1209, and established by Honorius III. in 1223.

vincial minister in England. In 32 years they have 49 houses in England with 1242 brethren.

1225. The king sends his brother, Earl Richard, to Bordeaux (Mar.) ; Richard defeats the French, and conquers Gascony.

1226. Louis VIII., King of France, dies (8 Nov.) ; his son Louis IX. succeeds him.

Otho, the papal legate in England, holds a council at Westminster, and demands, under the pretext of raising money for the crusade, two benefices in each diocese and each abbey for the exclusive use of Rome ; Langton opposes the demand and persuades Pope Honorius III. to withdraw his legate ; and the clergy declare that by the laws of England they are free from such exactions.

1227. At a council held at Oxford, Henry III., now 20 years old, is declared of age (Feb.) ; but Hubert de Burgh continues the government, and is made Earl of Kent, and justiciary for life. His opponent Peter des Roches withdraws from England for a time, and goes to the crusade.

1228. Henry III. marches against Llewellyn, Prince of Wales (Aug.), but concludes a disgraceful peace (Sep.).

Stephen Langton, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (9 July).

1229. Richard le Grand, of Wethersted (Chancellor of Lincoln), is nominated Archbishop of Canterbury by Pope Gregory IX., who levies a tithe on all movables in England.

The University of Cambridge receives its first legal recognition.

1230. With a view to recover some of England's former dominions on the continent, Henry III. invades France (May), but accomplishes little, and returns home (Oct.), leaving a small army in France.

1231. Peace for three years is made with France (5 July).

The people resist the payment of tithes to the pope, and maltreat his agents.

Richard le Grand, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies.

Peter des Roches returns from the crusade.

1232. Through the machinations of Des Roches, charges are brought against Hubert de Burgh, and he is suspended from all his offices, which are given to Stephen de Segrave (July), an ally of Des Roches. Hubert takes refuge in the priory of Merton in Surrey, but is imprisoned in the Tower, and afterwards in the castle of Devizes (Oct.).

1233. Under the guidance of Peter des Roches, Henry III. fills all offices with foreigners, and brings over foreign troops ; and civil war breaks out.

Hubert de Burgh escapes from Devizes Castle, and flees to sanctuary (12 Oct.), and afterwards to Wales, to Richard, Earl of Pembroke, who defeats the king's troops near Monmouth (11 Nov.), and again at Monmouth (25 Nov. and 26 Dec.).

Edmund Rich (St. Edmund) is elected Archbishop of Canterbury.

1234. Edmund Rich is consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury (2 Ap.). The king's troops are defeated (Jan.) ; Archbishop Rich threatens to excommunicate him unless he gives up Des Roches and his other foreign counsellors ; the king gives way, orders Des Roches to retire to his bishopric of Winchester, dismisses Stephen Segrave from his office of justiciary, and rules the country himself. He restores to Hubert de Burgh his property and his earldom of Kent (28 May).

1235. Robert Grossteste is consecrated Bishop of Lincoln.

Henry III.'s sister Isabel marries the Emperor Frederick II., at Worms (20 July).

1236. Henry III. marries Eleanor (14 Jan.), a daughter of Raymond Berenger, Count of Provence, and a sister of the French queen. She fills the court with her foreign relations, and they secure offices, benefices, and estates throughout England. The favor shown to foreigners creates popular discontent.

1237. A madman attempts to murder Henry III. at Woodstock (9 Sep.).

1238. Peter des Roches, Bishop of Winchester, and ex-favorite of Henry III., dies (9 June).

1239. The king's eldest son (afterwards Edward I.) is born at Westminster (18 June).

The Jews, being charged with murder in London (21-22 June), are compelled to surrender one-third of their effects to the king.

1240. Edmund Rich, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies at Soissy (16 Nov.), aged about 45 ; in 1246 he is canonized as St. Edmund by Pope Innocent IV. Boniface of Savoy, the queen's uncle, is chosen Archbishop of Canterbury ; but is not consecrated till 1245.

The White Friars or Carmelites (so called from Mount Carmel, their original abode) first arrive in England.

Henry's personal government becomes worse ; he lavishes favors on his favorites, one of whom, John Mansell, holds 700 Church livings ; high ecclesiastical offices are given to foreigners ; and the pope gives hundreds of benefices to Italian priests.

1241. The king extorts 20,000 marks from the Jews, under pain of banishment. David, Prince of Wales, submits to him (29 Aug.).

The King of France gives Poitou to his brother Alphonso (24 June).

1242. Henry III., with the object of regaining Poitou, lands with an army in Gascony, and begins war against Louis IX., King of France, but is defeated by Louis at Taillebourg (20 July), Poitou is occupied by the French, and Henry III. agrees to a five years' truce.

1243. Henry III. makes peace with France (7 Ap.), giving up Poitou and the Island of Rhé; only Gascony now remains to England of her former continental possessions. Henry returns to England (25 Sep.). He extorts more money from the Jews.

1244-7. During these years the heavy exactions of Henry III. and the pope create great discontent, and Henry's government grows more unpopular.

1248. At a meeting of the council or parliament, in London (Feb.), the growing discontent is openly expressed, and charges are made against the king's foreign favorites; but Henry continues his course of misgovernment, and demands tallages from the cities to cover his wasteful expenditure, and parliament refuses supplies (June).

An insurrection under Gaston of Bearn breaks out in Gascony, and Henry sends Simon de Montfort, Earl of Leicester, there as governor to put it down.

1249. University College, the first regular college at Oxford, is founded.

1250. De Montfort puts down the revolt in Gascony, makes Gaston prisoner, and sends him to England; but Henry releases him. De Montfort goes to Paris. Henry again extorts large sums of money from the Jews.

The Augustinians or Austin Friars first arrive in England; so that by this date what were known as "the Four Orders" (Dominicans, Franciscans, Carmelites, and Augustinians) have established themselves in the country.

Roger Bacon (now 36) returns from Paris to England, goes to Oxford, and enters the Franciscan Order.

1251. Troubles again break out in Gascony; Henry III. recalls De Montfort from Paris, and sends him to restore order in Gascony. The expenses of the expedition increase Henry's financial difficulties, and he again raises money by illegal exactions.

Henry's daughter Margaret is married at York to Alexander III. of Scotland (26 Dec.).

There is a famine in England.

1252. De Montfort goes to England to answer charges made by the Gascons. Henry III. gives Gascony to his son Prince Edward (now 13), and De Montfort returns thither and defeats the Gascons.

A council or parliament at London (Oct.) refuses the king's demand for three years' tithes of the Church to cover the expenses of his proposed pilgrimage to the Holy Land.

Robert Grossteste, Bishop of Lincoln, computes the revenues of foreigners intruded by the pope into English benefices at 70,000 marks, or more than thrice the revenue of the king.

1253. Parliament at London (after Easter) grants money to the king for his pilgrimage, "to be expended at the discretion of the nobles;" the king, in return, confirms Magna Carta (13 May).

De Montfort resigns the government of Gascony. Alphonso IV. of Castile claims the country, but Henry III. makes an alliance with him, and arranges for Prince Edward to marry Alphonso's daughter Eleanor. Henry III. sails from Portsmouth (6 Aug.) for Bordeaux, and captures some castles in Gascony, but enrages the people by destroying their vineyards, whereupon De Montfort goes with troops to his aid, and the Gascons feign submission.

Robert Grossteste (or Grostête), Bishop of Lincoln, refuses to induct Pope Innocent IV.'s nephew (an Italian) into a prebend at Lincoln, and the pope excommunicates him. He dies (9 Oct.), aged about 78.

1254. Pope Innocent IV. offers the crown of Sicily to the king's second son, Edmund (6 Mar.).

Queen Eleanor and her sons join the king in Gascony, and Prince Edward (now 15) goes to Burgos in Spain, and marries Eleanor of Castile. The king goes from Gascony to Paris, where he is splendidly entertained by the French king; and he then returns to England.

1255. Henry III. makes further exactions from his subjects, and extorts 8000 marks from the Jews. He goes to Scotland and releases the king and queen (his daughter Margaret) from the tutelage of the nobles.

The Jews at Lincoln are accused of crucifying a Christian boy; 18 are hanged, and over 80 more are sent to the Tower of London.

Pope Alexander IV. sends Rustand as legate to England, who exacts large sums from the English Church.

1256. Pope Alexander IV., to conciliate the clergy, issues a bull confirming Magna Carta (30 Mar.).

Henry III. takes Magnus, King of the Isle of Man, under his protection (21 Ap.).

1257. Henry III. obtains from the clergy a grant of 52,000 marks for his son Edmund, appointed King of Sicily by the pope in 1254.

The king's brother Richard, Earl of Pembroke, is elected King of the Romans; he is crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle (17 May).

The Welsh ravage the march or border lands as far as Chester, and war goes on between them and the marchers, the border country being rendered almost a desert.

Peterhouse College, the first regular college at Cambridge, is founded.

Roger Bacon's scientific studies bring him under the suspicion of his Franciscan superiors at Oxford; he is accused of magic, placed under surveillance, and sent to Paris, where he is kept in close confinement for the next ten years.

1257-8. The English harvest is destroyed by wet weather, wheat rises from 2 to 15 and 20 shillings a quarter, and a dreadful famine occurs throughout the country; 20,000 are said to have died in London alone.

1258. The king, instigated by the pope, demands another 52,000 marks for the conquest of Sicily; and the pope threatens an interdict if the sum is not paid at once. This and the distress caused by the famine bring matters to a crisis. The barons assemble in council or parliament at Westminster, refuse the money asked for, and demand reforms (May); the king promises to grant them, and to hold a parliament at Oxford at Whitsuntide for that purpose.

The parliament (known as "the Mad Parliament") meets (11 June); 24 commissioners are appointed, 12 named by the king and 12 by the barons; and the commission proceeds to reform the government, and compels the foreign favorites of the king to surrender the royal castles held by them, which are then placed in the hands of Englishmen. It also appoints 15 counsellors to carry on the government. These counsellors promulgate their reforms in "the Provisions of Oxford," the first public document ever issued in the English language. Henry III., with a view to casting off the domination of the barons, applies to Pope Alexander IV. to absolve him from the promises which he has given.

1259. The 15 counsellors promulgate "the Provisions of Westminster" to prevent encroachment on feudal rights; these provisions were subsequently (1267) embodied in the Statute of Marlborough. The counsellors make peace with Wales,

renounce Sicily, and make peace with France ("the Treaty of Bordeaux"), renouncing all claim to Normandy, Anjou, Touraine, and Poitou, and agreeing to hold Bayonne and Gascony (with the bishoprics of Limoges, Cahors, and Perigord) as fiefs of France.

Henry III. goes to France (Nov.), and does homage for Gascony to the French king.

1260. John Legras, a foreigner, appointed by Pope Alexander IV. Prebendary of St. Paul's, London, on attempting to take forcible possession of his benefice, is murdered (26 Feb.).

Henry III. returns to England from France (Ap.).

1261. Pope Alexander IV. absolves Henry from his vows (Ap.); Henry orders the absolution to be publicly read, gives some castles into the hands of foreigners, and begins to fortify the Tower. The barons meet at Kingston, and they and the king agree to refer their differences to the King of France.

1262. Pope Urban IV. sends a second absolution to Henry III., who publicly promulgates it. Henry goes to France (July); on his return (Dec.) he again agrees to abide by the Provisions of Oxford.

1263. The civil war known as "the Barons' War" breaks out (June). The barons, headed by Simon de Montfort, imprison Peter Aigueblanche, Bishop of Hereford, one of the king's foreign favorites, and capture Gloucester and other places. John Mansell, another favorite, flees to Boulogne, in France, but is seized there. The Londoners join in the disturbances, and the queen is insulted by them, and goes to the continent. Henry III., who has been in the Tower, surrenders to the barons, and again promises to observe the Provisions of Oxford, which are publicly promulgated at a great council held in London (8 Sep.). Henry III. and Prince Edward go to France (18 Sep.). Prince Edward returns to England and assists Mortimer in his warfare against Llewellyn of Wales, who is assisted by De Montfort. Henry III. and the barons formally refer their differences to Louis IX., King of France (16 Dec.).

1264. Louis IX., of France, at a council at Amiens, makes his award (23 Jan.), known as "the Mise of Amiens," in favor of Henry III., annulling the Provisions of Oxford, and declaring in favor of the king's right to make foreigners governors of his castles; the award, however, is not to derogate from the charters and customs of the kingdom.

Henry III. returns to England (14 Feb.); and Pope Urban IV. formally sets aside the Provisions of Oxford (23, 25 Mar.).

The barons offer to accept Louis IX.'s award, except as to

the employment of aliens ; Henry III. rejects the offer, and civil war is renewed. Prince Edward captures Northampton (13 Ap.) and Tutbury ; but the barons under De Montfort, aided by the Londoners, totally defeat the king at Lewes in Sussex (14 May), and he and his brother Earl Richard are taken prisoners. A truce (known as "the Mise of Lewes") is made (15 May), submitting the dispute to the decision of three arbitrators (two French and one English). Henry and Richard are released in exchange for their sons Edward and Henry d'Almeine. Simon De Montfort, now master of the country, brings it into order at once.

Simon calls a parliament (June), which appoints a committee of three, who name nine others as a council to administer the government.

The exiled foreigners and Henry's queen, Eleanor, assemble at Damme, in Flanders, and gather an army there to invade England (Sep.) ; delay is occasioned by contrary winds, and the army breaks up.

Pope Urban IV. excommunicates all who adhere to the Provisions of Oxford (Oct.) ; his legate, Guy Foulquois, Cardinal-Bishop of Sabina (afterwards Pope Clement IV.), not being allowed to land in England, entrusts the sentence to some Anglican bishops whom he summons to Boulogne ; on their return the document is seized at Dover, and torn to pieces.

De Montfort calls his famous parliament (Dec.), to which, besides the peers and higher clergy and two knights from each shire, he summons two burghers from each of the chief cities. This was the first time that representative burghers had been present at any parliament, and they and the knights of the shires form the "commons" element in parliament which was afterwards developed into the House of Commons, separate and distinct from the peers.

1265. This convention meets at London (28 Jan.) ; exiles certain royalist barons for three years ; summons the exiles at Damme to stand trial by their peers ; and orders the release of Prince Edward on condition of complete amnesty, of the royal castles being placed in trustworthy hands, of the recognition of the Great Charter, and of the prince choosing his council by the advice of the government. Prince Edward is released at Wallingford (8 Mar.), and sent to Hereford to reside "in free custody."

William of Valence (one of the exiles at Damme) lands in Pembroke, south Wales (his overlordship), and De Montfort marches against him. Prince Edward escapes from Ludlow

Castle, in Shropshire (28 May), gathers an army, and seizes Gloucester, cutting off De Montfort from his supporters in England. De Montfort's younger son Simon is at Dover with troops; De Montfort summons him to his aid; he marches, but delays at Kenilworth and is routed there by Edward (July), who destroys all the bridges over the Severn to prevent De Montfort from crossing. De Montfort, however, crosses at Worcester, and advances in the expectation of meeting his son with reinforcements. He is surprised by Edward at Evesham in Worcestershire, and being greatly outnumbered, is, after an heroic contest, defeated and slain (4 Aug.). Henry III. is again nominal ruler of England, but the real power rests with Prince Edward.

1266. The baronial party continues strong, however, and at an assembly or parliament held at Coventry, a document known as the Dictum de Kenilworth (Edict of Kenilworth) is agreed to (15 Oct.), providing that the king shall observe the Great Charters, and for the preservation of the liberties of the Church. It is embodied in the Statutes of the Realm.

The Norwegians cede the Hebrides and the Isle of Man to the Scots.

1267. The rebellious barons finally submit at Ely, and are granted the terms of the Edict of Kenilworth (25 July), and "the Barons' War" comes to an end.

Llewellyn of Wales makes peace and acknowledges the overlordship of the King of England (29 Sep.).

1267-8. Roger Bacon writes his *Opus Majus*, *Opus Minus*, and *Opus Tertium*.^{*} He is released from prison in Paris (1268) and returns to England.

1268. The papal legate holds councils at London (16 Ap.) and Northampton; Prince Edward and other nobles assume the cross.

1269. Prince Edward agrees with Louis IX., King of France, to go on the crusade together.

A treaty of amity and commerce is made with Magnus VII., King of Norway.

1270. Prince Edward, with his wife, Eleanor of Castile, sails from Dover for the crusade (19 Aug.). Louis IX. dies at Tunis (25 Aug.), his son, Philip III. ("the Bold"), is there proclaimed King of France, and the French abandon the crusade. Edward proceeds to Palestine with the English.

[Louis IX. was canonized at St. Louis by Pope Boniface VIII., 11 Aug., 1297.]

^{*} The *Opus Majus* is his principal work; it has been called "the Encyclopædia and the Organon of the 13th Century."

The Chester Mysteries are performed.

1271. Prince Edward captures Nazareth (May), and defeats the Saracens in several battles.

Roger Bacon publishes his *Compendium Studii Philosophiæ*, in which he attacks the clergy as the opponents of true knowledge.

1272. An attempt is made to assassinate Prince Edward (17 June); he is wounded but soon recovers,* makes a 10 years' truce with the Saracens, and sails (15 Aug.) for Italy.

Henry III. dies at Bury St. Edmunds (16 Nov.), aged 65, and is buried at Westminster (20 Nov.).

Edward is still abroad, but an assembly is summoned at Westminster, which swears fealty to him, and he is proclaimed king as Edward I. (20 Nov.). Walter Giffard, Archbishop of York, and the Earls of Cornwall and Gloucester are appointed regents.

1273. Edward I. goes from Italy to Paris, and does homage to Philip III. ("the Bold"), King of France, for Gascony and Bayonne. He goes to Gascony and reduces it to obedience.

1274. Edward I. lands at Dover (2 Aug.), and he and his queen, Eleanor, are crowned at Westminster (19 Aug.). He goes to Chester (Sep.), where Llewellyn of Wales declines to meet him, and he summons Llewellyn to attend his first parliament, to be held in 1275. He makes Robert Burnell chancellor, and Burnell is his chief minister till 1292.

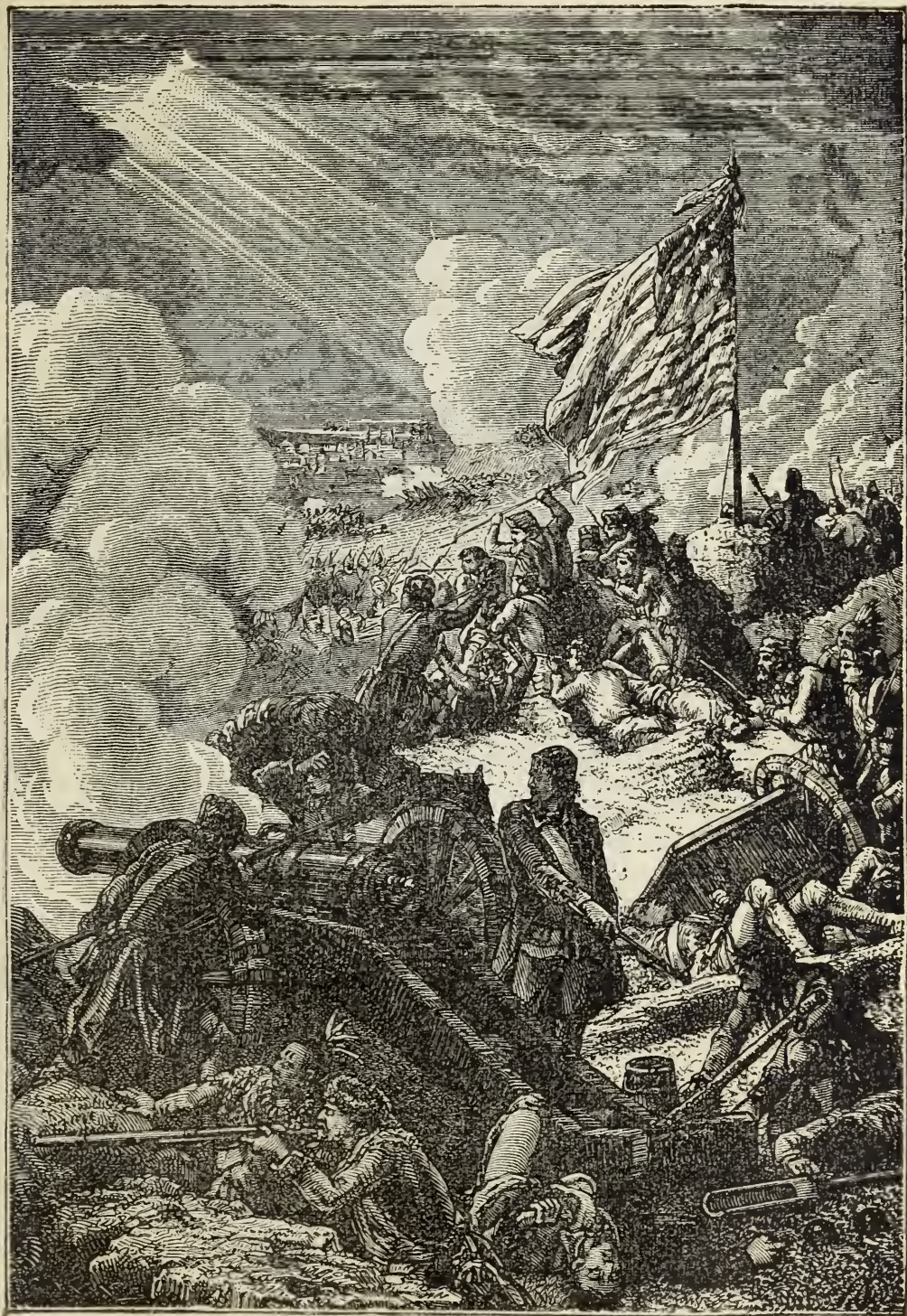
1275. Edward's first parliament meets at Westminster (Ap.), and passes "the First Statute of Westminster" (3 Ed. I.), re-establishing the Charter, securing the rights of the Church, and improving legal processes. The same parliament originates the customs by imposing export duties on wool and leather.

Llewellyn, Prince of Wales, although Edward has offered him six opportunities of so doing, refuses to swear allegiance to Edward as his overlord. He is married by proxy to Eleanor, a daughter of Simon de Montfort; but, while on her way to Wales, she is captured off the Scilly Isles (1276), and taken to Edward.

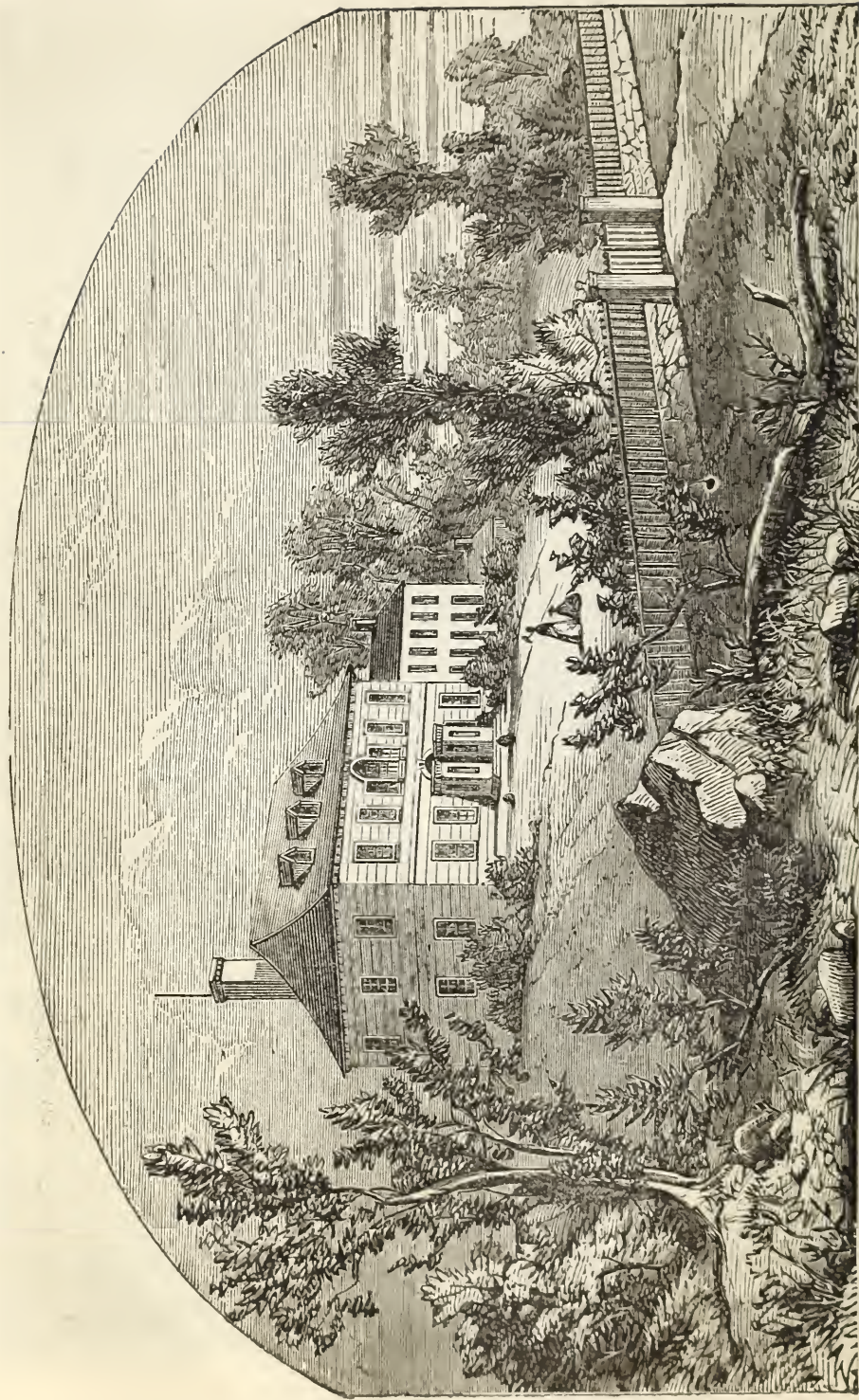
Edward's sister Margaret, queen of Alexander III. of Scotland, dies, aged 35.

1276. Llewellyn, acting as an independent prince, still refuses to come to Edward's parliaments, and demands from

* The story as to his life being saved by his wife Eleanor sucking poison from the wound is doubtful.



BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL.—P. 306.



WASHINGTON'S QUARTERS.—P. 307.



BURNING CRANMER.—P. 240.



QUEEN ELIZABETH.—P. 241.

Edward a treaty, as well as the release of his intended wife. Parliament meets (Nov.), and war with Wales is resolved on.

1277. Edward marches into Wales (June) and drives Llewellyn to the mountains of Snowdon; a fleet from the Cinque Ports* cuts off his retreat to Anglesey. Llewellyn submits (Sep.), and is stripped of his territory except Anglesey and some baronies around Snowdon (Nov.), but retains his title of Prince of Wales. Otherwise he is well treated, and he comes to England and does homage to Edward at London (Dec.).

1278. Alexander III., King of Scotland, comes to Westminster and does homage to Edward I. for his kingdom (29 Sep.).

Llewellyn marries Simon de Montfort's daughter Eleanor at Worcester (13 Oct.), Edward and his queen attending the celebration.

The Jews are accused of clipping the coin, and all of them throughout England are arrested (12 Nov.); 280 are hanged in London alone, besides a large number in other places. Edward I. restores the coinage.

Jerome of Ascoli, General of the Franciscans (afterwards Pope Nicholas IV.), holds a chapter at Paris, which condemns Roger Bacon on account of heresy ("suspected innovations"), and Bacon is imprisoned in Paris for 14 years.

1279. Edward takes possession of Ponthieu in right of his wife.

He obtains the passage (15 Nov.) of the Statute of Mortmain (*De Religiosis*, 7 Ed. I., cap. 2), providing that no property shall be transferred to the Church without the king's special license.

1280. The Statute de quo Warranto is passed (7 Nov.).

1282. Another rising takes place in Wales, under Llewellyn and his brother David (Mar.); Edward marches into Wales (July) and negotiates for peace fruitlessly (Nov.); and Llewellyn is defeated and slain (11 Dec.) near Aber Edw, on the river Wye. Edward's army crosses into Anglesey by means of a bridge of boats, and conquers the island.†

1283. After holding out for six months, Llewellyn's brother David surrenders. A parliament meets at Shrews-

* The Cinque ("five") Ports were Dover, Hastings, Hythe, Romney, and Sandwich. In 1078, William I. appointed a warden of these ports (then deemed the keys of the kingdom), whose duty was to guard the south-east coast against invasion from the continent. The office was abolished in 1855, having long been a sinecure.

† The story of the massacre of the Welsh bards by Edward I. is a baseless fiction, without the slightest foundation in fact.

bury by which he is condemned to death ; and he is there executed (20 Sep.). The parliament then adjourns to Acton Burnell in Shropshire, and passes (12 Oct.) "the Statute of Merchants" (11 Ed. I.), providing for the more speedy payment of debts.

1284. Margaret, "the Maid of Norway," daughter of Eric, King of Norway, and sole grand-daughter of Edward's sister Margaret (the late queen of Alexander III.), is declared at Scone heiress of the throne of Scotland (5 Feb.).

Edward I. calls a parliament at Ruddlan in Wales, which passes (19 Mar.) "the Statute of Wales" (12 Ed. I.), annexing that country to England. By it Wales is divided into counties ; its native laws are preserved in civil matters ; but the law of inheritance is altered, and the English criminal law is introduced.

Edward brings his queen Eleanor to Carnarvon, and she there gives birth (25 Ap.) to her son (afterwards Edward II.), who is presented to the Welsh people as "the Prince of Wales," a title which is thenceforward given to the eldest son of the sovereign of England.

1285. The Statute of Winchester is passed, reorganizing the national force constituted in 1181 by the Assize of Arms, and making it a means of keeping order. An Act (13 Ed. I., c. 30) is passed appointing judges of assize to go on circuit in every county twice or thrice a year, to expedite justice.

1286. Alexander III., King of Scotland, is killed (16 Mar.) while riding at night, his horse going over a precipice. Margaret, the Maid of Norway, is declared queen, a regency of two bishops and three nobles being appointed during her absence. Other claimants to the throne appear, and civil war breaks out.

Edward I. sails for France (13 May), and at Paris renews his homage to the French king for Gascony (5 June). He goes to Gascony, reduces it to obedience, and acts as mediator between the Kings of France and Arragon with regard to the possession of Sicily. He stays abroad three years, leaving the government with his brother Edmund.

The Bishop of Hereford excommunicates some Christians at Hereford for attending a Jewish marriage feast.

Queen Eleanor, widow of Henry III., becomes a nun at Amesbury. (She died there 24 June, 1291, aged about 75.)

1287. An outbreak occurs in Wales (June), which is put down by Robert Tiptoft, Edward's justiciary.

1289. Edward returns to England (12 Aug.) and finds the country in a disturbed state ; he speedily restores order.

He brings about a meeting at Salisbury (6 Nov.) between representatives of himself, the Scotch regency, and Eric of Norway, who agree that Margaret shall be received in Scotland free from any marriage contract, but pledged not to marry without the consent of Eric and Edward. Edward then proposes a marriage between his son Edward, Prince of Wales (now 5), and Margaret, and produces a dispensation for the union of the two cousins which he has secretly obtained from the pope.

The fifteen judges of England are charged with corruption (13 Oct.), and all of them (except John of Methingham and Elias de Bockingham) are convicted of bribery and heavily fined; one of them, Weyland, Chief-Justice of the Common Pleas, flees to sanctuary, but is compelled to abjure the realm, and his property is confiscated.

1290. A Scottish parliament is held at Brigham (14 Mar.), which accepts the proposed marriage between Queen Margaret and the son of Edward I., but carefully guards the independence of the kingdom.

Edward, by proclamation dated 27 July, banishes all Jews from England, probably on account of their defacing the coinage; they are to leave by 1 Nov. The number thus exiled is said to have been 16,511. [Jews continued to be kept out of England till their return was connived at by Cromwell in 1654.] The money business in England passes into the hands of bankers from northern Italy, whence the bankers' street in London is called Lombard Street.

At the request of the inhabitants Edward I. takes possession of the Isle of Man (Sep.).

Margaret, Queen of Scotland, sails from Norway for Scotland, but is compelled by the hardships of the voyage to land in the Orkneys, where she dies (7 Oct.).

Eleanor, Edward's queen, dies (29 Nov.) at Herdeby, near Grantham, in Lincolnshire, while travelling north to join her husband on the Scottish border. She is buried in London, and at every place where the corpse stopped crosses were erected (13 in all) by the queen's executors, in accordance with the directions of her will; those at Northampton and Waltham still remain.

1291. Edward, acting on his claim as overlord, summons a meeting at Norham on the Tweed (May) to settle the succession to the Scottish throne. Thirteen claimants appear (10 May), nine of whom acknowledge Edward's authority (5 June), and put the case into his hands. The royal castles in Scotland are also, by document, formally put into his hands

(6 June). All the claimants are rejected except three, John Baliol, John de Hastings, and Robert de Bruce ; and to decide between them Edward appoints a court consisting of 40 of Baliol's friends, 40 of Bruce's, and 24 named by himself. Pending their decision Edward takes possession of the Scotch castles and appoints the great officers of the kingdom.

1292. The court meets at Berwick (2 Aug.), and decides (17 Nov.), in favor of Baliol, who accepts the throne as Edward's vassal, does homage to him at Norham as his overlord (20 Nov.), is crowned at Scone (30 Nov.), and renews at Newcastle his homage to Edward (26 Dec.).

Roger Bacon, after 14 years' confinement, is released from prison in Paris, and returns to England.

1293. The Isle of Man is restored to Scotland (5 Jan.).

The Cinque Ports mariners defeat the Normans at St. Mahé, in Brittany (14 Ap.).

The Gascons also attack the French, and Philip IV. of France summons Edward to Paris to answer for the acts of his subjects (Dec.).

Acting on the assumption that Baliol is Edward's vassal, several Scotchmen (including Sir William Douglas and Macduff, Earl of Fife) appeal against his judgments to the English courts. Baliol comes as a vassal to Edward's parliament (Sep.), but declines to act without the advice of his people. Time is allowed him to consult his parliament, which he fails to do, and Macduff's case is given against him, and a heavy fine is inflicted on him ; he protests, and a further delay is granted him.

1294. Philip IV. of France, having taken possession of Gascony, and refusing to deliver it up, war becomes necessary.

The Welsh, under Madoc and Morgan, again rise ; they defeat the Earl of Lincoln at Denbigh (11 Nov.), and also Prince Edmund. Edward I. marches against them, but famine among his troops compels him to retire to England. Danger is also dreaded from Scotland, where Baliol is disgusted with his position of vassal king.

Roger Bacon, the great precursor of modern science, and the father of the modern inductive method, dies at Oxford, aged 80.*

1295. Baliol forms a secret alliance with Philip IV. of France against England (23 Oct.).

Edward I., feeling the necessity of throwing himself completely on his subjects in order to obtain their support and

* He was born in 1214, at Ilchester in Somersetshire.

the necessary supplies to combat present and expected dangers, summons (Oct.) what is now regarded as the first real parliament held in England ; it meets (27 Nov.). The three Estates (Lords Spiritual, Lords Temporal, and Commons) are all represented ; and each grants supplies as a separate order.

1296. The Scots under Baliol invade England (Feb.), and ravage Cumberland with savage ferocity, little children, it is said, being thrown into the air and caught on the lances of the soldiers. Edward marches north, captures Berwick (30 Mar.), and there receives a message from Baliol renouncing his allegiance (5 Ap.). He then invades Scotland, and at Dunbar (27 Ap.) completely defeats the Scots, who lose 10,000 men. Edward occupies Edinburgh (June) and Perth ; and Baliol surrenders at Montrose (10 July), renounces his throne in favor of Edward as his overlord, and is sent a prisoner to Hertford.* Edward assumes the crown of Scotland, and holds a Scotch parliament at Berwick, at which a large number of the Scotch clergy, barons, and gentry swear allegiance to him. He makes John de Warrenne (Earl of Surrey) guardian of Scotland, and Hugh Cressingham treasurer ; and removes (Aug.) the Scotch coronation stone (called "the Stone of Destiny") from Scone to Westminster Abbey, where it has ever since been used as the coronation stone of the English monarchs, and where it still is.

Pope Boniface VIII. issues (24 Feb.) a bull, known as "Clericis Laicos," forbidding the clergy, under pain of excommunication, to pay taxes out of church property to their temporal sovereign.

Edward calls a parliament at Bury St. Edmunds (Oct.), and asks supplies to carry on the war with France for the recovery of Gascony. The barons and Commons grant them, but the clergy (in accordance with the pope's bull) refuse (3 Nov.). Edward declares the clergy out of the protection of the king's courts ; whereupon church tenants refuse to pay rent, and others seize church property. The clergy being without redress, many of them submit, but the Archbishop of Canterbury holds out, and Edward seizes the estates of his see.

1297. Edward summons his barons to meet at Salisbury (Feb.). He himself intends to go to Flanders and invade France from thence, and he desires another army to send to Guienne. The Earls of Hereford and Norfolk, dissatisfied with

* He was removed to the Tower of London, Aug., 1297, and liberated, 18 July, 1299. After travelling over the continent for a time, he retired to his lands of Bailleul in Normandy (Nov., 1302), and died at Castle Gaillard in Normandy in 1315, aged about 65.

the king's arbitrary methods of raising supplies, refuse to conduct the latter force, and withdraw from the assembly. The king raises further supplies arbitrarily; the refractory barons complain of breach of the Charters, and of the tax on wool and other arbitrary exactions, and demand a confirmation of the Charters. Edward complies, the clergy and the Commons grant subsidies, and he sails to Flanders (22 Aug.), leaving the government in the hands of his young son Edward and his advisers. A parliament meets (6 Oct.), at which Prince Edward renews the confirmation of the Charters, with certain clauses added by the earls and known as the statute "*De tallagio non concedendo*" (25 Ed. I., caps. 5 and 6), providing, among other things, that the king shall levy no "aids, tasks, or prizes but by the common assent of the realm, and for the common profit thereof." Edward I., at Ghent, renews Prince Edward's confirmation (5 Nov.). He is unsuccessful in Flanders.

William Wallace, a Scotch patriot, a man of great courage and capacity, but also of brutal cruelty, seizes the English treasure at Scone, attacks the English at Lanark (May), gathers an army, and at Cambuskenneth, near Stirling, completely defeats them (10 Sep.) under Warrenne (the guardian of Scotland) and Cressingham, who is slain. He then invades England and harries the country from Newcastle to Carlisle with fiendish barbarity, leaving "behind him nothing but blood and ashes."

1298. Edward I. makes a two years' truce with France, and returns to England (14 Mar.), invades Scotland (June), and after an obstinate battle defeats Wallace at Falkirk (22 July); Wallace flees, and resumes his outlaw's life. Southern Scotland has been so ravaged by him that Edward is unable to maintain his army there, and he retires to England; and Scotland chooses a government of three guardians, two of whom are John Comyn and Robert Bruce,* the nearest heirs to the throne after Baliol, Comyn's claim being superior to Bruce's.

1299. Edward I., by the Treaty of Chartres, makes a truce (19 June) with Philip IV. of France, who restores Guienne and gives up his alliance with Scotland. Edward marries Philip's sister Margaret (12 Sep.).

1300. Edward I. assembles an army at Carlisle (24 June), invades Scotland (July), and ravages Galloway.

Pope Boniface VIII. publishes a bull (27 June) ordering Edward to make no further attacks on Scotland, claiming the

* A grandson of the Robert de Bruce who had been a competitor for the throne with Baliol in 1291-2, and had died in 1295.

country as belonging to the Roman See. The bull is delivered to Edward in his camp near New Abbey, in Galloway (26 Aug.); he grants a truce to the Scots (30 Oct.), and returns to England (Nov.).

1301. Edward calls a parliament at Lincoln (20 Jan.) which negatives the pope's claim, and declares that Scotland has never belonged to the Roman See.

Prince Edward (now 17) receives the title of Prince of Wales (7 Feb.), and is betrothed to Isabella (a child of 6), daughter of Philip IV. of France.

Edward I. again invades Scotland (July), and winters there.

1302. Edward I. concludes a truce with the Scots (26 Jan.) to last till 30 Nov.

1303. The Scots capture Stirling Castle (18 Feb.), and, under Comyn, defeat the English under John Segrave (Edward's governor of Scotland), at Roslin, in Scotland (24 Feb.).

Peace is made with France (20 May), Gascony being restored to Edward.

Edward levies "New Custom" dues, the origin of import duties in England. He evades the letter of the Act "*De tallagio non concedendo*" by getting the consent of the foreign merchants to the levy. He invades Scotland (June), marching as far north as Moray Frith, and the whole country submits except Stirling. Edward winters in Scotland.

1304. Comyn and the Scotch nobles formally surrender the country to Edward at Strathorde (4 Feb.); and after a siege of three months Stirling is starved into capitulation (24 July). Edward grants a general amnesty, arranges for the union of England and Scotland, places the government of Scotland in the hands of commissioners, including Wishart (Bishop of Glasgow), John de Mowbray, and Robert Bruce, allots ten Scotch representatives to the common parliament, and holds an assembly at Perth to elect them. He returns to England, leaving John de Segrave as governor of Scotland.

1305. Wallace, who had refused to take advantage of the general amnesty offered by Edward, is treacherously betrayed by John Short, one of his followers, into the hands of Sir John Menteith (Aug.), who delivers him to the English. He is tried at Westminster for treason, sacrilege, and robbery, and is condemned and executed (23 Aug.).*

* Edward was a merciful prince, and Wallace was the first Scotchman executed by him up to this time, and he no doubt would have been also spared but that his horrible atrocities in the north of England in 1297 had embittered the feeling of the English against him.

1306. Robert Bruce flees from Edward's court, goes to Scotland, murders Comyn in the church or convent of the Minorites at Dumfries (29 Jan. or 10 Feb.), revolts against Edward, is joined by Wishart, and is twice crowned King of Scotland at Scone (25, 27 Mar.) by the Countess of Buchan. After a successful skirmish with Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke, at Loudon Hill (May), he is defeated by the Earl of Methven, near Perth (June), and also at Dulay, and he wanders about the country as a fugitive. Edward I. marches into Scotland (July). Wishart is captured at Cupar in Fife, and imprisoned at Nottingham. Bruce, emerging from his fastnesses (Sep.), inflicts many losses on the English, but an English force again puts him to flight.

1307. Piers Gaveston, a Gascon or Basque, a favorite of Edward Prince of Wales, is banished from England (26 Feb.).

Edward I. holds a parliament at Carlisle (12 Mar.).

Bruce defeats the English under Aymer de Valence (Mar.), and besieges the Earl of Gloucester in Ayr. Edward I. raises the siege, and Bruce retires. Edward collects an army at Carlisle (July), marches thence (3 July) to invade Scotland, but dies at Burgh-by-Sands, near Carlisle (7 July), aged 68, and is buried at Westminster (27 Oct.). His son Edward II. (now 22) succeeds him (8 July).

Edward II. enters Scotland; some of the Scotch nobles do homage to him at Dumfries (Aug.); he makes Aymer de Valence guardian in Scotland (30 Aug.), and returns to England. He recalls his favorite, Piers Gaveston, and makes him Earl of Cornwall (6 Aug.) and gives him the property of the Bishop of Lichfield. Edward II. makes him guardian ("*custos*") of the kingdom (26 Dec.), and goes to France.

1308. Edward II., at the instigation of Philip IV. of France and Pope Clement V., who have resolved on the destruction of the Templars, imprisons all members of the order in England (10 Jan.), and has them tortured in order to extort confessions of heresy, blasphemy, and licentiousness; but fails to extract any revelations. This was the first time that torture had been resorted to by the government in England, and there being no professional "torturer" in the country, one had to be brought from the continent.

Edward II., at Boulogne, marries Isabella (28 Jan.), daughter of King Philip IV., to whom he had been betrothed in 1301. He returns to England (7 Feb.), and he and his queen are crowned at Westminster Abbey (25 Feb.). The barons in parliament demand the dismissal of Gaveston (3 May), and Edward promises to comply, but appoints him Lord Deputy in

Ireland (16 June), and grants the county of Cornwall to him (5 Aug.).

1309. Edward II. recalls Gaveston to England, and his continued misgovernment produces general discontent. A parliament meets at Stamford (27 July), and compels Edward to accede to reforms.

Edward makes a truce with Scotland, to last till Aug., 1310.

1310. Edward II. having failed to keep his promises of reform, the barons meet in London, and (Mar.) place the government in the hands of 21 commissioners, who are to make the necessary reforms.

Edward, to divert attention from home affairs, invades Scotland (Sep.), and winters at Berwick.

1311. Many barons refuse to join Edward II., and he retires to England (July), leaving Gaveston with a garrison in Bamborough Castle, Northumberland. Parliament meets at London (Aug.), at which the commissioners produce the "ordinances" of reform prepared by them, the principal being that no war shall be waged without consent of parliament, all export duties to be removed, great officers of state to be appointed with the consent of parliament, and parliament to be held at least once a year; Gaveston is also ordered to leave the kingdom before 1 Nov. Edward accepts the ordinances (5 Oct.), and Gaveston goes to Flanders.

The inquiry into the charges against the Templars is concluded; their heterodoxy is alleged to be established; and the Order is suppressed.

1312. Edward recalls Gaveston (18 Jan.), restores his property to him (20 Jan.), and goes with him to Yorkshire. The barons, under the Earls of Lancaster and Hereford, besiege Gaveston at Scarborough, where he surrenders on promise of his life (19 May). He, however, falls into the hands of the Earl of Warwick, a personal enemy, who beheads him at Blacklow Hill, near Warwick (19 June), in presence of the Earl of Lancaster and other nobles.

Prince Edward (afterwards Edward III.) is born at Windsor (13 Nov.).

1313. Robert Bruce, King of Scotland, having made himself master of all Scotland save Stirling, invades England, ravages Cumberland, and then lays siege to Stirling Castle.

1314. Edward II. collects a large army and advances into Scotland to relieve Stirling Castle, but is overwhelmingly defeated (24 June) by the Scots under Bruce at Bannockburn (a small burn or stream near Stirling). Sterling Castle surrenders the same evening. Edward escapes with difficulty to

Dunbar, whence he takes ship to Berwick. He refuses Bruce's offer of peace, and the Scots renew their ravages in the northern counties. This defeat destroys what remained of Edward's authority, and the Earl of Lancaster is the virtual ruler of England during the next seven years.

The defeat also leads to insurrections in Wales and Ireland.

1315. The Irish offer the crown to Robert Bruce; he declines it, but his brother Edward accepts it, sails for Ireland with about 6000 men in a fleet of 300 vessels, lands at Lorne in Antrim (25 May), defeats the O'Connors and the Red Earl of Ulster at the Boyne, lays siege to Carrickfergus, and defeats the English under Lord Justice Roger Mortimer. The Scotch ravage Northumberland, and besiege Carlisle (Aug.).

1315-1316. A dreadful famine visits England; wheat rises to 40 marks a quarter, or 66 shillings a bushel.

1316. O'Niell of Tyrone gives up his claim to the Irish throne to Edward Bruce, who is crowned king (May). Feidlim O'Connor (fighting in the interest of the Bruces) is defeated at Athenry (10 Aug.) by the English under William de Burgh and Richard de Bermingham, and the O'Connor sept is exterminated and disappears from history, 11,000 of them being slain. Robert Bruce comes from Scotland to his brother's assistance (Sep.); captures Carrickfergus, and the two brothers, at the head of 20,000 men, advance to Dublin and ravage the country as far as Limerick, but fail to capture Dublin.

Edward II. proposes another invasion of Scotland (Aug.); many nobles refuse to join him; and the idea is abandoned.

1317. Robert Bruce returns to Scotland, leaving his forces in Ireland. Roger Mortimer is made viceroy in Ireland, lands there with a considerable army, and partially restores order.

1318. Robert Bruce captures Berwick (2 Ap.) and ravages Northumberland and Yorkshire, 84 towns and villages being burned.

The English parliament appoints a council of 16 to "assist the king" (July).

Edward Bruce and the De Lacys (who have gone over to his side) are defeated at Faughard, near Dundalk (14 Oct.), by the English under John of Birmingham, and Bruce is slain.

1319. Edward II. makes an unsuccessful attempt to recover Berwick. He makes a two years' truce with "Sir Robert de Brus" (21 Dec.).

1320. Edward II. goes to France (June-July), and does homage for his possessions there. On his return he chooses Hugh le Despenser as a new favorite, and bestows large estates on him.

1321. The Earls of Hereford and Lancaster, with their joint forces, appear at the parliament at Westminster, and compel the king to banish his favorites, the Despensers (19 Aug.). The king recalls them (8 Dec.), and ravages the barons' lands. The Earl of Lancaster forms an open alliance with the Scots. He had long had a secret understanding with them.

There has been more or less famine in England since 1314; and in this year the famine is so dreadful that the people devour the flesh of horses, dogs, cats, and vermin, and multitudes die of hunger. The total mortality during the seven years has been so great as to produce a scarcity of hands, and thereby to bring about a considerable and permanent increase in wages.

1322. Edward II. concert measures with young Despensers, who was then an admiral on the coast of Kent, collects an army, marches against the Earls of Lancaster and Hereford, and defeats them at Boroughbridge, near Carlisle (16 Mar.); Hereford is slain, and Lancaster surrenders. He is condemned without a hearing as a traitor, and beheaded at Pontefract (22 Mar.). Roger Mortimer, who has also surrendered, is condemned to death (2 Aug.), but the sentence is commuted to imprisonment for life in the Tower.

Edward II. again invades Scotland, but want of supplies compels him to retire; the Scots pursue him so closely that he narrowly escapes capture at Byland, in Blackmoor Forest.

1323. Edward II. makes a truce for 13 years with Robert Bruce (30 May), whereby he allows him to assume the title of King of Scotland.

Roger Mortimer escapes from the Tower (Aug.), and flees to Paris, where he becomes a centre of conspiracy against Edward II.

1324. War breaks out between Edward and France; the French capture Ponthieu and the Agenois, and attempt the conquest of Gascony.

The lands of the Knights Templars (suppressed in 1311) are granted to the Knights Hospitallers (17 Ed. II., c. 3).

John Wiclif, the precursor of the Protestant Reformation, is born about this date, probably in Yorkshire.

1325. Edward's queen Isabella goes to Paris (Mar.) and makes a treaty (31 May) with her brother, Charles IV., for a settlement of his dispute with Edward. She falls in love with Roger Mortimer, who becomes her paramour, and they conspire together against her husband Edward II. The king's half-brother, Edmund, Earl of Kent, joins her.

Edward II. falls ill at Dover, transfers his foreign posses-

sions to his son Edward, Prince of Wales (now 13), and sends him to Paris (12 Sept.) to do homage for them to Charles IV.

1326. Isabella and her son Edward go to Hainault, where she makes a contract for him to marry Philippa, a daughter of William, Count of Holland and Hainault, who agrees to assist her against her husband. In company with Roger Mortimer, her son Edward, and the Earl of Kent, and her foreign levies, she lands at the mouth of the Orwell, near Harwich (24 Sep.), and gaining allies from all classes, marches against the king, who flees from London. Prince Edward is proclaimed guardian of the realm (26 Oct.). Edward II., after making a futile attempt to land on Lundy Isle, in the Bristol Channel, is taken prisoner at Neath in Glamorgan, Wales (16 Nov.). He is taken to Kenilworth, and put in charge of Henry, Earl of Lancaster, brother of Thomas whom he had put to death at Pontefract in 1322 ; and is hurried from fortress to fortress. His favorites the Despensers and their friends are all put to death (Oct.-Nov.).

1327. Parliament meets at Westminster (7 Jan.), deposes Edward II., and swears fealty to Queen Isabella and her eldest son, Edward. The prince refuses to accept the crown without his father's consent, and a deputation waits upon Edward II. at Kenilworth, and procures his resignation (20 Jan.). His ultimate fate is doubtful, but the commonly accepted belief is that he was murdered with circumstances of dreadful cruelty in Berkeley Castle in Gloucestershire (21 Sep.).

Edward III. is crowned at Westminster (1 Feb.) ; as he is only 15 years old, the government is nominally given to a regency of 4 bishops, 4 earls, and 6 barons ; but the real power remains in the hands of Roger Mortimer.

Robert Bruce of Scotland breaks the truce and invades England. Edward III., while pursuing the Scots, narrowly escapes capture (4 Aug.).

1328. Edward III. (now 16) marries Philippa of Hainault (also 16), Jan.

Mortimer and Edward III. make peace at Edinburgh with Bruce (17 Mar.), acknowledging his kingship and the independence of Scotland, and agreeing that his son David (a boy of 4) shall marry Joan or Jane (now 7), a daughter of Edward II. The Scots agree to pay £20,000 in three years. Parliament meets at Northampton and ratifies the treaty, which is consequently known as "the Treaty of Northampton."

Charles IV., King of France, dies. Edward III. claims to succeed him, as grandson (through his mother Isabella) of Philip IV., in opposition to Philip Valois, nephew of Philip

IV. The question is tried by the peers of France, who decide in favor of Philip VI. and against Edward III., whose claim is set aside under the Salic law, which excludes from the throne all females and their descendants.

1329. Edward III. goes to France (26 May), and does homage to Philip VI. for Guienne, etc. (6 June), thereby apparently acquiescing in the decision against his claim to the French throne.

Prince David of Scotland marries Joan, Edward III.'s sister. Robert Bruce, King of Scotland, dies (7 June); his son, David II. (a boy of 5) succeeds him, and the country is governed by a succession of regents. David is crowned at Scone (23 Nov.).

1330. Edmund, Earl of Kent, half-brother of Edward II., is arrested (13 Mar.) at the instance of Mortimer, on a charge of conspiring to restore Edward II. (who, it is rumored, is still alive), and is beheaded (19 Mar.).

Edward ("the Black Prince"), the eldest son of Edward III. and Philippa, is born at Woodstock (15 June).

Edward III., determined to rid himself of Mortimer's domination, has him arrested during the sitting of parliament at Nottingham (19 Oct.) and taken to the Tower. Mortimer is charged with the deaths of Edward II. and the Earl of Kent, and is tried and hanged at Tyburn (29 Nov.). Queen Isabella is allowed £3000 a year, and compelled to retire to Risings Castle, Hertford, where she lives in privacy for 27 years, till her death (22 Aug., 1358).

1331. Edward III. goes to France (4 Ap.), and again at Amiens does homage for Guienne to Philip VI. as his lord (13 Ap.). He returns to England (20 Ap.).

1332. Edward Baliol (son of John Baliol, King of Scotland in 1292-1296) lays claim to the Scottish throne. He is supported by a number of Scotch nobles and also secretly by Edward III. He sails from Ravenspur in Yorkshire, lands at Kinghorn in Fife (7 Aug.), and defeats the Scotch regent, the Earl of Mar, at Duplin in Strathearn, near Perth (12 Aug.), occupies and successfully defends Perth, and is crowned at Scone (27 Sep.), the English fleet having annihilated that of the Scotch in a battle in the river Tay. David II. (now a boy of 8), with his girl-wife Joan (now 11), takes refuge in Normandy. Baliol makes a treaty with Edward III., agreeing, in return for his support, to give up Berwick (23 Nov.) and do homage to him for Scotland.

The Scotch national party rally, and Sir Archibald Douglas defeats Baliol at Annan (Dec.); he retires to the English court (Dec.), and Douglas raids Cumberland.

1333. Edward III. lays siege to Berwick; the Scotch under Douglas (now regent) advance to its relief, but are defeated at Halidon Hill, near Berwick (19 July), with a loss of 30,000 men, including the regent and four earls. Berwick surrenders (20 July). Edward conquers southern Scotland, and reinstates Baliol on the throne, and the Scotch parliament at Perth receives Baliol as king (Oct.).

1335. The English parliament at York passes (May) an Act (9 Ed. III., c. 1) granting freedom of trading to foreign merchants.

The Scots having again driven Baliol from the throne, Edward III. invades Scotland (Aug.), ravages the south-east part of the country, and reinstates Baliol.

1336. The war in Scotland goes on intermittently.

There is a famine in England caused by long rains.

1337. Philip VI., King of France, having openly espoused the claim of David II. to the throne of Scotland as against Edward's nominee Baliol, and having also taken possession of some towns in the Agenois, Edward's territory, Edward forms continental alliances, including Flanders, assumes the title of King of France (7 Oct.), and begins against France what is known as "the Hundred Years' War."

An Act (11. Ed. III., c. 1) prohibits the exportation of wool.

1338. The French burn Portsmouth (June). Edward sails from the Orwell, in Suffolk (16 July), with a large army, and lands in Flanders; he leaves Prince Edward (now 8) as regent. The French attack Southampton (4 Oct.).

1339. Edward III. advances into France (Sep.), but the French retreat before him, and he fails to bring them to an engagement.

1340. Edward, being deserted by his allies, retires to Flanders, and then returns to England for fresh supplies (21 Feb.).

Parliament meets (29 Mar.) and grants supplies. An Act (14 Ed. III., c. 12) is passed establishing one weight and measure for the whole kingdom.

Edward III. again sails from the Orwell (22 June), and at the battle of Sluys (24 June) defeats and destroys a French fleet sent to intercept him. He lands and lays siege to Tournay, but effects nothing; concludes at Esplechin (25 Sep.) a nine months' truce with Philip VI.; and returns to England, arriving in London 30 Nov. Suspecting that his ministry have been defrauding him in the matter of taxes he dismisses them.

Cannon are first used in England.

Geoffrey Chaucer, the father of English poetry, is born.

1341. During the truce Edward's German allies desert him, and David II. returns to Scotland and resumes the crown (June). The truce with France is prolonged till 1342.

1342. The French again burn Portsmouth and attack Southampton (Sep.). Civil war having broken out in Brittany, Edward takes advantage of it to go there (5 Oct.) and renew his war with France, but he effects little.

1343. Edward III. agrees with France (19 Jan.) to a truce for 3 years and 8 months, the matters in dispute to be referred to the pope in the meantime. He returns to England, landing at Weymouth (2 Mar.).

1345. Edward III. sails from Sandwich (3 July) to Flanders, to obtain the earldom for his son Edward, but fails and returns to England (26 July).

War with France is renewed. Edward sends the Earl of Derby (son of Henry, Earl of Lancaster) to Gascony. and he there, at Auberoche (19 Aug.), defeats the French under Philip's eldest son, John, Duke of Normandy.

1346. The Duke of Normandy turns the tables on the Earl of Derby, and besieges him in the fortress of Aiguillon, on the Garonne. Edward himself, with a view to draw the Duke of Normandy northward, lands (12 July) at La Hogue in Normandy, threatens Paris, and defeats the French, under Philip VI., at Crecy (near Abbeville), 26 Aug., the French losing over 30,000 men, including 11 princes and 1200 knights, the English slaying considerably more than their own number. Edward not being strong enough to advance into France, lays siege to Calais (Sep.). The victory at Crecy compels the Duke of Normandy to raise the siege of Aiguillon, and the Earl of Derby overruns south-east France.

It is said that Edward had four cannon at Crecy, the first occasion on which cannon were used by the English in battle. They are also used at the siege of Calais.

Philip VI. writes to David II. of Scotland, begging him to make a diversion ; David invades England and ravages Cumberland and Durham, but is defeated by the English, under the joint command of Henry Percy and Ralph Neville, at Neville's Cross, near Durham (17 Oct.), over 15,000 Scots being slain ; David himself is taken prisoner, and is sent to London, where he is kept in honorable confinement till 1357.

Edward Baliol, at the head of an English army, invades Scotland and ravages the Lothians.

1347. Calais, after a brave defence for a year, being on the

verge of famine, surrenders to Edward (4 Aug.), the lives of the deputation making the surrender being spared at the intercession of Queen Philippa. Calais remained in the possession of the English till 1558. The resources of England are so exhausted that Edward cannot continue the struggle, and he makes a truce with Philip VI. for a few months, which is renewed from time to time. Edward returns to England, landing at Sandwich (12 Oct.).

1348-1349. The Black Death, the most awful pestilence that ever visited the human race, after passing from Asia over Europe, devastates England.* Its first victims were in Dorset in Aug., 1348; and it reached its height from May to Oct., 1349. In Norwich 60,000 are said to have died; in London, 100,000; and proportionate numbers in other cities. Altogether at least one-third and probably one-half of the population perished; so that, as the total population seems to have been about 4,000,000 or 5,000,000, the probability is that the total deaths in England alone were 2,000,000 or 2,500,000. The plague also visits Scotland and Ireland. In England, by cutting off the supply of labor, it brings about a social and economical revolution. The laborers, being masters of the situation, combine to force up wages, but "the Statute of Laborers" (23 Ed. III., c. 1) is passed (1349), directing them to work for their usual wages for any who will employ them.

1349. Edward III. goes to Calais (Jan.), and repels an attempt by the French to capture it.

1350. Philip VI., King of France, dies (20 Aug.); his son John II. succeeds.

Edward III. defeats a Spanish fleet off Winchelsea in Sussex (29 Aug.).

1351. Acts are passed declaring that children of English subjects born abroad are natural-born subjects (25 Ed. III., c. 2); and prohibiting papal "provisions"† (c. 6).

1352. The Statute of Treasons (25 Ed. III., st. 5, c. 2) is passed, defining what offences constitute treason.

The English defeat the French at Mauron in Brittany (14 Aug.).

1353. Edward III. negotiates with John II. of France for a

* This is the scourge whose visitation in Florence is described from personal observation by Boccaccio in his "Decameron." The total number of victims throughout Europe is estimated to have been about 25,000,000.

† This name was given to the induction of foreigners by the pope into English benefices.

permanent peace, offering to relinquish his claim to the French crown if Aquitaine is given to him in full sovereignty, that is, free from the claims of the French king as feudal lord; the offer is rejected, the French envoys declining to surrender a fragment of French sovereignty.

The Statute of Staples (27 Ed III., st. 2) is passed.

A famine occurs in England.

1354. An Act (28 Ed. III., c. 5) is passed forbidding the exportation of iron.

1355. Edward, the Black Prince, leads an army from Bordeaux, and brutally ravages southern France, destroying over 500 towns or villages in seven weeks. Edward III. goes to Calais and invades northern France (Nov.).

The Scots capture Berwick (6 Nov.) and ravage the English border; and Edward III. returns hastily from Calais, and checks their depredations.

1356. For a money consideration Edward Baliol assigns (20 Jan.) to Edward III. his claim to the Scottish throne, and Edward invades Scotland, captures Berwick, and, in an expedition which was known as "the Burnt Candlemas," lays waste the country for 20 miles from the coast, but is compelled to return to England for supplies, the Scots following his retreating forces.

The Black Prince marches towards the north of France (July), and defeats the French under King John II. at Poitiers (19 Sep.); John and his younger son Philip are taken prisoners. During John's imprisonment his eldest son, the Dauphin Charles, acts as regent of France.

1357. A two years' truce with France is made (23 Mar.); the Black Prince lands at Plymouth (5 May) with his royal prisoners, and enters London in triumph (24 May).

Edward makes peace at Berwick with Scotland (3 Oct.), and in consideration of 100,000 marks, to be paid in ten yearly instalments, releases David II. (Nov.), who has been in captivity since 1346; David returns to Scotland as king.

An Ordinance (31 Ed. III., st. 4, cc. 1-19) is passed, relating to the government of Ireland.

1359. In the absence of King John II., France has fallen into anarchy; and the two years' truce having expired, Edward III., after a vain attempt to make peace, again invades the country (Nov.). While his general, Sir Walter Manny, with an army of German mercenaries, overruns Picardy and Artois, Edward ravages Champagne, but fails in an attempt to capture Rheims; he then marches to Paris, but fails to bring the Dauphin to an engagement, and is

compelled to retreat for want of supplies. A Norman fleet meanwhile ravages the English coast near Winchelsea in Sussex.

1360. Edward III. and the Dauphin conclude peace at Bretigny, near Chartres (8 May); Gascony, Guienne, Poitou, Montreuil, and Ponthieu, with Calais and Guisnes, are yielded to Edward free from all feudal claims; Edward, in return, relinquishes all claims to the throne of France, and to Normandy, Touraine, Anjou, Maine, Brittany, and Flanders; King John II. to be liberated on payment of 3,000,000 marks or golden crowns (or £2,000,000).

King John II. is liberated on parole (2 July), and goes to France to raise his own ransom, leaving hostages in his place.

John Wiclif (now about 36), by his attacks on the mendicant orders, first rises into prominence.

1361. Edward, the Black Prince, marries (10 Oct.) his cousin Joan ("the Fair Maid of Kent"), daughter of Edmund, Earl of Kent, a son of Edward I. The pope afterwards grants a dispensation for the marriage, to obviate the objections on the ground of consanguinity, and of divorce from her second husband.

The "second great pestilence" visits England.

1362. Edward III. makes the Black Prince Duke of Aquitaine.

An Act (36 Ed. III., c. 15) is passed providing that law pleadings shall, for the first time, be written in English, instead of in Norman-French, as heretofore. English is also used for the king's opening address in parliament, and the debates in the Commons.

1363. The Black Prince goes to Aquitaine as its duke, living at Bordeaux as his capital.

A sumptuary law (37 Ed. III., cc. 8-14) is passed regulating the food and dress of each class of the people.

1364. John II. of France, being unable to raise his ransom, returns to England (1 Jan.), and delivers himself up to Edward. He dies at Savoy Palace, London (8 Ap.); his son, Charles V., succeeds him. The new king fails to keep the provisions of the Treaty of Bretigny, and war breaks out in Brittany, battles being fought at Cocherel (16 May) and Auray, near Vannes (29 Sep.); at the latter Charles of Blois is slain, and his rival, De Montfort, gets possession of Brittany.

1366. Richard, the son of the Black Prince and Joan of Kent, is born at Bordeaux (3 Ap.).

Henry Plantagenet (afterwards Henry IV.), the only son of

John of Gaunt and his wife Blanche Grismond, is born at Bolingbroke,* in Lincolnshire.

John Wiclif, in consequence of his teachings, is ejected from the mastership of Baliol Hall, Oxford.

1367. Pedro I. ("the Cruel"), King of Castile, being driven from his throne, takes refuge in Bordeaux with the Black Prince, who espouses his cause, crosses the Pyrenees at Roncesvalles, defeats Pedro's natural brother and rival, Henry of Trastamare, at Najara or Navarrete, near Logroño, in Castile (3 Ap.), and reinstates Pedro on the throne. Great losses in his army from sickness compel him to retire to Aquitaine.

1368. Lionel, Duke of Clarence, third son of Edward III., dies in Italy (17 Oct.), aged 30. He leaves an only child, Philippa (born 16 Aug., 1355), afterwards married to Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March, great-grandson of Roger Mortimer, the paramour of Edward II.'s queen Isabella. It was through this child Philippa that the Yorkists subsequently claimed the throne, in opposition to the Lancastrians.

1369. The Gascons complain to Charles V. of France of the heavy taxes imposed on them by the Black Prince, and Charles summons the prince (1 May) to Paris to answer. The prince, however, prepares for war, and Edward III. resumes the title of King of France (3 June).

A 14 years' truce is made with Scotland (18 June).

Philippa, queen of Edward III., dies (15 Aug.). After her death, Alice Perrers, a lady of her bedchamber, acquires great influence over the king, which, in conjunction with John of Gaunt,† Duke of Lancaster (the fourth son of Edward III.), she uses corruptly.

John of Gaunt's first wife Blanche (mother of Henry IV.) dies.

The "third great pestilence" ravages England (2 July-29 Sep.).

Henry of Trastamare defeats Pedro I. at Montiel (14 Mar.), and kills him in his (Henry's) tent (23 Mar.), and becomes King of Castile. The war between England and France continues.

1370. The French invade Gascony (Jan.), and Limoges admits a French garrison. The Black Prince captures it by assault (Oct.), burns the town, and massacres the inhabitants,

* Hence his designation, Henry of Bolingbroke.

† Born in 1340, at Ghent (French *Gand*, English Gaunt), hence his designation. He was the founder of the Lancastrian party, so called after his title, Duke of Lancaster.

3000 men, women, and children being ruthlessly slaughtered. The French garrison are spared.

John of Gaunt marries Constance, a natural daughter of Pedro the Cruel, and in right of his wife assumes the title of King of Castile and Leon, as against Henry of Trastamare.

1371. The Black Prince, who has been in feeble health since the hardships of his Spanish campaign in 1367, returns to England (Jan.). On recovering his health he places himself at the head of the constitutional party, in opposition to the corrupt court party headed by his brother, John of Gaunt, and Alice Perrers, the king's mistress.

With a view to curtail the inordinate power of the Church, which now owns about one-third of the land in England, the Commons petition for the removal of the clergy from the higher offices of state.

1371-4. The French gradually reconquer all the English possessions in France, except Calais, Bordeaux, Bayonne, and a few towns on the Dordogne.

1372. John of Gaunt's assumption of the title of King of Castile having led to a war between England and Henry II. (of Trastamare), the latter defeats and destroys the English fleet, under the Earl of Pembroke, in a great naval battle off Rochelle (23 June), and a truce is made, which is renewed from time to time.

1374. A truce till 1 May, 1375, is made with France (11 Feb.).

Wiclif is sent, as a member of a royal commission, to Bruges to negotiate with the legate of Pope Gregory XI. with regard to the "provisions" (July). The insight which he thus obtains into the claims and methods of the papacy leads him on his return to denounce the pope as "Antichrist, the proud, worldly priest of Rome." He is made rector of Lutterworth in Leicestershire.

1375. The truce with France is extended till 1 Ap., 1377.

1376. The "Good Parliament" meets; Sir Peter de la Mare takes the lead in the debates, and is hence usually spoken of as the first Speaker of the House of Commons. The parliament, backed by the influence of the Black Prince, reforms the affairs of the government, procures the punishment of offenders, and compels Alice Perrers to take an oath that she will cease to intermeddle with state affairs, on pain of banishment.

The Black Prince dies (8 June), aged nearly 46. His only child Richard, now heir-apparent, being only 10 years old, the Good Parliament, fearing that John of Gaunt may lay

claim to the succession, insists on the immediate recognition of Richard's heirship.

1377. A parliament meets, which, under the influence of John of Gaunt and the Lancastrian party, reverses the policy of the Good Parliament, and withdraws the proceedings against Alice Perrers.

It passes an Act (50 Ed. III., c. 3) granting pardon to all offenders on account of the king's jubilee (25 Jan.).

Wiclif, having sided with the Lancastrian party in their opposition to the Church, is arraigned on a charge of heresy before William Courtenay, Bishop of London, at St. Paul's. He appears (19 Feb.), supported by John of Gaunt, who quarrels with Courtenay and threatens to drag him out of the church by his hair. This insult leads to a riot directed against John of Gaunt, but he escapes.

The pope issues several bulls (May) to the king, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the University of Oxford, directing that Wiclif be arraigned for heresy. Before they can be acted on, Edward III. dies (21 June) at Shene (now Richmond), aged 64; his grandson Richard II. (the only son of the Black Prince) succeeds him (22 June). He is crowned at Westminster (16 July).

The French ravage the Isle of Wight, attack Southampton unsuccessfully, and burn Hastings and Rye (July-Aug.).

Parliament meets (13 Oct.), and as the king is only 11 years old, it forms a Council of Regency of 9 persons drawn from the three orders represented in parliament. Supplies are granted for the French war, and Alice Perrers is banished. With the assent of the Commons, John of Gaunt becomes practically chief minister.

The population of England and Wales is about 2,500,000, Wales having about 240,000.

1378. Charles the Bad, King of Navarre, cedes Cherbourg to the English.

Parliament meets at Gloucester (Oct.); it refuses to grant a subsidy till the accounts of the last one are submitted to them. It passes an Act (2 Rich. II., c. 7) recognizing Urban VI. as pope; persons recognizing Clement VII., the rival pope, to forfeit their goods.

Wiclif, in accordance with the papal bulls, is arraigned for heresy; but the Londoners, having no great affection for papal bulls, break up the court. Wiclif publishes his translation of the New Testament into English from the Latin version of St. Jerome used by the Romish communion, and known as the Vulgate. His translation, though condemned by the

Church, is eagerly read by the people and becomes a potent influence in the spread of so-called heretical doctrines. He also sends out "poor priests" to disseminate his doctrines among the people.

1380. The French ravage the Sussex and Kentish coasts (Aug.), and burn Gravesend (Sep.).

Charles V. of France dies (16 Sep.) ; his son Charles VI. (a youth of 12) succeeds him. The people of Brittany, who had been friendly to the English, now rise against and expel them, and war breaks out there. To meet its expenses poll-taxes are imposed (Nov.). Though this tax was graduated, yet it pressed more severely on the lower than the higher orders.

An Act (3 Rich. II., c. 3) is passed prohibiting foreigners from holding benefices.

Wiclif publishes a revised or second edition of his translation of the New Testament.

1381. The discontent created by the poll-tax and the harsh modes of collecting it leads to open insurrection by the villeins. Jack Straw leads them in Essex ; Wat Tyler (5 June) at Dartford in Kent ; and at Gravesend. Tyler is made general leader, and is accompanied by John Ball, a popular preacher. The insurrection extends from Cornwall to Yorkshire, much property being destroyed, and several officials put to death. The insurgents pillage Lambeth Palace, enter London (13 June), destroy John of Gaunt's house, and kill about 50 Flemish merchants. Richard II. (now 15) meets the Essexmen at Mile End (14 June) and receives their petition demanding the abolition of villenage, the reduction of rent to 4d. an acre, free access to all markets, and a general pardon. The king grants all demands. Wat Tyler, however, with his followers, sacks the Tower (14 June) and murders Simon of Sudbury, Archbishop of Canterbury ; the king meets him and his followers at Smithfield (15 June) ; Tyler is smitten down by Lord Mayor Walworth and killed by the king's followers ; and the insurrection is subsequently suppressed. Commissions for the trial of the offenders are issued (10 July), and about 1500 of them are executed, including John Ball, who is hanged at St. Albans (15 July).

Parliament meets ; the Commons refuse to emancipate the villeins, revoke the general pardon, and declare over 250 persons exempt from it. This leads to further risings (July, Sep.) in Kent, which are also suppressed.

Wiclif, in his lectures at Oxford, attacks the doctrine of Transubstantiation, and is cited for heresy before a synod at Greyfriars, London.

The first Act (5 Rich. II., st. 2, c. 5) against the Lollards,* as Wiclif's followers are called, is passed by the lords and the king, ordering them to be imprisoned until they shall justify themselves according to the law of the Church. This severe measure was passed partly because the Lollards had been supporters of the Peasant's Revolt under Wat Tyler and Jack Straw.

1382. Richard II. (now 16) marries Anne of Bohemia ("Good Queen Anne"), a daughter of the Emperor Charles IV. (14 Jan.). This connection between England and Bohemia did much towards making Wiclif's writings known on the continent, especially in Bohemia and other parts of Germany.†

Several of Wiclif's principal adherents are induced to recant, and his doctrines are condemned by a council held at Blackfriars, London (May). He himself is cited before a council held at Oxford (Nov.); but while admitting a Real Presence, he persists in denying Transubstantiation. No sentence is passed on him, but his opinions are declared heretical, 24 of his articles are condemned and burnt, and he is debarred from teaching at the University. The Lollards address a remonstrance to parliament against the Act of 1381.

An Act (6 Rich. II., c. 13) is passed, pardoning the recent insurgents, with some exceptions.

A great earthquake is felt in England (21 May).

The first complete translation of the Bible into English is finished by the end of this year, and is rapidly disseminated among the people by itinerant preachers ("poor priests"). It was the joint work of Wiclif and his friend and follower Nicholas of Hereford, the latter doing the Old Testament as far as Baruch, and Wiclif the rest.

1384. Truce is made with France (26 Jan.); and with Scotland.

* The origin of this name is uncertain. It seems to have been first given to a semi-monastic society founded in Antwerp, about 1300, for the burial of the dead. The most probable derivation of their name is from the Low-German word *lollen*, or *lullen*, meaning to sing slowly or softly, in allusion to their custom of singing dirges at funerals. The English words "lull" and "lullaby" are cognate. These "Lollards" of Antwerp came under the reproach of heresy; hence the name got to be applied to heretics in general. Some authorities derive the name from Walter Lollard, who is said to have been burnt in 1322 at Cologne for heresy; but he was probably a mythical personage.

† The Bohemian reformers, John Huss (1373-1414) and Jerome of Prague (1375?-1416), both of whom were burnt for heresy, were no doubt influenced in this way by Wiclif's teachings.

John Wiclif, "the morning-star of the Reformation," dies of paralysis at Lutterworth (31 Dec.), aged about 60. His death at this time no doubt saved him from martyrdom.

1385. The Scots, with French assistance, invade England; Richard II. leads an army against them, burns Edinburgh (Aug.), and ravages the country.

Richard II., being childless, declares his nephew, Roger Mortimer, Earl of March (son of Philippa and Edmund Mortimer, and grandson of Lionel, Duke of Clarence, the third son of Edward III.), heir to the throne.*

John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, the king's uncle, who has been the principal power in England during the king's minority, becoming distrusted, goes to Spain to prosecute his claim to the throne of Castile as son-in-law of Pedro the Cruel; Thomas, Duke of Gloucester, another of the king's uncles, † succeeds to his influence.

1386. The Duke of Gloucester brings charges against the king's ministry; the chancellor, Michael de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, is impeached (Oct.); and the king is compelled (19 Nov.) to agree to a Commission of Regency, consisting of Gloucester and ten other lords and prelates.

1387. Richard II. induces the judges to declare this commission illegal (25 Aug.); but Gloucester enters London with an army, defeats an opposing force, under the Duke of Ireland, at Radcot Bridge in Oxfordshire (20 Dec.); and the king is forced to allow his chief advisers to be accused of treason (Dec.).

1388. The "Wonderful" or "Merciless Parliament" meets (3 Feb.), and condemns a number of the king's ministers and judges to death (13 Feb.), the sentence being carried out in five cases (5, 12 May).

John of Gaunt ends his war in Spain by giving his daughter Catherine to Henry, son of John I., successor to Henry of Trastamare, King of Castile.

The Scots, under the Earls of Douglas and Murray, invade England, and lay siege to Otterburn Castle, near Wooler in Northumberland; the English, under the Percies (Hotspur and Ralph), attack them, but are defeated (10 Aug.) with a loss of 2000 men, both Percies being taken prisoners; Douglas, however, is slain. This battle was commemorated in the famous ballad of "Chevy Chase."

* William of Hatfield (born 1336), second son of Edward III., had died young. The Earl of March's mother Philippa was dead, and he was consequently the real heir-presumptive to the throne,

† He was the sixth son of Edward III.

Chaucer writes his "Canterbury Tales."

1389. Richard II. (now 23) declares that he is "old enough to manage his own affairs," dismisses the Council of Regency, and takes the government into his own hands (3 May).

A truce with France is made till 16 Aug., 1392.

1392. A quarrel between Richard II. and the citizens of London culminates in a riot; the quarrel is healed through the influence of Queen Anne.

The truce with France is extended till Sep., 1393.

1393. The Statute of Provisors or *Præmunire* (16 Rich. II., c. 5) is passed for the purpose of curbing the pretensions of the papacy. It declares that the right of presentation to a benefice belongs to the king's court, condemns the practice of papal translation, and enacts "that if any purchase, or pursue, in the Court of Rome, or elsewhere, such translations, processes, excommunications, bulls," etc., he and his abettors shall forfeit their lands and goods to the king, and themselves be brought before the king and his council, or be proceeded against by writ of *Præmunire* * *facias*, bidding the sheriff to "forewarn" the offender when and where to appear to answer the charges against him.

1394. A four-years' truce is made with France (27 May).

Ireland having fallen into disorder, Richard II. goes over in person (Oct.), takes some just and moderate measures, holds a parliament, and induces all the native princes to swear fealty.

Richard's queen, Anne of Bohemia, dies childless (7 June), aged 27.

About this date William Langland writes his "Vision and Creed of Piers Ploughman."

1395. The Lollards have become so strong that they present a petition to Parliament attacking the priests, and demanding that the Church shall be reformed on Lollard principles. The Church demands the return and protection of the king, who comes back from Ireland (July) and expels the Lollards from Oxford. Roger Mortimer, Earl of March (declared heir to the throne in 1385), is made viceroy in Ireland.

Sir William Scrope buys the sovereignty of the Isle of Man from the Earl of Salisbury.

1396. Richard II. goes to Calais, and there marries (31 Oct.) Isabella, a child 8 years old, daughter of Charles VI. of France; she is crowned queen in 1397. A truce for 25 years is made with France.

* The word *præmunire* is said to be a corruption of *præmonere*, to forewarn. It was in this way that the term *præmunire* came to designate the offence of upholding a foreign power against the Crown.

John of Gaunt marries his mistress, Catherine Swynford.

1397. Richard II., having apparently dissembled for several years his desire for vengeance against his former opponents, now, relying probably upon his alliance with France, causes the arrest of Gloucester (his uncle), Warwick, and the Earl of Arundel (July); Gloucester is sent to Calais, and there strangled or smothered by the king's orders (Sep.). Parliament meets (17 Sep.); the charges against Gloucester and his associates are there made; and Arundel (notwithstanding his former pardon) is condemned and beheaded (21 Sep.); and Warwick is exiled to the Isle of Man.

John of Gaunt's four children by Catherine Swynford are legitimized by patent, by Act of parliament, and by papal decree; one of them, John Beaufort (afterwards Earl of Somerset), was great-grandfather of Henry VII.

1398. Parliament meets at Shrewsbury (27 Jan.), repeals the acts of the Wonderful Parliament, and grants the king a tax on wool and hides for life; and a permanent committee of 12 peers and 6 commoners is appointed to represent parliament for the future. Richard, having thus done away with the necessity of calling parliament, and destroyed his old enemies, becomes practically an absolute monarch. He raises forced loans, and interferes with the administration of justice; he also declares 17 counties outlawed for having supported Gloucester in 1387. All these things create popular discontent. Of Richard's old opponents of 1386 there remain only the Dukes of Norfolk and Hereford (Henry Bolingbroke, the only legitimate son of John of Gaunt); these two quarrel, and Richard banishes Hereford for 10 years and Norfolk for life (16 Sept.). Hereford goes to Paris.

Roger Mortimer, Earl of March and Viceroy of Ireland (the king's nephew, whom he declared heir to the throne in 1385), is killed in a skirmish at Kenlys, in Ossory (20 July). He leaves two children, Edmund and Anne Mortimer. Edmund succeeds to his father's rights, and becomes heir-presumptive to the throne.

1399. John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster (fourth son of Edward III.), dies (3 Feb.); and Richard II. seizes his estates (18 Mar.), John of Gaunt's son, Henry Bolingbroke, having been banished in 1398.

Richard II. sails (May) from Milford Haven to Ireland to exact vengeance for the death of Mortimer, leaving his uncle, Edmund, Duke of York (the fifth son of Edward III.), in charge of affairs in England.

Henry Bolingbroke, now Duke of Lancaster, with the in-

tention of claiming the throne, sails from Brittany (June) and lands at Ravenspur,* in Yorkshire (4 July); his uncle, the regent (Duke of York), joins him at Berkeley (27 July), and he is everywhere received with enthusiasm. Richard II. returns from Ireland to Wales, lands at Milford (5 Aug.), his army deserts him, and he takes refuge in Conway Castle, but is entrapped by Henry into leaving it, captured (20 Aug.), and lodged in the Tower (2 Sep.). Henry calls a parliament, and induces him to sign his abdication (29 Sep.). Parliament meets at Westminster (30 Sep.), deposes Richard, and declares his cousin Bolingbroke king, as Henry IV. (30 Sep.).† Henry is enthroned by both archbishops (30 Sep.). Parliament reassembles (6 Oct.); Henry IV. is crowned at Westminster (13 Oct.), and parliament sentences "Richard, late King of England," to perpetual imprisonment (27 Oct.), and he is transferred to Pontefract or Pomfret Castle, in Yorkshire.

Edmund Mortimer, a child, next heir to the throne after Richard II., is kept in custody at Windsor, by Henry IV.

The governments of France and Scotland refuse to recognize Henry IV. as king, and prepare to invade England.

The Earls of Kent, Huntingdon, Rutland, and Salisbury, and others enter into a plot to murder Henry IV. and restore Richard (Dec.).

1400. The Earl of Rutland reveals the plot to restore Richard (4 Jan.), and it is suppressed at Cirencester, Kent being killed (6 Jan.). Salisbury is beheaded (7 Jan.), also Huntingdon (15 or 16 Jan.); and about 30 of the conspirators taken at Cirencester are executed (Jan.), and others at London (4 Feb.).

The fate of Richard himself is undetermined. One account states that he was murdered by Sir Piers Exton in Pontefract Castle; others state that he starved himself to death. The most probable view is that, at the time of the plot in his favor, he escaped from Pontefract, and that when it failed he took refuge in Scotland, where he became insane through grief, and where he died at Stirling in 1419.

* This port no longer exists, having been gradually submerged by the encroachments of the sea about 1550.

† Parliament, in thus declaring Henry IV. king, set aside the claims of Edmund Mortimer, who, as great-grandson of Lionel, Duke of Clarence, *third* son of Edward III., was the true heir to the throne according to strict hereditary right. It was this setting aside of the superior claims of Clarence's descendants which led to the Wars of Roses. Henry IV., it will be remembered, was son of John of Gaunt, *fourth* son of Edward III.

Henry IV. invades Scotland as far as Leith, and demands homage from the king ; but David, Duke of Rothsay, the heir-apparent, holds out in Edinburgh Castle, and want of provisions compels the English to retreat.

Geoffrey Chaucer, the father of English poetry, dies in London (25 Oct.), aged 60 ; he is buried in Westminster Abbey, in the portion afterwards known as "Poets' Corner."

1400-15. Owen Glendower (or Glyndwr), a Welsh gentleman, claims the title of Prince of Wales. and rouses a national revolt in Wales, which he maintains with more or less success for fifteen years.

1401. William Sawtre is burnt alive for Lollardy, denying Transubstantiation and refusing to worship the cross (12 Feb.).

On petition of the clergy (Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, being the prime mover), parliament passes the statute *De Hæretico Comburendo* ("For the Burning of Heretics." 2 Hen. IV., c. 15). It was directed against the Lollards, and provided that a person convicted of heresy by a spiritual court, refusing to recant, should be handed over to the civil power to be burnt alive.

1402. Henry IV. marries Joanna of Navarre at Eltham (3 Ap.), she being represented by proxy.

The Scots, under Patrick Hepburn, are defeated at Nisbet in Northumberland (7 May) by the English.

The Scots, under Archibald, Earl of Douglas, invade England (July), but are defeated at Homildon Hill, near Wooler in Northumberland (14 Sep.), by the English, under Harry Percy (Hotspur) ; Douglas is taken prisoner.

The Percies quarrel with Henry IV., and enter into negotiations with Owen Glendower and Douglas for concerted operations against him, and to make Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March, king (Dec.).

1403. Henry IV. marries Joanna of Navarre, at Westminster (7 Feb.) ; she is crowned (26 Feb.).

Henry IV. marches north to prevent the Percies from joining Glendower ; and he defeats them at Hateley-field, near Shrewsbury (23 July), Hotspur being slain.

A French fleet attacks the Isle of Wight and Plymouth, but is defeated at Portland.

1404. An Act (5 Hen. IV., c. 4) is passed declaring "the craft of multiplying gold or silver" (alchemy) to be felony.

France makes a treaty of alliance with Glendower, as "Owen, Prince of Wales" (14 July).

1405. Constance Despenser, Countess of Gloucester, takes

young Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March, from Windsor Castle, and flees (15 Feb.); but they are soon captured and brought back.

Prince Henry, the eldest son of Henry IV., goes to Wales to conduct the war there.

Another revolt under Richard Scrope (Archbishop of York) and Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, breaks out in the north; and the archbishop excommunicates Henry IV. (9 May). The Earl of Westmoreland marches against them; Scrope and Mowbray disband their forces, and are taken and summarily executed (8 June).

James (a boy of 14), the heir-apparent to the throne of Scotland, takes ship for France, but is captured by English cruisers off Flamborough Head (30 Mar.), and brought to Henry IV.; he is detained in England for 19 years, till 1424.

1406. Robert III., King of Scotland, dies (4 Ap.); James I. is acknowledged king, but being detained a prisoner in England, his uncle the Duke of Albany acts as regent.

An Act (7 Hen. IV., c. 2) is passed settling the crown on Henry IV. and his four sons.

1407. The Duke of Orleans, the eldest son and heir of Charles VI. of France, having debauched the young wife of the Duke of Burgundy, the latter causes Orleans to be assassinated in the streets of Paris (23 Nov.). This act leads to civil war in France, and so removes danger to Henry IV. from that quarter. Charles VI. has been insane since 1392.

A pestilence rages in England; 30,000 die in London.

1408. Owen Glendower, being deprived of his French allies, is driven by Henry IV. to the mountains of north Wales. The Earl of Northumberland and Lord Bardolph revolt in the north, but are defeated at Braham Moor, in Yorkshire (19 Feb.), by the royal troops under Sir Thomas Rokeby, Northumberland and Bardolph both being slain.

1410. Henry IV. sends an army to assist the Burgundians against the Armagnacs (as the Orleanists are called).

Thomas Badby, a Lollard, is executed for heresy in denying the Real Presence, the first execution under the statute *De Hæretico Comburendo* (Ap.).

1411. The Burgundians, assisted by troops sent by Henry IV., defeat the Armagnacs near St. Cloud, and capture Paris.

Henry Wardlaw, Bishop of St. Andrews, charts the University of St. Andrews (27 Feb.), the first in Scotland. It is sanctioned by a bull of Pope Benedict XII. (25 Aug., 1413).

1412. Henry IV. concludes a six years' truce with Scotland (7 May)..

Henry IV., with a view to keep up the conflict in France, goes over from the Burgundians to the Armagnacs (18 May), receiving Guienne in return for his support. An English army, under Thomas, Duke of Clarence (the king's second son), invades France, ravages Maine and Touraine, and completes the conquest of Guienne. The two French parties unite against the English, who in return ravage Normandy.

1413. Henry IV. dies of leprosy and epilepsy (20 Mar.), aged 46; his eldest son, Henry of Monmouth (so-called from his place of birth), succeeds him as Henry V. (21 Mar.), and is crowned at Westminster (9 Ap.).

Sir John Oldcastle, Lord Cobham, the leader of the Lollards, is cited before a spiritual court at St. Paul's (23-25 Sep.), and refusing to recant, is condemned to be burnt as a heretic (25 Sep.), and sent to the Tower, but escapes from prison and goes to Wales (28 Oct.).

Thomas Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, holds a synod at St. Paul's (20 Nov.-4 Dec.), to repress Wiclif's doctrines.

1414. Oldcastle's followers arrange for a meeting to be held in St. Giles' Fields (7 Jan.), but Henry V. gets warning, and 39 of them are arrested on their way thither, and are tried, condemned (10 Jan.), and hanged or burnt (12 Jan.).

An Act (2 Hen. V., st. 1, c. 7) is passed extending and making more stringent the statute *De Hæretico Comburendo*; it provides that all judges and municipal authorities shall arrest and try Lollards, and that all persons convicted of heresy shall have their goods confiscated.

Henry V. claims from France the territories ceded to Edward III. by the peace of Bretigny in 1360; also 1,600,000 crowns as the unpaid portion of the ransom of King John II., who had died in England in 1364; also the hand of Princess Catherine of France, with a dowry of 2,000,000 crowns (June).

1415. These preposterous demands are refused, but the French government offer Henry all Aquitaine south of the Charente, and 600,000 crowns as the princess's dowry. Henry prepares to invade France to enforce his full claims (Ap.). The French send an embassy offering Limousin in addition to the territory in Aquitaine, and to increase the dowry to 800,000 crowns. This offer is also rejected, and Henry sails from Southampton (11 Aug.) with an army of 30,000 men in 1500 ships, and lands at the mouth of the Seine (14 Aug.), on the present site of Havre de Grace. He captures Harfleur (22 Sep.), but loses nearly half his army by sickness and fighting, and retires towards Calais (8 Oct.). He is intercepted by a French army of 50,000 men; but they are defeated at Agin-

court (25 Oct.), with a loss of 10,000 killed and 15,000 prisoners, the English losing 1600. Among the captives is Charles, Duke of Orleans, the head of the Orleanists. Henry V. proceeds to Calais (29 Oct.) and thence returns to England (17 Nov.), and makes a triumphant entry into London (25 Nov.).

The Council of Constance condemns 45 articles of Wiclif's, and orders his bones to be dug out of consecrated ground, and cast on a dunghill (5 May).

1416. Sigismund, King of the Romans and champion of the Church, comes to England with a view to make peace between that country and France. Henry V. gives him a magnificent reception, but his offered mediation fails.

The French burn Portland in Dorsetshire (May), and besiege Harfleur, but it is relieved by the Duke of Bedford (15 Aug.), who captures or destroys nearly 500 French ships; it is again relieved by the Earl of Huntingdon (Oct.). John sans Peur, Duke of Burgundy, allies himself with the English.

1417. Henry V. again invades France, landing at Touque, near Honfleur (1 Aug.); and he makes himself master of Normandy, except Rouen.

Sir John Oldcastle is recaptured in Wales (Nov.), brought to London, and hung in chains and burnt (14 Dec.).

1418. Henry V. conquers the country from Artois to Brittany, and lays siege to Rouen (July).

Joanna of Navarre, widow of Henry IV., is accused of witchcraft, and imprisoned at Pevensey in Sussex.*

1419. Rouen, after having made an heroic defence for many months, and being in the last extremities of famine, surrenders to Henry V. (15 Jan.), who holds court there as Duke of Normandy, and receives the homage of the nobles.

John the Fearless, Duke of Burgundy and governor of France, is assassinated at a conference with the Dauphin Charles (now 16) at Montereau (10 Sep.); his son Philip the Good succeeds him, and preliminaries of peace are signed at Arras (17 Oct.) between the English and Philip, now the head of the Burgundian party, assuming to act in the name of France, the king, Charles VI., being still imbecile.

1420. In accordance with these preliminaries a formal treaty of peace is signed at Troyes (21 May); Henry V. is to marry the Princess Catherine, to succeed to the throne of France on the death of Charles VI., and, on account of that monarch's imbecility, to administer the affairs of the kingdom until his death. Henry V. marries Catherine at Troyes (2

* She was released, July, 1422, and died at Havering-at-Bower, 9 July, 1437.

June) ; he and Charles VI. enter Paris together ; and the Parliament of Paris ratifies the Treaty of Troyes (10 Dec.). Charles the Dauphin (son of Charles VI.), supported by the party of Armagnacs, repudiates the treaty.

The Spanish fleet defeats the English, and then goes to Scotland, and takes an army of about 6000 Scots under John Stewart, Earl of Buchan, to France, to assist the Dauphin.

1421. Henry V. and his bride go to England, land at Dover (1 Feb.) ; and Catherine is crowned at Westminster Abbey, by Chicheley, Archbishop of Canterbury (23 Feb.).

The French and Scotch, under the Dauphin and the Earl of Buchan, defeat the English under Thomas, Duke of Clarence (brother of Henry V.), at Beaugé in Anjou (22 Mar.), Clarence being slain. Buchan is made Constable of France. Henry V. leaves England (10 June), goes to Paris, captures Rheims, and besieges the castle of Marché, in Meaux (6 Oct.).

Henry VI. is born at Windsor (6 Dec.).

1422. Queen Catherine leaves England for France escorted by an army of 20,000 men under the Duke of Bedford (brother of Henry V.), and lands at Harfleur (21 May) ; Henry V., with her father Charles VI. and her mother Isabeau of Bavaria, meets Catherine at Vincennes, and they enter Paris (30 May). Henry captures Meaux (5 June), and advances against the Dauphin's army at Cosne, but falls ill at Senlis (about 25 miles N. E. of Paris), and is taken back to Vincennes, where he dies (31 Aug.), aged 33. His body is taken to England (Oct.) and buried in Westminster Abbey. His son, Henry VI. (a child 9 months old), succeeds him. John, Duke of Bedford (the eldest surviving brother of Henry V.) is made Regent of England and France ; Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester (younger brother of Henry V.) administering affairs in England under the title of Defender or Protector of the Kingdom.

Charles VI., King of France, dies (21 Oct.) ; his son claims the throne, and is crowned at Poitiers as Charles VII. The English reject his claim, and recognize him simply as the Dauphin ; and in Paris Henry VI. is recognized as king.

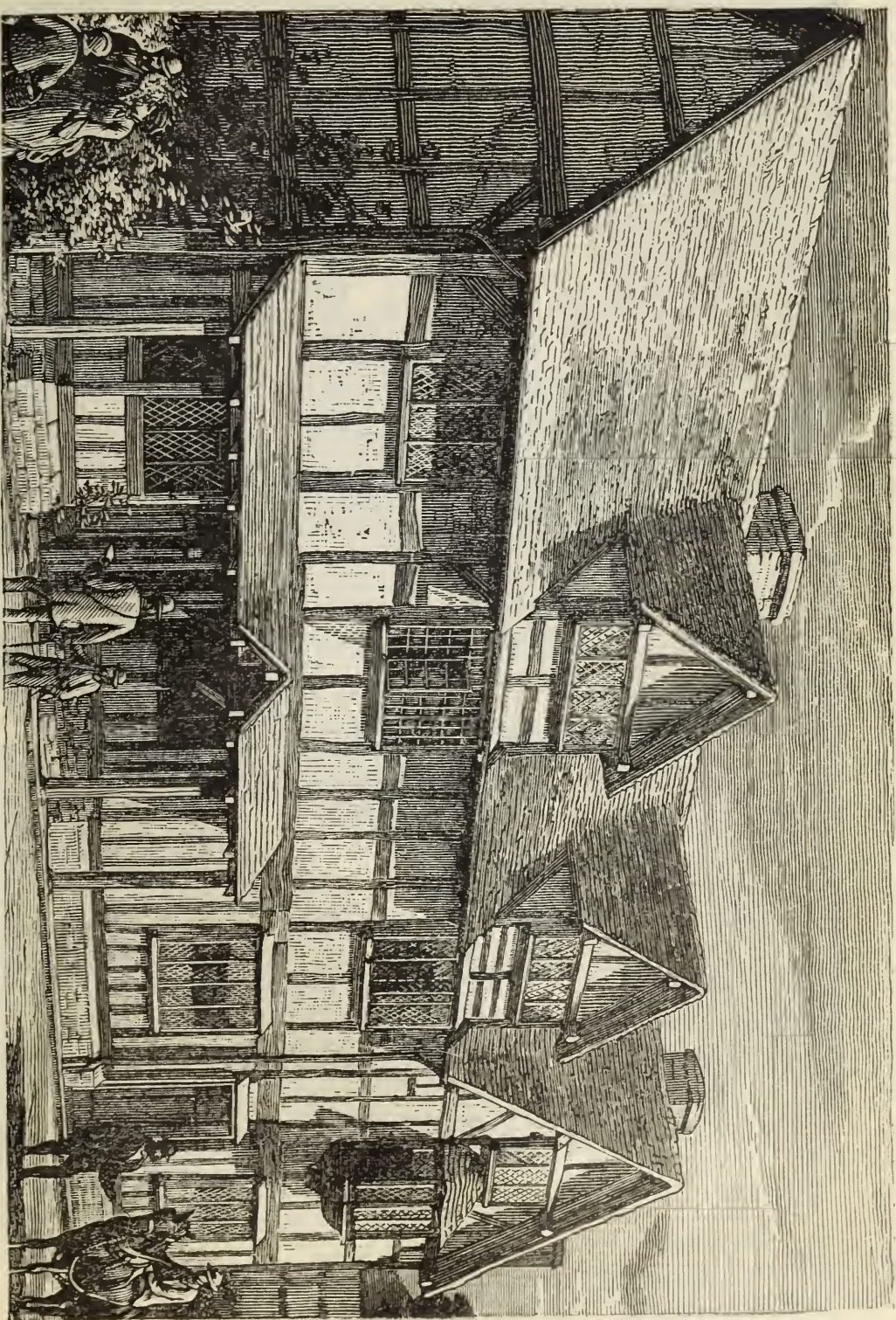
1423. In order to cement the alliance with Burgundy against France, Bedford marries Anne, a sister of Philip, Duke of Burgundy (13 Ap.). The English and Burgundians, under the Earl of Salisbury, defeat a combined force of French, Scotch, and levies from Spain and Lombardy, at Crévant, near Auxerre, in Burgundy (31 July), Buchan, Constable of France, being taken prisoner.



WILLIAM HOGARTH. (From a painting by himself.)—P. 304.



DEATH OF WOLFE.—P. 305.



SHAKESPEARE'S SUPPOSED BIRTHPLACE (RESTORED).—P. 245.



MARY STUART ABOUT TO SIGN HER ABDICATION.—P. 246.

Other recruits come to the aid of the Dauphin, including 5000 Scotch under Archibald Douglas. In order to cut off aid from Scotland, Bedford agrees to release James I., King of Scotland, who has been a captive in England for 18 years, on payment of £40,000 expenses, and on his agreeing to keep peace with England and marry an Englishwoman (Sep.).

An Act (2 Henry VI., c. 18) is passed empowering justices to regulate wages and the price of food.

1424. James I. of Scotland marries Joan or Jane Beaufort, daughter of John, Marquis of Somerset, and granddaughter of John of Gaunt (24 Feb.). He is set at liberty (Ap.), goes to Scotland, and is crowned at Scone (21 May), as King of Scotland.

The Scotch troops in France advance to the borders of Normandy and capture Ivry. Bedford lays siege to it, and an army of 18,000 French, Scotch, and Italians, under the Duke of Alençon and the Earl of Buchan, advance to its relief, but failing in that design capture Verneuil, in Maine, near Evreux. There they are totally defeated by the English under Bedford (16 Aug.), with a loss of 4000 or 5000 slain, including the Earls of Buchan and Douglas; and the Duke of Alençon is taken prisoner. This defeat compels the French to retire south of the Loire.

Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March, the heir to the throne who had been set aside on the deposition of Richard II. in 1399, dies of the plague in the Castle of Trim, Ireland. He had submitted to Henry V. in 1415, and accompanied him to the French wars, and been made Lord-Lieutenant in Ireland in 1423. His claim to the throne descends to his nephew, Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, son of his sister Anne Mortimer, a youth of 14.

1425. Heresy is made punishable in Scotland by burning alive.

1426. Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, uncle to Henry VI., marries his mistress, Eleanor Cobham, daughter of Reginald, Lord Cobham.

1427. The French, under their famous general Dunois, "the Bastard of Orleans," defeat the English, under the Earl of Warwick, at Montargis (in Loiret, about 40 miles E. N. E. of Orleans).

1428. Under the impression that Catherine (widow of Henry V.) meditates a marriage beneath her, parliament, at the instance of the Duke of Gloucester, passes an Act (6 Hen. VI.) imposing severe penalties on "any person who shall dare to marry a queen dowager, or any lady who held

lands of the crown, without the consent of the king or his council." Catherine had already (probably in 1423) secretly married Owen Tudor, a Welsh gentleman of her household, the progenitor of the Tudor dynasty.

With a view to conquering France south of the Loire, the Earl of Salisbury lays siege to Orleans (12 Oct.), on that river, but is wounded (27 Oct.), and dies (3 Nov.). William de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, continues the siege.

Richard Flemmyng, Bishop of Lincoln, founds Lincoln College, Oxford (13 Oct.).

Pope Clement VIII. sends orders to the Bishop of Lincoln to have the sentence passed by the Council of Constance, on the 5th May, 1415, against Wiclif, strictly carried out; Wiclif's remains are consequently exhumed and burnt, and his ashes are thrown into the Swift, a branch of the Avon.

1429. A French army, sent to relieve Orleans, is defeated (12 Feb.) at Rouvray or Roveroy (about 10 miles N. N. W. of Orleans) by the English under Sir John Fastolf, in a skirmish known as the battle of the Herrings.

Joan of Arc (or Jeanne Darc), "the Maid of Orleans," a girl about 18 years of age, who is possessed with a belief that she has a divine mission to deliver France and to procure the coronation of the Dauphin at Rheims,* goes to the Dauphin at Chinon (between Angers and Tours, south of the Loire), impresses him with a belief in her mission, and he entrusts her with the command of an army of 6000 or 7000 men for the relief of Orleans, Dunois being associated with her in the command. Having inspired her army with some of her own enthusiasm, she proceeds from Blois (about 15 miles N. E. of Tours) up the Loire, and enters Orleans by the river (29 Ap.), makes several successful attacks on the English lines (6, 7 May), and the English raise the siege (8 May) and retire. She follows and defeats them (12 June) at Jargeau or Jergeaux (about 10 miles E. S. E. of Orleans), and at Patay (about 14 miles N. W. of Orleans), inflicting a loss of 2000 men (18 June), their general, Sir John Talbot, being taken prisoner. The Dauphin and Joan then march to Rheims and capture it; and he is crowned King of France as Charles VII. (18 July), Joan

* The famous old Gothic cathedral at Rheims was looked upon in France with the same veneration as Westminster Abbey in England. It had been the coronation-place of all the French kings since Philip Augustus was consecrated there in 1179. At this date (1429) Rheims was in possession of the English, having been captured by them in 1421. The town is in the present department of Marne, about 85 miles N. E. of Paris.

standing by his side. Bedford advances in order to bring on a decisive battle, but fails, and after an indecisive skirmish at Senlis (about 30 miles N. N. E. of Paris), retires to Paris. The French, under Joan, attack Paris unsuccessfully, Joan being wounded ; and they retire beyond the Loire.

Bedford causes Henry VI. (now 8) to be crowned at Westminster Abbey (6 Nov.).

Up to this time cumbrous stone balls had been used for artillery. At this date, however, a Frenchman, called Master Jean, discovers that iron balls are far more destructive, and that they allow the use of much smaller and lighter guns, which can be easily moved from place to place. The use of this new artillery gives the French a great advantage over the English, who ascribe its destructive powers to magic, a superstition which still further demoralizes them.

An Act (8 Hen. VI., c. 7) is passed limiting the suffrage in counties to resident freeholders of land of the annual value of 40s. ; it had previously been open to all freeholders. The Act gives an aristocratic complexion to the House of Commons.

1430. The French having retaken Compiègne, Bedford and the Duke of Burgundy lay siege to it. Joan passes through the combined armies and enters the town, but is captured during a sally (25 May) and taken to Rouen.

Bedford causes Henry VI. to be brought to France, and after an unsuccessful attempt to have him crowned at Rheims, has him crowned at Paris (17 Dec.) as King of France.

A clergyman in Essex and Jack Sharpe at Oxford are burnt alive for heresy.

The University of Paris demands that Joan of Arc shall be tried for sorcery, and solicits from Henry VI. letters-patent for her trial, which are reluctantly granted.

1431. After a trial lasting several months, Joan of Arc is found guilty, the verdict of the University of Paris being that her acts were diabolical, and merited punishment by fire ; and she is handed over to the secular arm, and burnt alive as a witch (31 May) in the market-place of Rouen, and her ashes are thrown into the Seine.

The French recapture Harfleur.

Bedford goes to England, and obtains from parliament leave to treat for peace with France, and returns thither.

1432. The Duke of Burgundy makes an armistice with the French. Bedford's wife (the Duke of Burgundy's sister) dies childless (14 Nov.), whereby the strongest tie between England and Burgundy is removed. In consequence of the

heavy drain caused by the war, the English finances are in disorder, and the garrison of Calais mutinies for pay.

1433. Bedford goes to England, takes measures for economizing expenditure, and manifests a willingness to make peace with France on honorable terms; his efforts in this direction are opposed by his brother, the Duke of Gloucester, at the head of a war party.

The French capture St. Denis (about 10 miles N. W. of Paris), and take the Earl of Arundel prisoner; Bedford returns to France.

1434. Sir Robert Ogle, with English troops, makes a raid into the Scotch lowlands; an act of folly which drives James I. into an alliance with the French, and he sends over his daughter Margaret to France, to marry the son of Charles VII. (afterwards Louis XI.).

1435. The Duke of Burgundy calls a quasi-European Congress at Arras (14 July), with a view to settle a general peace; it meets (20 Aug.), the French and English representatives fail to come to terms, and the English embassy withdraws (6 Sep.). The Duke of Bedford dies at Rouen (14 Sep.), whereupon the Duke of Burgundy, who has long been wavering, renounces the English alliance, and goes over to the side of Charles VII. and the French (21 Sep.). This defection makes the English cause in France hopeless. The war party in England prevails, however, and it is resolved to continue the struggle. By Bedford's death, his younger brother, Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, becomes presumptive heir to the throne on the Lancastrian side. Bedford is succeeded as Regent of France by Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York (son of the Earl of Cambridge executed in 1415), and founder of the House of York, and heir to the throne on the Yorkist side.

1436. The French conquer part of Normandy; and Charles VII., with Dunois and the Duke of Burgundy, advances on Paris; the English evacuate it; and the citizens admit Charles (13 Ap.). Richard, Duke of York, goes to France as regent, repulses the Burgundians from Calais (2 Aug.), and advances almost to Paris.

Margaret, daughter of James I. of Scotland, is married to the Dauphin (afterwards Louis XI.), son of Charles VII. of France (24 June).

The Scots under James I. attack Roxburgh (1 Aug.).

The marriage of Catherine (widow of Henry V.) with Owen Tudor is discovered, and in order to avoid persecution by the Duke of Gloucester, she takes refuge in the Abbey of Bermondsey. Owen Tudor is sent to Newgate.

1437. Catherine, widow of Henry V., dies at Bermondsey (3 Jan.), aged 36, and is buried in Westminster Abbey (19 Feb.). Besides Henry VI., she leaves three sons by Owen Tudor—Edmund of Hadham (afterwards Earl of Richmond, and father of Henry VII.), Jasper of Hatfield (afterwards Earl of Pembroke), and Owen.

James I. of Scotland, having offended his nobles by his reforms and his attempts to curb their power, is brutally murdered in the Blackfriars Abbey at Perth (20 Feb.), by a band of 300 conspirators headed by Sir Richard Graham. His son (a boy of 6) is taken by his mother to Holyrood and crowned king as James II.

The Duke of York is recalled from France (July), and Richard Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, is sent over as regent (16 July), but fails to check the advance of the French.

1438. Both England and France are thoroughly exhausted by the war; the plague has ravaged England for several years, and this year's harvest is so bad that no bread is to be had, and the people have to live on pulse and fern roots.

A nine years' truce is made with Scotland (31 Mar.).

Outbreaks against Catholic ecclesiastical foundations occur in many parts of England.

1439. The Earl of Warwick, regent in France, dies at Rouen (30 Ap.); John Beaufort, Marquis of Somerset, succeeds him. A three years' truce is made with Burgundy. The French capture Meaux (20 miles N. E. of Paris).

The public schools at Oxford are founded.

1440. The title of viscount is created by patent. John, Lord Beaumont, is the first to receive the new title (22 Feb.).

Somerset recaptures Harfleur. The Duke of York is again made regent in France (2 July), in association with Somerset.

Henry VI. founds Eton College (11 Oct.).

Cardinal Beaufort and the peace party in England, in spite of the opposition of the Duke of Gloucester, procure the liberation (12 Nov.) of the Duke of Orleans (who has been a prisoner in England since the battle of Agincourt in 1415), hoping, by his aid, to secure peace with France; but the design fails of success.

1441. The French attack Guienne. Charles VII. reverses the process against Joan of Arc, and pronounces her "a martyr to her religion, her country, and her king."

Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, the king's uncle, being heir-presumptive to the throne, his wife (*née* Eleanor Cobham)* and three accomplices, acting on the witch superstition of the time,

* He had married her in 1426. See *ante*, p. 193.

make a waxen image of Henry VI., and place it before a fire to melt, expecting that Henry's life will waste simultaneously with the melting of his image. Eleanor is arraigned for treason and witchcraft, and the growing mental and bodily weakness of the king being attributed to her arts, she is found guilty, and condemned to do public penance barefooted in the streets of London, and to be imprisoned for life in the Isle of Man. Her husband never recovers from the blow thus given to his reputation. Two of her accomplices (Robert Bolingbroke, a priest, and Margaret Jourdain, "the witch of Eye") are executed; the third (Thomas Southwell, Canon of St. Stephen's) dies in the Tower.

1442. Henry VI. comes of age, and Gloucester's protectorate ends. The war in France continues.

1443. Fresh outbreaks, similar to those in 1438, against Catholic ecclesiastical foundations occur in many parts of England.

The truce with Burgundy is renewed (23 Ap.).

Somerset is made duke, but is recalled from France.

Henry VI. founds King's College, Cambridge.

1444. John Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, ex-Lieutenant in France, possibly in despair at his ill-success in the war in France, kills himself. His brother Edmund Beaufort succeeds him as Marquis of Somerset. John's only child, Margaret Beaufort (a child of 3), is now heiress-presumptive to the throne on the Lancastrian side, after Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester. Her father had appointed William de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, her guardian.

William de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, is sent to France to negotiate peace, and to promote a marriage between Henry VI. (now 22) and Margaret of Anjou (now 15), niece of the French queen, and daughter of René, Count of Guise and titular King of Naples, Sicily, and Jerusalem. He obtains an armistice from June, 1444, to April, 1446, and a treaty of marriage, Henry VI. to cede Maine and Anjou to René (28 May). These terms are considered humiliating in England, and create discontent. As a reward for having brought about the treaty, however, De la Pole is made Marquis of Suffolk (14 Sep.); and he becomes chief minister in opposition to Gloucester, heir-presumptive to the throne.

The Duke of York is recalled from France, and Edmund Beaufort, Marquis of Somerset, is sent there as Lieutenant.

1445. Henry VI. marries Margaret of Anjou (22 Ap.); she is crowned (30 Ap.).

1446. Truce with France is renewed till 1 Ap., 1450.

Hand-guns or muskets first come into use in England. They are rude weapons, fired with a lighted match.

1447. At a parliament held at Bury St. Edmunds (10 Feb.), Suffolk causes Gloucester to be arrested on a charge of high treason (11 Feb.). Gloucester is found dead in his bed (24 Feb.); but whether he died from natural causes, or was murdered, as was strongly suspected at the time, has never been ascertained. His uncle, Cardinal Beaufort, dies (11 Ap.), aged 80. These two deaths leave Suffolk the undisputed chief minister in England. His leading opponent is now Richard, Duke of York.

Henry VI. being as yet childless, and his uncle Gloucester, the heir-presumptive to the throne, being dead, the nearest heirs are Richard Plantagenet, Duke of *York*, descendant of Lionel, Duke of Clarence (3d son of Edward III.); and Margaret (now 6), daughter of John Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, grandson of John of Gaunt, Duke of *Lancaster* (4th son of Edward III.). The rival claims of these houses of York and Lancaster lead to the Wars of the Roses. Henry VI. himself, being a great-grandson of John of Gaunt, is a Lancastrian.

1448. Charles VII., in order to enforce the provisions of the marriage treaty of 1445, between Henry VI. and Margaret of Anjou, which required the cession of Anjou and Maine, sends an army to enforce the cession of Le Mans, in Maine, that town being still held by the English, and it is thereupon surrendered to him.

Edmund Beaufort, Lieutenant in France, is created Duke of Somerset (31 Mar.).

William de la Pole, Marquis of Suffolk, is made Duke of Suffolk (2 June).

1449. In violation of the truce with France, a body of English soldiers from Normandy, mutinous for want of pay, sack the wealthy town of Fougères, in Brittany. The Lieutenant in France, Edmund Beaufort, Duke of Somerset, denies responsibility for the deed, but fails to make satisfaction; the Duke of Brittany goes over to the side of France, war again breaks out, and in two months Dunois conquers a large part of Normandy, including Rouen (10 Nov.).

The Duke of Suffolk, in order to get rid of so powerful an opponent as Richard, Duke of York (the presumptive heir to the throne on the side of the House of York), sends him to Ireland as viceroy (5 July). With a view to obtaining the throne for his own son John, he marries him to Margaret Beaufort, presumptive heiress to the throne on the Lancastrian side (now 8), whose guardian he has been since 1444.

Queen Margaret founds St. Bernard and St. Margaret's College, Cambridge (30 Mar.).*

War is renewed with Scotland, but a truce is made (15 Nov.) for an indeterminate period.

1450. The losses in Normandy create great popular discontent in England, which culminates in a riot at Portsmouth, during which Adam Moleyns, Bishop of Chichester, a partisan of Suffolk, the prime minister, is killed (Jan.). The House of Commons brings charges against Suffolk (28 Jan.) of treachery in France (in 1444-5), misappropriation of revenue, interference with the course of justice, and seeking to get the throne for his descendants; he denies the charges (3 Feb.), and puts himself on the king's mercy; he is brought before parliament (17 Mar.), and Henry VI., without deciding on the merits of the charges, banishes him for 5 years. He escapes, takes ship (3 May) at Ipswich for Calais; but by order of the Duke of Exeter, Constable of the Tower, is intercepted by an English squadron, taken on board the *Nicholas of the Tower*, and after a pretended trial by the seamen, is beheaded (3 May), and his body is laid on the sand at Dover. His son's marriage with Margaret Beaufort is pronounced void.

The French capture Harfleur in Normandy (1 Jan.). Sir Thomas Kyriel is sent to France with troops to reinforce the Duke of Somerset, but is defeated with a loss of 3000 or 4000 slain at Formigny (15 Ap.), near Bayeux in Normandy, by the French under Richemont; Caen surrenders (July); and the last remnant of the English army in Normandy evacuates Cherbourg (Aug.) and returns to England; and the French, by the occupation of Cherbourg (12 Aug.), complete the conquest of Normandy. On Somerset's return from France he is made Constable of England, and becomes Henry's chief adviser in place of Suffolk, and in opposition to the Duke of York.

While parliament is sitting at Leicester, the men of Kent, Surrey, Sussex, and Hampshire, provoked by the news of the disastrous defeat at Formigny, and by the misgovernment, heavy taxation, and other financial and political evils of the time, rise in arms (May). The men of Kent, under the leadership of Jack Cade, "Captain of Kent," assemble at Blackheath, near London (1 June), and demand a redress of grievances and a change of the king's advisers. Henry VI. marches to Blackheath; Cade falls back, and Henry sends against him a part of his army under Sir Humphrey and Wil-

* It was further endowed by Edward IV.'s queen (1465), when the name was changed to Queen's College.

liam Stafford, which Cade turns upon and routs at Sevenoaks in Kent (27 June), both Staffords being killed. Cade returns to London, occupies Southwark, the Londoners open their gates, and Cade takes formal possession of the city (2 July). He takes Lord Say and Sele, one of the obnoxious ministers, out of the Tower, and tries and beheads him (4 July); two others are also executed. Discipline now gives way, Cade's followers rob the Londoners, who thereupon attack them, and a desperate fight ensues (5 July), lasting all night, Cade falling back in the morning dispirited. Offers of pardon are made and accepted, and most of his followers return home (6 July). Cade, in distrust, raises a new force by opening the gaols, a price is set upon his head, and he is caught at Heathfield, near Lewes in Sussex, and resisting capture, is killed (13 July). Public disaffection, however, continues.

The Duke of York leaves his viceroyalty in Ireland without leave, and collects an army of 4000 vassals on the Welsh border.

Bishop Turnbull, under the authority of a bull of Pope Nicholas V., founds the University of Glasgow.

1451. The Duke of York, with his army and a large following of nobles, marches to Westminster and demands the dismissal of Somerset. The demand is refused. It is proposed in parliament to declare the Duke of York heir-presumptive to the throne,* but parliament, having been elected in the Lancastrian interest, rejects the proposal, and the proposer is imprisoned. The country grows more disturbed, and fighting takes place in Devonshire, Northumberland, and at Ludlow Castle, on the Welsh border.

The French under Dunois expel the English from Guienne (Aug.), the only French territory which had been left to the English except Calais.

1452. York appears in Kent at the head of his army; the king comes to Blackheath with his forces and promises to imprison Somerset and to form a new council, whereupon York disbands his troops; he finds, however, that he has been deluded with false promises, and is compelled to swear fealty to Henry VI.; and he retires to his castle at Wigmore.

The Gascons rise against the French, and ask aid from England. An expedition is sent under Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, who captures Bordeaux (23 Oct.).

1453. The French lay siege to Castillon on the Dordogne, in Guienne; Talbot, being deceived as to their numbers,

* His nearest rival is Margaret Beaufort, a child of 10, niece of the Duke of Somerset.

marches to its relief with an inadequate force, and is defeated and slain (23 July). With the loss of this brave soldier, all hopes of the English to recover territory in France come to an end. The French besiege (1 Aug.) and capture (17 Oct.) Bordeaux. The battle of Castillon was the last of the Hundred Years' War.

Henry VI. becomes imbecile (Oct.), and remains in a condition of semi-unconsciousness for many months. His son Edward is born at Westminster (13 Oct.), being heir-apparent to the throne on the Lancastrian side, in opposition to the claims of the Duke of York. The Yorkists, however, assert that he is either a bastard or a changeling. The Duke of York procures the imprisonment of Somerset (Dec.).

1454. The peers in parliament elect the Duke of York protector (3 Ap.) ; and Somerset is deprived of his offices.

1455. Henry VI. recovers his sanity (Jan.) ; York's protectorate ceases, Somerset is released from the Tower (5 Feb.), and York is deprived of the captainship of Calais (6 Mar.). York thereupon retires to his estates in the north, collects an army, and with Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick ("the kingmaker"), marches on London. The royal troops under Henry VI. and Somerset march northward. At Royston, York writes a letter to the king, declaring his loyalty, and stating his terms ; the letter is unanswered, and the two armies meet in the first battle of St. Albans (22 May), when, after a brief fight of half an hour, the royalists or Lancastrians are defeated, Somerset is slain, and the king is wounded and taken prisoner. York kneels before him, begs his favor, and goes with him in apparent harmony to London. Warwick is made captain of Calais (May). With this battle began the Wars of the Roses, which desolated England for the next 30 years. The name was given on account of the badges of the two houses, the Yorkist being a white rose, and the Lancastrian a red one.

Margaret Beaufort (now 14), the nearest heir to the throne on the Lancastrian side after the young prince Edward, marries (Mar.) Edmund Tudor, Earl of Richmond, a son of Sir Owen Tudor and Catherine of Valois (widow of Henry V.).

Henry VI. again becomes insane ; and parliament again appoints York protector (19 Nov.).

1456. Henry Tudor (afterwards Henry VII., founder of the Tudor dynasty), a son of Margaret Beaufort and Edmund Tudor, is born (21 Jan.). His father dies soon after.

Henry VI. again recovers his sanity (Feb.), York is relieved of his office of protector (25 Feb.), and the queen assumes control of the government.

1457. A meeting of the council is held at Coventry, at which York and his friends are compelled to renew their fealty to Henry VI.

The French ravage the English coast, and plunder Sandwich (28 Aug.)

The truce with Scotland is renewed for four years (31 Dec.).

1458. Through the influence of the king, the rival leaders of the Yorkists and Lancastrians are induced to meet in London (Jan.), and become reconciled (25 Mar.), the Yorkists agreeing to pay those who had suffered through the battle of St. Albans. The reconciliation proves only a hollow truce.

William Waynesflete, Bishop of Winchester, founds Magdalen College, Oxford (18 July).

The Earl of Warwick (a Yorkist, who had taken part in the battle of St. Albans in 1455), captain of Calais, having engaged in piracy and attacked a fleet of Hanseatic vessels, is summoned to England by Henry VI. to render an account of his doings.

1459. After his arrival in London a quarrel arises between his followers and the king's ; Warwick goes west to join York at Ludlow, in Shropshire; and both sides prepare for war. Richard Neville, Earl of Salisbury (Warwick's father), also marches south from Yorkshire to join York at Ludlow; Henry VI. sends Lord Audley with forces to intercept him, a battle ensues at Blore Heath (23 Sep.), about 2 miles from Market Drayton in Staffordshire, and Audley is defeated and slain; Salisbury joins York and Warwick at Ludlow. The veteran troops brought by Warwick from Calais desert, however (13 Oct.), and York flees to Ireland, and Warwick and Salisbury to Calais. Parliament meets at Coventry and attaints the Yorkist leaders (20 Nov.).

1460. Warwick, having command of the sea, goes to Ireland to concert measures with York; returns and lands at Sandwich in Kent (June), and being joined by the people, marches on London with 30,000 men, captures London, except the Tower (2 July), advances north, and totally defeats the royal army near Northampton (10 July); Henry VI. is again taken prisoner, and his queen, Margaret of Anjou, flees to Scotland with her son Prince Edward. York returns from Ireland (9 Oct.), and is again master of England.

James II. of Scotland is killed by the bursting of a cannon at the siege of Roxburgh (3 Aug.); his son, a boy of 6, succeeds, as James III.

Parliament meets in London (7 Oct.), and (by Act 39 Hen. VI., c. 1) annuls the Acts of the Parliament of Coventry

in 1459. York now, for the first time, in a writing sent (16 Oct.) to the House of Lords, claims the throne, pointing out that his hereditary right is superior to that of Henry VI.*

The majority of the peers are Lancastrian in sympathy, but finding York's claim backed by force, they make a compromise (31 Oct.), giving the crown to Henry for his life, and after his death to York and his heirs; York to be made Prince of Wales and heir-apparent, and to be the virtual ruler of the kingdom.

Henry's queen, Margaret of Anjou, rejects this settlement, as excluding her son, the young Prince Edward; and she comes from Scotland and collects an army in Yorkshire. York rashly advances against her with greatly inferior forces, which are attacked and destroyed by the queen's army at Wakefield in Yorkshire (30 Dec.). York is taken before the queen, crowned with a wreath of grass, and beheaded; and his second son Rutland (a youth of 17), while escaping from the battlefield, is murdered in cold blood by Lord Clifford. York's eldest son, Edward, Earl of March (a youth of 18), who has been collecting troops on the Welsh border, and is now at Gloucester, becomes Duke of York and heir to his father's claims. York's third and fourth sons, George and Richard (now boys of 11 and 10), are taken early in 1461 to Flanders for safety.†

1460-82. The "Paston Letters" are written between these dates.

1461. Edward of York, on hearing of his father's defeat and death, marches north, and defeats a small Lancastrian force under Earls Pembroke and Wiltshire at Mortimer's Cross, near Wigmore, in Herefordshire (2 Feb.). Pembroke and Wiltshire escape, but Sir Owen Tudor ‡ (Pembroke's father) is captured, taken to Hereford, and there beheaded. The queen's army pushes southward, plundering and destroying; the York-

* This was certainly true, the Yorkist claim being derived from the *third* son of Edward III., while Henry VI. and the house of Lancaster were descended from the *fourth* son of that king (see *ante*, A.D. 1447). Henry's claim, however, was based, not so much on hereditary right, as upon the settlement made by the parliament of 1399, which deposed Richard II. and gave the crown to Henry IV. and his descendants; under which settlement the house of Lancaster had been in undisturbed possession for over 60 years.

† Though the Duke of York did not himself become king, his eldest and youngest sons did, as Edward IV. and Richard III. The third son, George, became Duke of Clarence.

‡ This was the Owen Tudor who in 1423 had married Catherine of Valois, widow of Henry V.

ists, under Warwick (who has the custody of Henry VI.) and Norfolk, march from London against them, but are defeated in the second battle of St. Albans (17 Feb.), and the queen recovers possession of Henry VI. She is prevented from marching on London by the insubordination of her troops, who commit devastations everywhere, in consequence of which the people of London and the neighborhood rise against her. Edward of York, marching from Mortimer's Cross, effects a junction with the remnant of Warwick's army at Chipping Norton, in Oxfordshire; marches into London (28 Feb.); and, at a meeting of the people at Clerkenwell, is proclaimed king (3 Mar.), and solemnly installed at Westminster (4 Mar.) as Edward IV.

He at once gathers together all available reinforcements, and with a large army (48,000 men) marches north to engage that of Margaret (60,000), who has retired to York. Edward, after a wonderfully rapid march, reaches Pontefract in Yorkshire (12 Mar.); the two armies meet at Towton in Yorkshire (about 10 miles S. W. of York); and the most terrible battle ever fought on English soil ensues (28-29 Mar.). It is fought in a snow-storm, lasts through part of the night of the 28th until noon of the 29th, and ends in a total defeat of the Lancastrians, the pursuit and carnage being kept up all through the night of the 29th and the following day. No quarter was given on either side, and about 30,000 men are left dead on the field, 20,000 of them being Lancastrians. Henry VI. and Margaret, with their son Prince Edward, flee to Scotland, and Edward returns in triumph to London, and is crowned in Westminster Abbey (28 June) by Thomas Bourchier, Archbishop of Canterbury. He recalls his brothers, George and Richard, from Flanders, and makes them Dukes of Clarence and Gloucester.

Parliament meets in London (4 Nov.); it declares (1 Ed. IV., c. 1) the last three kings usurpers; annuls all the Acts of their reigns; and attaints Henry VI. and the other Lancastrian leaders as traitors, and confiscates their property.

Among those attainted is young Henry Tudor (now 5), son of Margaret Beaufort and Edmund Tudor, Earl of Richmond. He is placed in Raglan Castle, in the custody of Sir William Herbert (created Earl of Pembroke, 8 Sep., 1468).

1462. Margaret of Anjou goes to France, and with the help of Louis XI. collects forces, sails to the north of England and captures three fortresses in Northumberland (Bamborough, Dunstanburg, and Alnwick); but Bamborough and Dunstanburg are recovered before the end of the year.

Henry VI. is placed in Harlough Castle, Merionethshire, and remains there till the spring of 1464.

1463. Edward IV.'s troops lay siege to Alnwick ; Margaret attempts its relief, but her fleet is wrecked, and she returns to Scotland. She goes to France, gets more troops, and lands in Northumberland (Oct.), but making no headway, retires to Scotland. Disturbances in favor of the Lancastrians occur in various parts of the country.

Acts are passed forbidding the importation of "wares already wrought" (3 Ed. IV., c. 4) ; and regulating the dress of all persons according to rank (c. 5).

1464. The Lancastrians under Henry VI. and Margaret, aided by Henry Beaufort, Duke of Somerset,* and Percy, renew attempts in the north. Edward's troops under Lord Montague (Warwick's brother) defeat them at Hedgeley Moor, some miles south of Wooler in Northumberland (25 Ap.), and Percy is slain ; and again at Hexham in Northumberland (15 May), when Somerset is taken and beheaded. Henry VI. takes refuge in Lancashire, and Margaret and her son Prince Edward flee to Flanders (May).

Edward IV. (now 22) secretly marries Lady Elizabeth Grey (now about 33), widow of Sir John Grey (May). Her maiden name was Elizabeth Woodville, and she was a daughter of Jacquetta of Luxembourg (widow of the great Duke of Bedford) and her second husband, Richard Woodville, Lord Rivers. The marriage is publicly declared (29 Sep.). Edward at once ennobles the members of his queen's family, and confers upon them important offices of state. By this misalliance and his subsequent favoritism Edward loses much of his popularity ; and feuds arise between the new nobility thus created and the old Yorkist nobles through whose support he had become king. The Earl of Warwick (the king-maker) is among those who eventually become estranged from him.

A 15 years' truce is made with Scotland (1 June).

1465. Elizabeth, Edward's queen, is crowned at Westminster Abbey (26 May).

1466. The Princess Elizabeth, the eldest child of Edward IV., is born (11 Feb.). The Earl of Warwick stands godfather at her christening.

Henry VI., who has been hiding in the north of England since the battle of Hexham, is captured in Lancashire (July), taken to London, and lodged in the Tower.

* Son of the Somerset killed at St. Albans in 1455.

1467. Edward IV. and Warwick come to an open rupture over their foreign policy. Louis XI. of France, and his vassal, Charles the Bold, Duke of Burgundy, are in constant rivalry. Warwick wishes to make an alliance with France, and goes thither on a friendly embassy. Edward, however, concludes an alliance with Burgundy, and a marriage treaty between his sister Margaret and Charles the Bold. Warwick thereupon takes up a position of opposition to the king.

1468. Margaret, sister of Edward IV., is married to Charles the Bold (9 July), and the Burgundian alliance is completed.

1469. An insurrection, caused by a dispute about tithes, breaks out in Yorkshire under Robert Hilyard, popularly known as "Robin of Redesdale;" it is suppressed by Lord Montague (Warwick's brother).

George, Duke of Clarence (brother of Edward IV.), who has been viceroy in Ireland since 1462, returns to England, and sides with Warwick against the king. He and Warwick go to Calais, where, unknown to the king, he marries Warwick's eldest daughter Isabel (11 July).

Jasper Tudor, ex-Earl of Pembroke, at the head of a remnant of Lancastrians in Wales, is defeated by the royal troops under William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke.

Another insurrection (probably instigated by Warwick) breaks out in the north, under Sir John Coniers, who adopts the popular name of "Robin of Redesdale," and marches towards London with 60,000 men, demanding a redress of grievances, the dismissal of the king's new counsellors, and declaring for Warwick. The royal troops under William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke, and Humphrey Stafford, Earl of Devonshire, advance to meet them, but are defeated at Edgrecote in Northamptonshire, near Banbury (26 July). Pembroke and his brother, Sir R. Herbert, are taken prisoners and beheaded; soon afterwards Richard Woodville (Earl Rivers) and Sir John Woodville, the queen's father and brother, are also captured and beheaded at Coventry. Edward IV. himself is taken prisoner by George Neville, Archbishop of York (Warwick's brother) and handed over to Warwick, who, fearing to promote the interests of the Lancastrians, becomes outwardly reconciled to him and releases him after a short detention, on condition of a general pardon.

1470. Another insurrection breaks out in Lincolnshire, under Sir Robert Welles (Mar.), who declares in favor of Henry VI. The king discovers that Welles is secretly supported by Warwick and Clarence (the king's brother), and after defeat-

ing the insurgents near Empingham in Rutland, in a battle known as "Loose-coat Field"* (19 Mar.), beheads Welles (20 Mar.), and marches against Warwick and Clarence, who at once flee to France (Ap.).

Louis XI. brings about a meeting at Amboise between Margaret of Anjou and Warwick, who make a compact (15 July) by which Margaret's son Prince Edward (only son of Henry VI., now 17) is to marry Warwick's younger daughter Ann Neville, and to succeed to the English throne; the crown, failing Edward, to go to Clarence. Clarence, displeased at having his claims set aside, makes secret overtures to his brother Edward IV. The marriage between Prince Edward and Ann Neville takes place (July or Aug.). Warwick and Clarence land at Dartmouth in Devonshire (13 Sep.), and collect a large army; Montague (Warwick's brother) declares for the Lancastrians; and Edward IV., after narrowly escaping capture by Montague at Doncaster, flees to Flanders (3 Oct.). Warwick goes to London (5 Oct), releases Henry VI. from the Tower (6 Oct.), and has him re-crowned at Westminster Abbey (9 Oct.).

Elizabeth Woodville, queen of Edward IV., on his flight to Flanders, takes sanctuary at Westminster (1 Oct.), and there gives birth to a son (4 Nov.), afterwards Edward V.

Parliament meets (26 Nov.), declares Edward IV. a usurper, and annuls all the Acts of his reign.

Henry Tudor (now 14), who has been confined in Raglan Castle since 1461, is set free.

1471. Edward IV., having got pecuniary assistance from Charles the Bold of Burgundy, collects a force of 2000 men, sails from Zealand (11 Mar.), lands (14 Mar.) at Ravenspur in Yorkshire (the landing-place of Henry IV. in 1399), and pushes southwards, being in secret correspondence with his brother Clarence. Warwick is at Coventry, but at the request of Clarence, who promises to reinforce him, refrains from attacking Edward. Clarence, however, treacherously joins Edward at Coventry (30 Mar.), and the combined forces march to London, and Edward again lodges Henry VI. in the Tower (11 Ap.). Warwick, finding himself betrayed, follows them, but is met and defeated at the battle of Barnet in Hertfordshire (Easter Sunday, 14 Ap.), he and his brother Montague being slain.

Margaret of Anjou (queen of Henry VI.), with her son Edward, Prince of Wales (now 18), lands at Weymouth in

* So called because the insurgents, in their anxiety to escape, threw off their coats.

Dorset (14 Ap), intending to push into Wales, where Jasper Tudor (the deposed Earl of Pembroke) is collecting troops to aid her. To prevent the junction, Edward IV. marches towards Gloucester; the two armies meet at Tewkesbury, and Margaret is defeated (4 May). Prince Edward is slain, and Margaret is captured, and is kept in prison till 1476. Edmund, Duke of Somerset,* and other nobles are beheaded (6 May).

Among the 2000 troops who landed with Edward at Ravenspur were about 300 Germans armed with 300 hand-guns, a new weapon hardly known in England. It is probable that he owed his success at Barnet and Tewkesbury in great measure to these weapons.

The Bastard of Falconbridge (an illegitimate son of William Neville, Lord Falconberg) lands in Kent, collects forces, and enters London with a view to release Henry VI. from the Tower; but after he has burnt Aldgate and London Bridge, the citizens rise against him and force him to retire.

Edward IV. returns to London (21 May), and on the same night Henry VI. is secretly murdered in the Tower; and his dead body is exposed at St. Paul's (22 May). The murder was popularly attributed, but without much ground, to Edward's brother, Richard, Duke of Gloucester, afterwards Richard III.

Jasper Tudor escapes to Brittany, taking with him his nephew (now 15), afterwards Henry VII. [Edward IV. vainly sought (1476) to bribe Francis II., Duke of Brittany, into giving up young Henry Tudor.]

A great pestilence rages at Oxford.

1472. Richard, Duke of Gloucester (younger brother of Edward IV.), marries Anne Neville, the younger daughter of the Earl of Warwick, and the reputed widow of Edward, Prince of Wales, who had been slain at Tewkesbury in 1471.

1473. Richard's elder brother George, Duke of Clarence, who in 1469 had married Warwick's elder daughter Isabel, refuses to divide Warwick's inheritance with Richard, and the two brothers quarrel in consequence. Parliament afterwards divided the inheritance between them.

1474. William Caxton (now about 52 †), having in 1471 been

* Brother of the Somerset killed at Hexham in 1464, and son of the Somerset killed at St. Albans in 1455. With him the male line of Beauforts expired. He was first cousin to Margaret Beaufort, who now, by Prince Edward's death at Tewkesbury, again becomes heir-ess-presumptive to the throne on the Lancastrian side (see *ante*, A.D. 1447). In 1471 she was the wife of Sir Henry Stafford, having married him in 1459, three years after the death of her first husband, Edmund Tudor, Earl of Richmond.

† He was born at Hadlow in Kent about 1422.

invited by Margaret, wife of Charles the Bold, Duke of Burgundy (a sister of Edward IV.), to her court at Bruges in Flanders,* there, in conjunction with Colard Manson, publishes the first book ever printed in English. Its title was "The Recuyell of the Historyes of 'Troye," a translation by Caxton himself of a French collection of romances concerning the Trojan War.

Edward IV. and Charles the Bold of Burgundy enter into an offensive alliance against France.

1475. Edward declares war against France, lands at Calais (July) with a considerable army, and invades France; but he receives no support from Charles the Bold, and meets with no success. Louis XI., by lavishly bribing the English nobles, brings about an amicable meeting with Edward at Pecquigny (29 Aug.), and a treaty for a 7 years' truce is arranged between them. Louis agrees to pay Edward 75,000 crowns down (50,000 being for the ransom of Margaret of Anjou), and an annual pension of 50,000 crowns, and to betroth the Dauphin to Edward's eldest daughter Elizabeth (now 9). Edward returns to England (28 Sep.). The projected marriage afterwards (in 1482) fell through.

Caxton prints at Bruges his translation entitled "The Game and Playe of the Chess," the second book printed in English.

1476. Louis XI., having, in accordance with the Treaty of Pecquigny, paid Margaret of Anjou's ransom of 50,000 crowns, she is handed over to Louis's officers (29 Jan.), on condition of renouncing in favor of Edward IV. all claims to the throne of England. She spends the rest of her life in poverty and retirement in France, and dies 25 Aug., 1482, aged 53.

William Caxton returns to England from Flanders with new types, and sets up the first printing-press in England near the western entrance to Westminster Abbey.

1477. Charles the Bold, Duke of Burgundy, is killed in an engagement with the Swiss, at Nancy (5 Jan.); his daughter Mary (now 20) succeeds as duchess.

Clarence's wife Isabel (daughter of the Earl of Warwick) dies, poisoned by persons of his household, in order, probably, that he may seek the hand of Mary of Burgundy. Edward IV. opposes the projected alliance; the two brothers have a violent quarrel in consequence; and Edward determines to rid himself of Clarence.

Mary of Burgundy marries Maximilian, son of Ferdinand, Archduke of Austria (Aug.), and Burgundy and its appanage, Flanders, fall under the rule of Austria.

* Flanders had been acquired by Burgundy in 1384.

Caxton publishes "The Dictes and Sayings of the Philosophers" (18 Nov.), the first book ever printed in England.* During the next 14 years he prints many religious works, chivalrous romances,† and translations.

1478. Edward IV. summons parliament and personally impeaches his brother Clarence before the House of Lords on a charge of interfering with the course of justice; and Clarence is imprisoned in the Tower (16 Jan.), condemned (7 Feb.), and secretly put to death (18 Feb.). The well-known story that he was drowned in a butt of malmsey, his favorite wine, is not supported by authentic evidence. No parliament meets during the remainder of Edward's reign.

The plague is terribly destructive throughout England.

1479. Louis XI. conquers Burgundy and annexes it to France (Jan.); Flanders remains under the rule of the house of Austria.

A pestilence ravages England.

1480-1. There is warfare between England and Scotland.

1482. The Duke of Albany, having quarrelled with his brother, James III. of Scotland, comes to England; meets Edward IV. at Fotheringay in Northamptonshire; and in return for Edward's promise of support, cedes to him the fortress of Berwick (10, 11 June), which has been in Scotch hands since it was ceded by Henry VI. in 1461. An English army under Richard, Duke of Gloucester, invades Scotland, but effects little, and speedily retires (Aug.). Gloucester captures Berwick, which remains in the possession of England from this date.

Mary of Burgundy, wife of Maximilian of Austria, dies (27 Mar.); her daughter Margaret of Austria (2 years old) succeeds to her rights to Burgundy and Flanders. Louis XI. of France, in breach of the Treaty of Pecquigny (in 1475), arranges by the Treaty of Arras (23 Dec.) for the marriage of the Dauphin (afterwards Charles VIII., now 12 years old) to Margaret, thus breaking off the projected alliance between the Dauphin and Edward IV.'s daughter Elizabeth.

1483. Edward IV., while meditating an invasion of France in revenge for this breach of faith, dies (9 Ap.), aged 40. His

* The 400th anniversary of this publication was celebrated in 1877 by a grand festival at St. Paul's Cathedral, London, and a loan exhibition of books printed by Caxton.

† In 1485 Caxton wrote to Richard III. a deplorable account of the decay of knighthood, and suggested, as means of cure, the reintroduction of tournaments and the reading of chivalrous romances. It was no doubt for this purpose that he printed so many romances of this character.

eldest son (a boy of 12) succeeds him, as Edward V. Edward IV. leaves also surviving him his widow Elizabeth; his second son Richard, Duke of York (aged 10); his eldest daughter Elizabeth (aged 17); and four other daughters.

At the time of the death of Edward IV. the young king is at Ludlow, in Shropshire, under the charge of his uncle, Earl Rivers (the queen's brother), and other members of her family. He at once sets out for London, with an escort of 2000 men under Earl Rivers and Lord Richard Grey (the queen's son by her first husband, and consequently half-brother to the young king).

Richard, Duke of Gloucester (the young king's paternal uncle), with the Duke of Buckingham, marches from the north with 900 men, takes Rivers and Grey prisoners at Northampton, disperses the escort of Edward V. at Stony Stratford in Leicester, takes possession of the young king (30 Ap.), carries him to London (4 May), and lodges him in the Tower. The ex-queen, with her younger son Richard, Duke of York, and her other children, flees to sanctuary at Westminster (1 May). The Council appoints Richard Protector (before 14 May); and he fixes 22 June for the coronation of Edward V. Richard accuses the ex-queen and Hastings of conspiring against his life (13 June), and Hastings is summarily beheaded. The Archbishop of Canterbury persuades the queen to deliver the young prince, Richard, Duke of York, into the charge of his uncle, the Protector, who sends him to the Tower in company with his brother, the young king. Grey and Rivers are beheaded at Pontefract, whither they have been removed from Northampton. The Protector, on a plea that the two princes are illegitimate, on the alleged ground that Edward IV., before his marriage with Elizabeth Grey, had been engaged to Lady Eleanor Talbot, makes a *coup d'état*, gets himself proclaimed king (26 June), and is crowned (6 July) as Richard III., his wife (Anne Neville) being also crowned queen.

Richard III. sets out on a royal progress (23 July), and at some time between this date and Oct., the two young princes, Edward V. and his brother Richard, are murdered in the Tower by Richard's orders. For this purpose he employs Sir James Tyrell, who engages the services of Miles Forest and John Dighton, by whom the two princes are smothered under pillows while asleep in bed. Forest and Dighton, after calling Tyrell to see the bodies, bury them at the foot of a staircase.*

* This is the substance of a confession made by Tyrell in 1502, when imprisoned in the Tower on a charge of treason: and there seems no reason to doubt its accuracy. The story was confirmed by

A conspiracy in favor of Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond, who now represents the Lancastrian party, breaks out in the west. The Duke of Buckingham, who has become alienated from Richard III., joins it (Sep.), and raises a force in Wales (Oct.). Want of supplies causes his forces to desert; he takes refuge in Shropshire with one Banister, a dependent of his own, by whom he is delivered up (Oct.); and he is summarily executed at Salisbury (1 Nov.).

Richmond sails from Brittany, but his fleet is wrecked, and after reaching Plymouth and hearing of Buckingham's failure, he returns to Brittany (Oct.).

A body of English exiles meet in the cathedral of Rhedon in Brittany (25 Dec.), and swear to place Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond, on the throne of England; and he swears to reconcile parties by wedding Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Edward IV., now the nearest heir to the throne on the Yorkist side.

1484. Parliament meets (23 Jan.), exacts an oath of allegiance to Richard III. from all adults in England, and passes a bill of attainder and confiscation against over 500 persons. The members of both houses take an oath to support the succession of Richard's only child Edward (Feb.), a boy of 10. Edward dies (9 Ap), and Richard nominates his nephew, John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln (son of his sister Elizabeth), heir to the throne.

The Statutes are printed for the first time.

Richard III. obtains from Francis II., Duke of Brittany, the dismissal of Henry Tudor from Brittany. Henry goes to the court of Charles VIII. of France, by whom he is well received.

The Duke of Albany (brother of James III. of Scotland) invades Scotland with a body of English borderers, but is defeated at Lochmaben, near Dumfries (22 June), and flees to France. A three years' truce is made with Scotland (21 Sep.).

1485. Anne Neville, queen of Richard III., dies (16 Mar.), aged 31.

Richard III. institutes the office of foreign consul.

Richard's government becomes more and more unpopular, and libels on it are freely circulated. One of them satirizes his favorite ministers, Catesby, Ratcliffe, and Lovel, in the well-known couplet—

the discovery, nearly two centuries later (17 July, 1674), of two skeletons, agreeing in age with that of the two princes, under the staircase leading to the chapel in the White Tower. See Gairdner's "Reign of Richard III."

The Cat, the Rat, and Lovel, that dog,
Rule all England under the Hog.

Its author, William Collingbourne, is executed.

Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond, sails from Harfleur in Normandy (1 Aug.), lands at Milford Haven, in Pembrokeshire, Wales (7 Aug.), and collecting an army, marches through Shropshire. Richard III. advances against him; the two armies meet between Bosworth and Atherstone, at Whitmoors, near the village of Sutton Cheney, close to Ashby-de-la-Zouch in Leicestershire, when, at a crisis in the battle, Lord Stanley,* his brother, Sir William Stanley, and the Earl of Northumberland desert Richard and go over to Henry with their forces, and Richard is defeated and slain (22 Aug.). His body, covered with wounds, is buried in the Grey Friars Monastery at Leicester (25 Aug.). His crown is picked up on the field of battle, and placed by Sir W. Stanley on the head of Henry, who is thereupon saluted as king by the whole army. Henry enters London (27 Aug.) and has himself crowned (30 Oct.) as Henry VII. †

The famous battle of Bosworth Field terminates the Wars of the Roses. One result of that 30 years' internecine struggle has been the destruction of the old nobility of England, as well as of the new nobility created by Edward IV. The small remnant left is so weak as to be unable to withstand the power of the Crown. The people also have lost the control over parliament which they had exercised prior to the accession of Henry VI., and that body now becomes a subservient instrument of the king's will. The monarchy consequently becomes personal and practically absolute, and so remains throughout nearly the whole period of the Tudor dynasty. During the latter years of Elizabeth, however, the spirit of independence infused into the people by the Reformation, especially among the Puritan party then rising into notice, begins to manifest itself in parliament. The period of the Tudor dynasty (1485-1603) is that of the spread of the Renaissance in England, of the Protestant Reformation, and of the transition from Mediæval to Modern times.

At the beginning of the period (1485) the population of England and Wales is still between 3,000,000 and 4,000,000.

* Lord Stanley was the third husband of Margaret Beaufort, Henry Tudor's mother.

† Passing over his mother Margaret Beaufort, who of course had a better hereditary right. Elizabeth of York, Edward IV.'s eldest daughter, had, however, a better right than either.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE TUDORS : THE CROWN SUPREME.

1485. Parliament meets (7 Nov.), and recognizing the fact of Henry's kingship, passes an Act (1 Hen. VII., c. 1) simply declaring that "the inheritance of the crown be, rest, remain, and abide in the most royal person of our now sovereign lord King Henry VII. and in his heirs."

An Act (1 Hen. VII., c. 8) is passed forbidding the importation of wines from Gascony, except in English, Irish, or Welsh vessels. This was the first legal embodiment of the principle of the Navigation Act.

Henry imprisons Edward Plantagenet, Earl of Warwick (a youth of 10), son of the Duke of Clarence, in the Tower, where he remains till his execution in 1499.

The sweating-sickness (*Sudor Anglicus*) makes its first appearance in England.

1486. Henry VII. (now 30) marries Elizabeth of York (now 20), eldest daughter of Edward IV. (18 Jan.), thereby uniting the houses of York and Lancaster.

Henry goes north (Ap.), and suppresses a Yorkist insurrection under Lord Lovel and the Staffords; Lovel escapes to Flanders, where he is received by Margaret, Duchess of Burgundy (a sister of Edward IV.).

A three years' truce is made with Scotland (3 July).

1487. Lambert Simnel (a youth of 12), the son of a baker, personates Edward Plantagenet, Earl of Warwick,* goes to Dublin (Feb.) and is there joined by Thomas Fitzgerald, Earl of Kildare (the Lord-Deputy). John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln,† goes to Flanders, where his aunt, Margaret of Burgundy, supplies him and Lord Lovel with 2000 "Almains" under Martin Schwartz. These land in Dublin (5 May), and Simnel is crowned in Dublin Cathedral (Christ Church) as Edward VI. (14 May). With Kildare, Lovel, Lincoln, and an army, Sim-

* He was tutored for the part by Richard Simon, an Oxford priest, who went to Ireland with him.

† Son of Elizabeth, sister of Edward IV. He had been proclaimed heir to the throne by Richard III. in 1484.

nel lands at Fouldsey in Lancashire (4 June), marches to York, defeats Lord Clifford at Braham Moor (10 June), and pushes south towards Newark in Nottinghamshire. In the meantime Henry VII. takes the real Edward Plantagenet out of the Tower and parades him through the streets of London in proof of Simnel's imposture. Henry then marches north and defeats Simnel at Stoke, near Newark, in Nottinghamshire (16 June). De la Pole and Schwartz are slain. Lovel probably escapes, takes refuge in a secret chamber in his house at Minster Lovel, Oxfordshire, is forgotten, and dies of starvation; a skeleton supposed to be his was there discovered some centuries later. Simnel is taken prisoner, and made a scullion in the royal household, and afterwards falconer. The date of his death is unknown. Richard Simon, also captured, is imprisoned for life.

Henry's wife, Elizabeth of York, is crowned queen (25 Nov.). Her mother, Edward IV.'s widow, is still kept in confinement in the nunnery at Bermondsey.*

Parliament passes Bills of Attainder against the leaders in Simnel's insurrection. It also passes an Act (3 Henry VII., c. 1) establishing or reviving a special court (afterwards known as the Star Chamber†), consisting of chief men of the Privy Council and two chief-justices, for the purpose of suppressing maintenance, that is, the custom of feudal lords keeping large bodies of armed retainers; also to punish murder, robbery, perjury, and the bribing of jurors: and to suppress unlawful assemblies and riots which prevent the administration of justice. Another Act (c. 2) declares the abduction of women a felony.

Charles VIII. of France attacks Brittany with a view to annex it to France. Francis II., Duke of Brittany (who had sheltered Henry VII. when in exile), applies to Henry for assistance. Henry raises money with the ostensible object of giving the needed help, but fails to render it, and retains the money.

1488. Disgust at Henry VII.'s double dealing in the matter of the subsidy leads to insurrection in the north, and the Earl of Northumberland, who had collected it there, is killed (28 Ap.). The insurgents are dispersed by Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey. ‡

* She died there (8 June, 1492), aged about 61, and was buried at Windsor.

† So called because held in a room called the Star Chamber. This chamber received its name, not, as Coke says, because its ceiling was "garnished with stars," but from the *Starra*, or Jewish covenants, deposited there by Richard I.

‡ Created Duke of Norfolk, 1 Feb., 1514.

Charles VIII. of France again invades Brittany, and Henry VII. raises another subsidy for the war there. Charles defeats Francis II., Duke of Brittany, and his ally the Duke of Orleans at St. Aubin (28 July). Francis dies (9 Sep.) ; his only child Anne (now 12) succeeds to the duchy.

1489. Henry VII. has endeavored to make a truce with France and retain the subsidy, but the news of the defeat at St. Aubin causes so great a clamor in England, that he is obliged to send an army to Brittany to assist Anne (in the spring); but he secretly instructs it not to fight.

Arthur, Prince of Wales, eldest son of Henry VII. (now two years old), is betrothed to Catherine of Aragon (4 years old), daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain (Mar.).

1491. Henry VII.'s second son (afterwards Henry VIII.) is born at Greenwich (28 June).

Anne, Duchess of Brittany, finding that no reliance is to be placed on the support of Henry VII., marries Charles VIII. (6 Dec.), and Brittany is united to France.

A five years' truce is made with Scotland (26 Dec.).

William Caxton, the first English printer, dies, aged about 69.

1492. Perkin Warbeck, another impostor, pretends to be Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York, the younger of the two princes murdered in the Tower in 1483 by Richard III. He lands in Ireland (Feb.) and receives some support. He goes to the court of Charles VIII. of France (Sep.), and is acknowledged by him as King of England.

Sir Edmund Dudley and his partner Sir Richard Empson, as agents of Henry VII., commence a system of benevolences and other illegal or quasi-illegal extortions from the people, which makes them the objects of universal hatred. The system is continued throughout the rest of the reign of Henry VII.

Henry VII., for the ostensible purpose of punishing Charles VIII. for annexing Brittany and receiving Warbeck, raises money for another French expedition. He sails for France (2 Oct.), and besieges Boulogne, but in less than a week makes (3 Nov.) with Charles the Treaty of Etaples (15 miles S. of Boulogne, now in Pas de Calais), Charles paying Henry £149,000, and agreeing to expel Warbeck from France. Henry returns to England (Nov.).

1493. Perkin Warbeck takes refuge in Flanders (Aug.), where Margaret, dowager Duchess of Burgundy (sister of Edward IV.), acknowledges him as her nephew and King of England, giving him the title of "the White Rose of England."

1494. Prince Henry (second son of Henry VII., now 3 years old), is made nominal viceroy of Ireland. Sir Edward

Poynings is appointed his deputy (13 Sep.). He goes over, arrests the Earl of Kildare (who had supported Simnel in 1487 and Warbeck in 1492), and sends him to England, where he is imprisoned in the Tower. The Irish parliament of the Pale meets at Drogheda and passes "Poyning's Law" (10 Hen. VII., c. 4), providing that no Act shall be passed without having been previously sanctioned by the king in council (Dec.). This Act was passed in order to curb the domination of the lords of the Pale, who had hitherto dictated the legislation of the Irish parliament.

The truce with Scotland is extended to 30 Ap., 1501.

1495. Sir William Stanley (who deserted Richard III. and crowned Henry VII. on the field of Bosworth) is executed for high treason (16 Feb.), on a charge of favoring the claims of Warbeck. His large possessions escheat to the Crown. Other nobles are executed on a similar charge.

Warbeck sails with an army from Flanders, and makes a descent at Deal, on the coast of Kent (3 July); it is unsuccessful, and 169 of his men are captured by the people of Sandwich and hanged. Warbeck then goes to Ireland, and besieges Waterford (July-Aug.), but fails and goes to Scotland (Nov.).

Parliament meets (14 Oct.) and passes Acts making unpaid benevolences recoverable by imprisonment (11 Hen. VII., c. 10); allowing suits *in forma pauperis* (c. 12); for punishing poaching (c. 17); for regulating wages (c. 22); and for the punishment of jurors giving untrue verdicts (c. 24). The royal household is regulated, and the expenses fixed at £12,059.9.11 (c. 62).

1496. Henry negotiates (24 Feb.) with Philip, Duke of Burgundy, a treaty known as "The Great Intercourse" (*Magnus Intercursus*). It provides for the expulsion of Warbeck from Flanders, and for reciprocal free trade between Flanders and England in all commodities, "without pass or license;" and marks an era in the history of international relations.

The Earl of Kildare is liberated from the Tower, and reinstated as Lord Deputy in Ireland; he holds the office till his death in Sep., 1513.

James IV. of Scotland acknowledges Warbeck as "Prince of England," and gives him his kinswoman Lady Catherine Gordon in marriage. James IV. and Warbeck invade England (Oct.), but meet with no support from the people, and after ravaging some districts in the north, return to Scotland. Henry VII. seizes the opportunity to obtain another large grant from parliament.

1497. Under a patent from Henry VII. for the discovery of unknown lands, John and Sebastian Cabot sail from Bristol, discover the mainland of North America (24 June), calling the land first seen "*Prima Vista*" (probably Cape Breton); and they sail along the coast as far south as Florida. This was a year before Columbus touched the mainland of America.

The people of Cornwall, incited by Thomas Flammock and Michael Joseph, revolt against the heavy taxation; and under the command of James Touchet, Lord Audley, march to London, but are defeated by the royal troops under Henry VII. and his generals Lords Daubeney, Oxford, and Suffolk, at Blackheath (22 June), with a loss of 2000 slain. The three leaders are taken; Audley is beheaded on Tower-hill, and Flammock and Joseph are hanged at Tyburn.

Warbeck goes from Scotland to Ireland, and lands at Cork (30 July). James IV. again invades England (July), but retires before the Earl of Surrey (Aug.), and a seven years' truce is made with Scotland (29 Sep.).

Warbeck, with a few followers, lands at Whitsand Bay, near Penzance in Cornwall (7 Sep.), collects a force of 6000, and lays siege to Exeter; the city holds out, his followers begin to desert, and on the approach of the royal troops under Lord Daubeney, he flees and takes sanctuary (21 Sep.) in the Abbey of Beaulieu, in the New Forest, Hampshire (about 10 miles W. S. W. of Southampton). Here, on a promise that his life will be spared, he leaves sanctuary and surrenders (5 Oct.); and is taken to London and allowed to live at large.

1498. Warbeck escapes from London (9 June), takes sanctuary at Shene (now Richmond), leaves sanctuary on a promise that his life will be spared, is arrested, and sent to the Tower. Some accounts state that he publicly confessed his imposture, acknowledging that he was a son of John Osbeck, a Jew of Tournay in Flanders; but these seem to be doubtful.

1499. Perkin Warbeck and Edward Plantagenet, Earl of Warwick (who has been a prisoner since 1485) are executed (23 Nov.) on charges of treason and of concerting measures to escape from the Tower. Warwick's death leaves Edmund de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, head of the Yorkist party.

1499-1500. The plague is so fatal in London that Henry VII. and his court go to Calais.

1501. Edmund de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, leader of the Yorkist party, leaves England for Flanders, with his brother Richard (Aug.).

Arthur, Prince of Wales (now 15), is married at St. Paul's Cathedral, London (14 Nov.), to Catherine of Aragon (now 16).

1502. Peace is made between England and Scotland (24 Jan.) ; also a treaty for the marriage of James IV. (now 30) to Margaret, Henry's eldest daughter (now 12).

Arthur, Prince of Wales, dies (2 Ap.), aged 15.

About this date gardening is first introduced into England, principally from the Netherlands.

1503. Elizabeth of York, queen of Henry VII., dies (11 Feb.), aged 37. She leaves one son (afterwards Henry VIII.), and two daughters, Margaret (afterwards Queen of Scotland) and Mary (afterwards queen of Louis XII. of France).

The marriage between James IV. of Scotland and Margaret, daughter of Henry VII., is solemnized at Edinburgh (8 Aug.).

Pope Julius II. grants a dispensation (26 Dec.) authorizing Prince Henry (now 12) to marry his brother Arthur's widow, Catherine of Aragon (now 18) ; and a marriage contract is entered into.

1505. Margaret Beaufort, Countess of Richmond, Henry VII.'s mother, founds Christ's College, Cambridge.

1506. Archduke Philip of Burgundy is shipwrecked at Weymouth in Dorsetshire (26 Jan.), and falls into the hands of Henry VII., who extorts from him the surrender of Edmund de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk,* who had taken refuge in Flanders in 1501. Henry commits De la Pole to the Tower, where he is confined till his execution by Henry VIII. in 1513. Pole's brother Richard was also to have been given up, but he escaped to Hungary.

The sweating-sickness visits England a second time.

1509. Henry VII. dies at Richmond (21 Ap.), aged 53 ; he is buried in the chapel built by himself at Westminster Abbey (10 May). His only surviving son Henry VIII. succeeds (22 Ap.). The young king (now nearly 18) marries Catherine of Aragon (11 June), his brother Arthur's widow. They are crowned at Westminster Abbey (24 June).

Margaret Beaufort, Henry VII.'s mother, dies (29 June), aged 68.

Sir Edmund Dudley and Sir Richard Empson, who have long been objects of popular odium as the agents employed by Henry VII. to levy his exactions from the people, are arrested at the instance of Henry VIII. on a baseless charge of conspiring to 'hold, guide, and govern the king and his council.' Dudley is tried at London (18 July), and Empson at North-

* A son of Edward IV.'s sister Elizabeth, and a younger brother of John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln, who had been proclaimed heir to the throne by Richard III. in 1484, and was killed at the battle of Stoke in 1487.

ampton (1 Oct.); and both are found guilty and condemned to death.

1510. Parliament passes an Act (1 Hen. VIII., c. 4) to prevent a repetition of the illegal extortions of which Empson and Dudley had been guilty; and they are executed together on Tower-hill (18 Aug.).

Thomas Wolsey is introduced to Henry VIII., and soon becomes a favorite

1511. Louis XII. of France, having quarrelled with Pope Julius II., summons a schismatic Council at Pisa; the pope thereupon raises a cry that the Church is in danger, and forms a "Holy League" for its defence. Henry VIII. and Ferdinand of Spain join the League (10 Nov.), and determine on war against France.

1512. Henry VIII. sends an army under the Marquis of Dorset to the south of France to co-operate against France with that of Ferdinand of Spain. In consequence of Ferdinand's delay, the English army remains inactive (June-Dec.), becomes disorganized, and Dorset returns with it to England. The English fleet, under Sir Edward Howard, defeats that of the French off the south coast of Brittany (10 Aug.).

James IV. of Scotland makes an alliance with France (22 May).

An Act (3 Hen. VIII., c. 11) is passed forbidding physicians and surgeons from practising without the license of the bishop of the diocese.

1513. A new league against France is formed (5 Ap.) between Pope Leo X., the Emperor Maximilian, Henry VIII., and Ferdinand of Spain.

Richard Pole having joined the French army, Henry VIII. has his brother Edmund, Earl of Suffolk, taken from the Tower and beheaded (30 Ap.).

Henry VIII., with his generals Lords Shrewsbury and Herbert, sails to Flanders with 25,000 men (30 June); he is there joined by Maximilian, Emperor of Germany, and his troops, and the combined forces lay siege to Terouenne. A French army of 10,000 men advance to its relief; but being attacked at Guinegate by the allies, and seized with sudden panic, put spurs to their horses, and flee without a blow (16 Aug.). This "Battle of Spurs," as it was called, is followed by the surrender of Terouenne (22 Aug.) and Tournay (24 Sep.). Henry returns to England (24 Nov.).

Urged thereto by the Queen of France, James IV. of Scotland declares war against England, and invades Northumberland with an army of 30,000 men. The English, 32,000

strong, under the Earl of Surrey, advance from Pontefract in Yorkshire. and at Flodden Field,* near Wooler in Northumberland, James IV. is defeated and slain (9 Sep.). The Scotch loss was about 9000; the English, 6000 or 7000. James's son (a child a year old) succeeds as James V., his mother Margaret (sister of Henry VIII.) being made regent.

1514. Henry VIII., being deserted by his allies Maximilian and Ferdinand, and also by Leo X., makes peace (7 Aug.) with Scotland and France, Louis XII. agreeing to marry Henry's sister Mary, and to pay him 100,000 crowns. The marriage takes place at Abbeville (9 Oct.).

Thomas Wolsey, Bishop of Tournay, is made Bishop of Lincoln (6 Feb.), and afterwards Archbishop of York (July).

1515. Louis XII. of France dies (1 Jan.); his son-in-law Francis I. succeeds him.

Louis's widow, Mary Tudor (Henry VIII.'s sister), marries Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk, privately in France (Feb.); publicly at Greenwich (13 May).

Pope Leo X. makes Wolsey a cardinal (7 Sep.). Wolsey is made Bishop of Bath and Wells, and becomes Henry VIII.'s chief adviser, directing the domestic and foreign policy of the country. He enters upon an arbitrary career, and no parliament is called from 1515 to 1523, money being collected by forced loans and benevolences.

1516. Princess Mary (afterwards queen), the only child of Henry VIII. and Catherine of Aragon who survived her parents, is born at Greenwich (18 Feb.).

1517. A riot occurs in London against the foreign merchants and artisans settled there (1 May), afterwards known as "evil May-day." The riot is suppressed, about 300 of the rioters are arrested, of whom about 12 are executed, the rest being pardoned.

1518. Pope Leo X. makes Wolsey legate in England (17 June).

Henry VIII. and Francis I. of France make a treaty against the Turks (2 Oct.).

Martin Luther makes his famous "Protest" against the sale of indulgences and other Romish practices, by posting up his 95 theses on the door of the Schlosskirche at Wittenberg (31 Oct.), and so begins the Protestant Reformation in Germany.

The sweating-sickness visits England a third time, and is very deadly.

The wheel-lock supersedes the lighted match for firing off hand-guns.

* The battle is described in the last canto of Scott's "Marmion."

The Royal College of Physicians, London, is incorporated by letters-patent (23 Sep.); Dr. Linacre, physician to Henry VIII., is elected first president.

1519. Maximilian, Emperor of Germany, dies (12 Jan.); Francis I. of France and Charles I., King of Spain and the Netherlands, aspire to the vacant throne. The influence of England is given in favor of Charles, who is elected emperor as Charles V.

1520. With a view of becoming supreme in Europe, Francis I. and Charles V. each seek the English alliance. Charles comes to England and confers with Henry VIII. at Canterbury. Francis, under the treaty of 1518, also demands a personal interview with Henry, who goes over in great state to Calais, and he is received in similar splendor by Francis I., on the so-called "Field of the Cloth of Gold," at Ardres, near Calais (4-25 June). Henry immediately afterward meets Charles V. at Gravelines in Flanders (10-11 July), and goes with him to Calais, where a secret alliance is made between them. Henry returns to England (July).

1521. Henry VIII. publishes in London (July) his anti-Lutheran treatise, written in Latin, entitled *Assertio Septem Sacramenta* ("A Defence of the Seven Sacraments"). In acknowledgment of its merits, Pope Leo X., by bull, confers upon Henry (11 Oct.) the title "*Fidei Defensor*" ("Defender of the Faith"), which has ever since been retained as one of the royal titles of the English sovereign.

1522. Henry VIII. declares war against France (Mar.), and the Emperor Charles V. again visits England (May-July).

An English army lands in northern France (Aug.), and devastates Picardy.

At the instigation of Francis I. of France, the Duke of Albany, regent of Scotland, invades England with a large army (Sep.), but is hoodwinked by Lord Dacre, the English Warden, agrees to a month's armistice, and retires to Scotland. He then goes to France and raises an auxiliary force.

1523. Albany, the Scotch regent, again invades England, but is compelled by the Earl of Surrey to raise the siege of Wark Castle, and he again retires to Scotland; peace for 18 years is made between the two countries.

An English expedition joins the forces of Charles V. in an invasion of France (Aug.), advancing as far as Mondidier; but the English troops are weakened by sickness, withdraw, and are disbanded; and a virtual peace is established between England and France.

Wolsey obtains from Pope Adrian VI. bulls for the dissolu-

tion of 40 of the smaller monasteries, and he applies the revenues to educational purposes.

1525. Charles V. defeats Francis I. at Pavia (24 Feb.); and Francis is taken prisoner. Henry VIII. and Wolsey forsake the alliance of Charles and make a treaty of alliance with the regent of France (30 Aug.).

Wolsey's magnificent country-seat at Hampton Court is finished, and he presents it to Henry VIII.

After visits of inquiry, many of the smaller monasteries are suppressed (7 June).

William Tyndale publishes, at Worms in Germany, his translation of the New Testament into English from the Greek text of Erasmus.

1526. Sir Thomas More writes the *Utopia*, in Latin, one of the most remarkable political romances in any language.

Charles V. liberates Francis I. on hard conditions (17 Mar.).

Tyndale's translation of the New Testament is secretly introduced into England, and is largely circulated in spite of the efforts of the bishops to have the copies burnt.

1527. Henry's only surviving child is the Princess Mary (now 11), and he is anxious for a male heir; he has also fallen in love with Anne Boleyn. For these reasons he determines to seek a divorce from Catherine of Aragon. He applies to Pope Clement VII. for a commission to inquire into the legality of his marriage with her (Aug.).

The army of Charles V., under the Constable Bourbon,* takes Rome by assault (6 May), and makes Pope Clement VII. prisoner (7 June), whereby Charles acquires influence over him. Charles is Catherine's nephew, and upholds her cause against Henry.

Wolsey goes to France and makes a new alliance with Francis I.

1528. Henry VIII. and Francis I. declare war against Charles V. (22 Jan.); make truce with him (8 June).

Pope Clement VII. sends Cardinal Campeggio to England, as a commissioner to act with Wolsey as legates on an inquiry into the validity of Henry's marriage with Catherine. Campeggio arrives in England (7 Oct.), and he and Wolsey seek Catherine's consent to a divorce, but she refuses it.

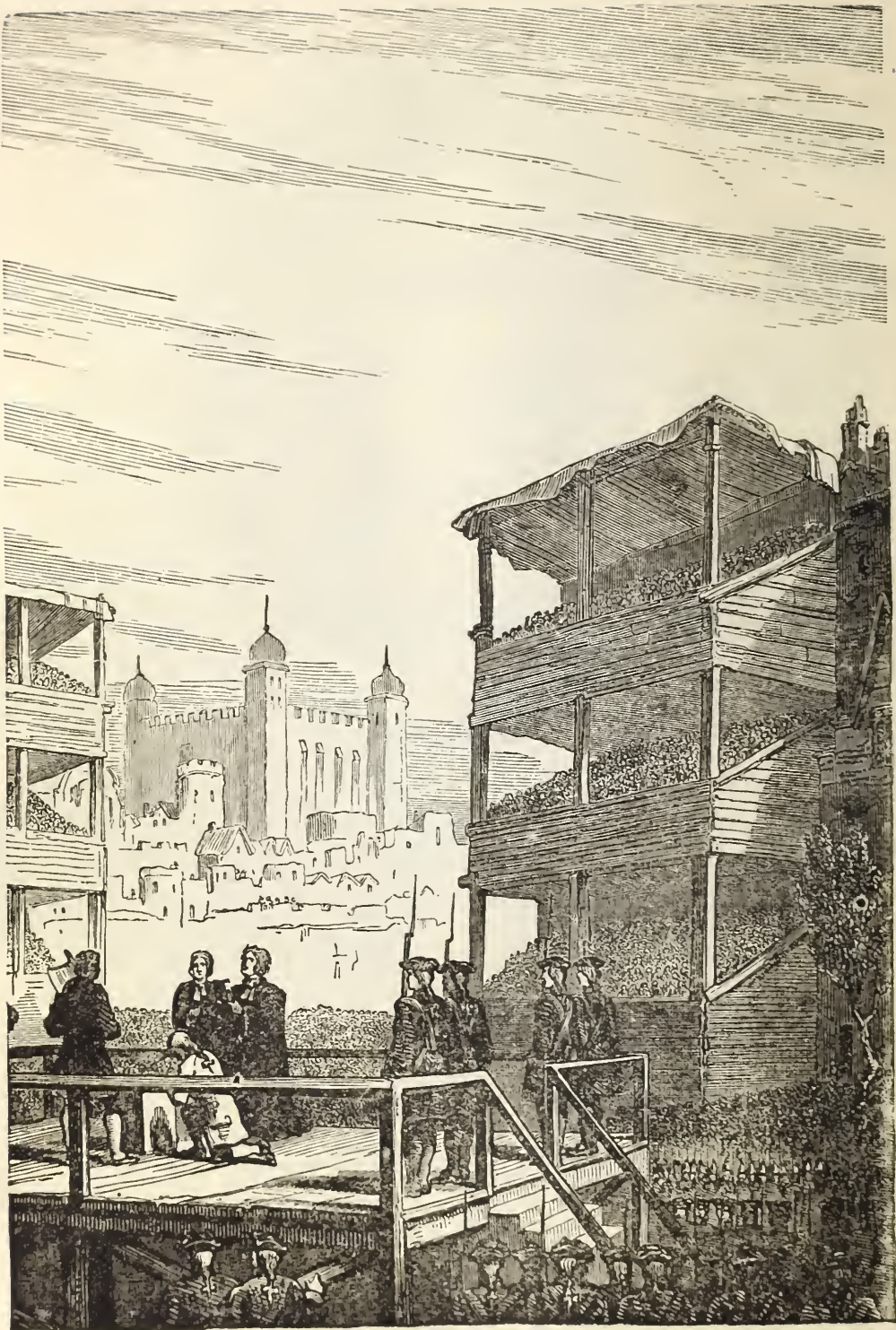
The population of England and Wales is estimated at about 4,356,000.

1528-29. The sweating-sickness visits England for the fourth time, when it is known as "the Great Mortality." There is also scarcity, almost amounting to famine.

* A prominent character in Byron's "Deformed Transformed."



JOHN CHURCHILL, DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH. (From the original portrait by Kneller.)—P. 303.



EXECUTION OF LORD DERWENTWATER ON TOWER HILL.—P. 304.



GUNPOWDER CONSPIRATORS.—P. 264-5.



1529. The two cardinals hold a legatine court to try the question of Henry's marriage (18 June–30 July); Catherine appears (18, 21 June) and protests against the proceedings; and the court adjourns (30 July) to 1 Oct. without coming to a decision. Wolsey's lukewarmness in the matter brings upon him the enmity of Henry and Anne Boleyn, taking advantage of which his enemies indict him (9 Oct.) under the Statute of *Præmunire** for having received bulls from Rome, and in 1516 accepted the office of papal legate. He is found guilty, compelled to resign the great seal (17 Oct.), and all his property is confiscated to the crown (28 Oct.). He retires in disgrace to Esher in Surrey. Sir Thomas More is made chancellor in his place (25 Oct.).

Thomas Cranmer advises Henry to get the opinions of the universities on the question, "Do the laws of God allow a man to marry his brother's widow?" and Henry sends commissioners to the universities at home and aboard.

Parliament meets (3 Nov.), and the Commons present a petition to the king attacking Church abuses. An Act (21 Hen. VIII., c. 13) is passed against excessive probate duties and burial fees, enforcing residence, forbidding pluralities, and prohibiting the clergy from following any trade.

John Skelton, poet-laureate, dies in sanctuary at Westminster (21 June), aged about 69.

1530. Wolsey is pardoned (12 Feb.), and the temporalities of his see at York are restored to him (17 Feb.). He goes there (Feb.) and remains till Oct., when his growing popularity in the north arouses the fears of his enemies at court. He is arrested on a charge of high treason (4 Nov.), and taken towards London, but falls ill on the way, and dies at Leicester Abbey (29 Nov.), aged 59. He is buried in the Abbey precincts.

Many universities give judgment against the validity of Henry's marriage with Catherine; their opinions are sent to Pope Clement VII.

1531. The Convocation of Canterbury meets (Jan.), and Henry informs it that, by recognizing Wolsey as legate, the whole clergy have subjected themselves to the penalties of *Præmunire*. He offers to accept £180,000 (equal to over £1,000,000 of present money) as commutation for the penalty. Convocation accepts the offer, and passes a Bill granting the subsidy (22 Mar.), in the preamble to which the king is for the first time styled "Head of the Church," thereby acknowledg-

* See *ante*, p. 185, 1393.

ing the supremacy of the civil power over the ecclesiastical. (See 22 Hen. VIII., c. 15).

The opinions of the universities in favor of the nullity of Henry's marriage are laid before parliament (30 Mar.), and he orders Catherine to leave Windsor (July). She retires to Ampthill in Bedfordshire, and is no longer treated as queen.

Acts are passed providing that poisoners shall be boiled to death (22 Hen. VIII., c. 9), and ordering gypsies ("Egyptians") to leave England within 15 days (c. 10).

Henry VIII. sends Stephen Gardiner (Bishop of Winchester), Sir Edward Brian, and Edmund Bonner as ambassadors to Pope Clement VII. to procure his dispensation for Henry's divorce from Catherine; but without result.

1532. The province of York is ordered to pay £18,840 as commutation of the penalties of *Premunire* incurred by submitting to Wolsey's legatine authority (23 Hen. VIII., c. 19).

Benefit of clergy having become an intolerable nuisance, parliament passes an Act (23 Hen. VIII., c. 1) disallowing the plea in cases of felony to any one lower than a sub-deacon. Another Act (c. 10) is passed forbidding leases to the clergy for over 20 years. With the sanction of the clergy another Act (c. 20) is passed giving Henry conditional power to suspend payment to the pope of *annates* or first-fruits, that is, the first year's income of every see or benefice, which has hitherto been paid to him. Henry holds this Act in abeyance as a weapon against the pope.

Sir Thomas More resigns the chancellorship (16 May).

The clergy give up the position for which they have striven since Anselm's time, and acknowledge that they cannot legislate without the consent of parliament. This act makes the king in reality head of the Church, and makes the Church a national one, independent of Rome.

Parliament passes the "Act of Appeals" (24 Hen. VIII., c. 12), declaring that the Anglican Church has the right to settle its own spiritual questions, and forbidding all appeals to any court higher than the archbishop's, thus abolishing appeals to Rome or to any legatine court.

William Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (23 Aug.), aged 82. Henry names Thomas Cranmer his successor (Sep.).

Henry VIII., in order to manifest publicly his determination with regard to his intended divorce and remarriage, takes Anne Boleyn in regal state as his future queen to Calais (Oct.), and there meets Francis I. and the Queen of Navarre. Pope

Clement VII. issues a brief ordering Henry to take back Catherine, and forbidding him to marry Anne Boleyn.

1533. Henry VIII. secretly marries Anne Boleyn (25 Jan.).

Thomas Cranmer, by papal bull dated 21 Feb., is made Archbishop of Canterbury, and consecrated (30 Mar.).

Henry VIII. authorizes Cranmer to proceed with the divorce; Cranmer holds his court at Dunstable, and cites Catherine to attend; she refuses, and Cranmer declares (23 May) her marriage with Henry void from the beginning, as having been in defiance of divine prohibition. From this date Catherine is styled Dowager Princess of Wales. Henry acknowledges his marriage with Anne Boleyn; Cranmer pronounces it valid (28 May); and Anne Boleyn is crowned in Westminster Abbey (Whit Sunday, 1 June).

Pope Clement VII. reverses Cranmer's decision, and Henry appeals from the pope to a general council (29 June).

At the palace of Placentia, Greenwich, Anne Boleyn gives birth to the Princess Elizabeth (7 Sep.), afterwards queen.

1534. Pope Clement VII. (at Easter) declares Henry's marriage with Catherine lawful, orders him take her back as his wife, excommunicates him, and authorizes Charles V. to execute the sentence.

At the instance of Thomas Cromwell, parliament declares the Annates Bill completed (25 Hen. VIII., c. 20); and by another Act (c. 21) abolishes all tributes to Rome; provides for the election of bishops without the pope's intervention; and decrees that if the pope does not yield to the king's wishes in three months, his remaining authority shall be transferred to the Crown (30 Mar.). This Act makes the breach with Rome irreconcilable. At Henry's instance parliament passes "the Succession Act" (c. 22), declaring his marriage with Catherine unlawful, making it treason to question the legality of his marriage with Anne Boleyn, settling the succession on the issue of that marriage, and appointing commissioners to administer an oath to support the Act. Another Act (c. 14) is passed for the punishment of heresy.

Sir Thomas More and Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, objecting to take the oath under the Succession Act, and thereby deny the pope's authority, are imprisoned in the Tower (15 Ap.).

Elizabeth Barton, the "Nun of Kent" or "Holy Maid of Kent," as she was called, and several of her associates, are executed on a charge of treasonable practices (5 May).

Parliament passes "the Act of Supremacy" (26 Hen. VIII., c. 1), making the conditional abolition of the papal authority absolute, and constituting the king "the only supreme head

in earth of the Church of England, called *Anglicana Ecclesia* ;” also another (c. 13) making it high treason to deprive him of that or any other title or dignity.

Sir Thomas More, Bishop Fisher, and several Carthusians are indicted under these Acts (Nov.).

1535. Under the Act of Supremacy Henry VIII. formally assumes the title of “on earth the Supreme Head of the Church of England” (15 Jan.).

Pope Paul III. makes Bishop Fisher a cardinal ; this rouses Henry’s anger, and Fisher is tried, and still refusing to take the oath of supremacy, is beheaded (22 June). Sir Thomas More is also condemned for the same offence (1 July), and beheaded (6 July).

As the monasteries are the centres of opposition to the new Acts, Henry VIII. and Thomas Cromwell, his new minister, issue a commission to visit the lesser monasteries.

Miles Coverdale’s Bible is published secretly, probably at Zurich in Switserland ; it was an English translation from the Latin Vulgate, revised by comparison with German versions.

1536. Catherine of Aragon dies at Kimbolton (7 Jan.), aged 50 ; she is buried at the abbey church of Peterborough (now the cathedral). On her deathbed she wrote a letter of forgiveness to Henry, commending their daughter Mary (now 20) to his care.

The first Poor Law (27 Hen. VIII., c. 25) is passed ; it provides also for the punishment of vagabonds and sturdy beggars. An Act (c. 26) is passed uniting Wales with England. The commission on the lesser monasteries reports the existence of such wickedness in two-thirds of them, that parliament passes an Act (c. 28) dissolving all monasteries with incomes of less than £200 a year, and confiscating their property to the Crown. The monks are either pensioned or distributed among the greater monasteries.

Anne Boleyn and her brother, George Lord Rochford, are sent to the Tower (2 May) on a charge of treason, adultery, and incest ; are tried by a commission of 27 peers and convicted (15 May). Rochford is executed (17 May). Four others of her alleged paramours, Sir Francis Weston, Brereton, Norris, and Smeaton, are tried (12 May) and executed (17 May). Cranmer declares Anne’s marriage null and void on the alleged ground of a pre-contract (17 May), and she is beheaded (19 May).

Henry VIII. marries Jane Seymour (20 May).

The profession of faith of the Lutheran Church, now

known as "the Augsburg Confession," is presented to Charles V. at the Diet of Augsburg (June).

Parliament again meets (8 June); it passes a new Succession Act (28 Hen. VIII., c. 7), declaring both princesses Mary and Elizabeth illegitimate, and giving the succession to the issue of the king's new marriage; also giving to the king power to alter the succession. The parliament, which has been in existence seven years, is dissolved.

With the king's sanction Convocation adopts ten Articles (some taken from the Augsburg Confession) declaring the Bible and the three Creeds to be the sole authority in matters of faith, and that only three Sacraments are necessary; and it is ordered that the Ten Commandments, the Lord's Prayer, and the Creeds shall be learnt in English.

In consequence of the suppression of the smaller monasteries, an insurrection breaks out in Lincolnshire (2 Oct.), under Dr. Mackerel, Prior of Barlings, who calls himself Capt. Cobler, and collects a force of 20,000 men; on terms being offered by the Earl of Shaftesbury, the insurgents disband (13 Oct.).

A widespread and formidable insurrection, under Robert Aske and Lord Darcy, known as "the Pilgrimage of Grace," breaks out in Yorkshire (8 Oct.), and spreads throughout the whole north of England. The insurgents, 30,000 or 40,000 strong, capture York (16 Oct.), Pomfret Castle (20 Oct.), and Hull. The Duke of Norfolk, on behalf of Henry VIII., meets them at Doncaster (26 Oct.), and promises to accede to their demands and to grant a general amnesty; and they disband and are pardoned (25 Dec.).

At the instigation of Henry VIII. William Tyndale, the translator of most of the Bible into English, is, by order of the Emperor Charles V., after an imprisonment of 18 months at Vilvoorden (about 6 miles N. N. E. of Brussels), in the Netherlands, there strangled and burnt (6 Oct.). His last words were: "Lord, open the King of England's eyes."

1537. Disturbances are renewed in Yorkshire under Sir Francis Bigod (12 Jan.), but are quieted by Aske himself. Martial law is proclaimed, however; the insurgent leaders, Aske, Darcy, Lord Hussey, and Sir Robert Constable, are arrested (May); and Aske, Hussey, and Constable, are executed (28 June); also about 70 others.

Henry's queen, Jane Seymour, gives birth to a son (12 Oct.), afterwards Edward VI., and dies in childbirth (24 Oct.), aged about 27.

Tyndale's translation of the Bible, completed from Cover-

dale's and revised by John Rogers, is published by Grafton, an English printer, and receives the king's license. It is known as "the Matthew Bible." An order in council directs a copy to be placed in every church, "for every man that will to look and read therein."

1538. James V. of Scotland marries Mary of Lorraine, daughter of the Duke of Guise (9 May.).

Pope Paul III. publishes a bull (17 Dec.) excommunicating and deposing Henry VIII. and formally delivering his soul to the devil. Cardinal Reginald Pole (who is living in Italy) presses the Emperor Charles V. to carry the bull into execution; Charles declines.

A friar named Forest is burnt for denying the royal supremacy (22 May); and two German Anabaptists are burnt in Smithfield (29 Nov.).

1539. Edward Courtenay, Marquis of Exeter (grandson of Edward IV.), the head of the house of York, and Sir Edward Nevill are beheaded (9 Jan.) on a charge of conspiracy to place Cardinal Pole on the throne. Courtenay's son Edward (a boy of 12) is sent to the Tower. Cardinal Pole's brother, Henry Pole, Lord Montacute, another Yorkist (grandson of the Duke of Clarence, Edward IV.'s brother), is also beheaded for high treason (3 Mar.), on a charge of being implicated in the conspiracy. The Countess of Salisbury, mother of the two Poles, is attainted in parliament and sent to the Tower (28 Ap.).

Lord Darcy, one of the leaders in the Pilgrimage of Grace in 1536, is condemned and executed (20 June).

Parliament subserviently passes an Act (31 Hen. VIII., c. 8) giving to the king's proclamations the force of law in certain cases; also an Act (c. 13) vesting the property of the larger monasteries in the king.

A reaction against the doctrines of the Reformation having set in, parliament passes "the Statute of Six Articles" (c. 14). It requires belief in the following doctrines: 1. Transubstantiation; 2. Communion in both kinds unnecessary; 3. Priests ought not to marry; 4. Vows of chastity ought to be observed by both sexes; 5. Private masses are allowable; and 6. Auricular confession is necessary. Persons rejecting the first are to be burnt alive; denial of any of the other five entails confiscation of property for the first offence, and execution as a felon for the second.

Hugh Latimer, Bishop of Worcester, and Nicholas Shaxton, Bishop of Salisbury, resign their sees (1 July), and are imprisoned as "sacramentarian heretics."

Three abbots are executed as traitors (14 Nov., 1 Dec.).

1540. Henry VIII. marries Anne of Cleves (6 Jan.), a Protestant; he conceives an aversion against her, and is divorced (10 July). She is to be treated as the king's adopted sister, to hold precedence next to the queen and the king's daughters, and to receive a pension of £3000 a year. [She lived in England during the rest of her life; died at her palace at Chelsea (17 July, 1557); and was buried at Westminster Abbey with regal splendor, 4 Aug.]

Henry's minister, Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, by whom the marriage had been brought about for political purposes, whose foreign policy has also been unsuccessful, and who has likewise been endeavoring to thwart the operation of the Statute of Six Articles, falls into Henry's disfavor; he is arrested on a charge of high treason (10 June); parliament, without hearing him in his own defence, passes a Bill of attainder (29 June); and he is beheaded (28 July).

Henry VIII. marries Catherine Howard (28 July), daughter of Lord Edmund Howard, and niece of the Duke of Norfolk. The Norfolks being a Catholic family, the marriage leads to further reaction against Protestantism.

Parliament passes an Act (32 Hen. VIII., c. 24) completing the work of the dissolution of the monasteries, and vesting their property in the Crown. The total number of monasteries, both large and small, dissolved in 1536, 1539, and 1540, was 645, with revenues amounting to about £150,000 a year, equal to about £1,600,000 in present money.*

Surgeons and barbers are united into one company.

Cranmer's Bible ("the Great Bible"), a revision of Tyndale and Rogers's, is "appointed to be read in churches" by royal command.

About this date, the earliest English comedy, "Ralph Roister Doister," by Nicholas Udall, is published.

1541. Margaret Pole, Countess of Salisbury (a Yorkist), niece of Edward IV., after two years' imprisonment in the Tower, is beheaded for high treason (27 May), aged 72.

The queen, Catherine Howard, is charged with unchastity, and sent to the Tower (Nov). Two of her alleged paramours, Culpeper and Dereham, are executed (10 Dec.).

1542. The queen, Catherine Howard, is convicted of misconduct, and beheaded (12 Feb.).

Henry VIII. assumes the title of King of Ireland, instead

* In the reign of Henry VII., out of a total number of knight's fees of 96,230, the Church owned 28,015, or about 30 per cent. of all the land in England.

of Lord (23 Jan.), and several Irish chiefs are made peers of parliament.

An Act (33 Hen. VIII., c. 6) is passed allowing arms to be carried for defence.

Scotland and France renew their alliance against England, and war breaks out (Oct.). The Scots, 10,000 strong, under Oliver Sinclair, invade England, but are ignominiously defeated at Solway Moss, in Cumberland, near Solway Frith (25 Nov.), by a small band of English, 500 strong, under Thomas Dacre and John Musgrave.

Mary Stuart ("Queen of Scots"), daughter of James V. and Mary of Guise, is born (8 Dec.). James V. dies of grief at the defeat at Solway Moss (14 Dec.), aged 30; his infant daughter, Mary, succeeds to the throne. James Hamilton, Earl of Arran, is made regent.

1543. The Roman Catholic party in England object to Cranmer's Bible; and parliament, at the instance of Henry VIII., passes an Act (34 & 35 Hen. VIII., c. 1) forbidding women, laborers, and uneducated persons to read the New Testament in English.

Wales is divided into 12 counties (c. 2).

Henry VIII. enters into an alliance with the Emperor Charles V. against France (11 Feb.). He also makes a treaty with Arran, regent of Scotland, for the marriage of Prince Edward (now 5) with the infant Mary Stuart, Queen of Scots (1 July).

Henry marries Catherine Parr, widow of Lord Latimer (12 July), his sixth wife.

At the instigation of Francis I. of France, Cardinal Beaton seizes the infant Queen of Scots, has her crowned (Sep.), and calls a parliament (Dec.), which annuls the marriage-treaty with Henry VIII. (11 Dec.), and sets him at defiance.

1544. An English fleet lands 10,000 men, under Lord Hertford,* at Leith (3 May); and Leith and Edinburgh are taken, sacked, and partially burnt (5 May), and the neighboring country is ravaged. Four thousand cavalry from Berwick ravage the Scottish border.

In pursuance of Henry's alliance with Charles V., Lord Hertford's army goes from Scotland to Calais, and Henry gathers there an army of 40,000 men (July). Instead of co-operating with Charles by advancing on Paris, he lays siege to Boulogne, and captures it after a siege of two months (14 Sep.). The town remains in English hands till 1550. Charles V. makes a separate peace with Francis I. of France, at

* Created Duke of Somerset in 1547, and made Protector.

Crépy (19 Sep.), and Henry is left to continue the war alone. He returns to England (30 Sep.).

Parliament passes a Succession Act (35 Hen. VIII., c. 1), providing that the crown shall go to Henry's son Edward, and, should he die without issue, to his sister Mary, and should she die without issue, to her sister Elizabeth, and giving Henry power to limit by will the succession thereafter. Also an Act (c. 3) confirming the title "King of Ireland" assumed by Henry VIII. in 1542. Also an Act (c. 11) fixing the wages of members of parliament at 4s. a day for knights of the shire, and 2s. a day for burgesses.

Pistols first come into use in England, by the cavalry.

1545. The Scots, under the Earl of Angus, Scott of Buccleuch, and Norman Leslie (Master of Rothes), defeat the English under Sir Ralph Evans and Sir Brian Latour, at Ancrum Moor in Roxburghshire (17 Feb.).

A French fleet of 150 ships prepares to invade England, and the French land in the Isle of Wight; but after an indecisive action (18 July), the plague attacks their forces, and they return to France.

Parliament passes an Act (37 Hen. VIII., c. 4) suppressing over 2000 chauntries and chapels, and 110 hospitals, and confiscating their property to the Crown. In order to raise more money for the French war, the Council debases the currency.

1546. At the instigation of Cardinal Beaton, George Wishart, a Scotch reformer, is tried at St. Andrews for heresy, and burnt alive (1 Mar.). Cardinal Beaton is murdered (29 May) at his castle at St. Andrews, by Norman Leslie (Master of Rothes) and 16 other members of the Protestant party of Scotland; and Leslie takes possession of the castle. The Earl of Arran again becomes regent.

Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey* (son of the Duke of Norfolk), is made commander of Boulogne, but, being defeated before the city (7 Jan.), is superseded by the Earl of Hertford, the king's brother-in-law, and imprisoned in the Tower along with his father Norfolk (7 Dec.).

After an unsuccessful effort to retake Boulogne, the French make peace (7 June), agreeing to pay 2,000,000 crowns to England within 8 years (arrears of pension promised in 1525), and a perpetual annuity of 50,000 crowns; also a life-pension of 100,000 crowns annually to Henry VIII.; Boulogne to be

* The well-known poet, and the creator of English blank verse, which he first employed in his translation of the 2d and 4th books of the *Æneid*; he introduced it in imitation of the Italian blank verse.

retained for 8 years as security for the payments. Scotland is included in the peace.

A Liturgy (known as "the King's Prymer"), consisting of the Commandments, Lord's Prayer, Creed, Litany, and Morning and Evening Services, is ordered to be read in churches in place of the Breviary.

At the instigation of Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester (a Catholic), Anne Askew is convicted of questioning the Real Presence in the Sacrament, is tortured in the Tower ineffectually to extort a disclosure of the names of co-believers, and burnt alive at Smithfield (16 July), with three other "Sacramentarians."

1547. The Earl of Surrey is beheaded on a charge of treason (21 Jan.). His father, the Duke of Norfolk, is attainted by Act of parliament (27 Jan.), and sentenced to be executed on 28 Jan., but Henry VIII. dies early in the morning of that day, aged 55, and Norfolk is reprieved by the Council, but still kept in prison (till 1553).

Edward VI. (a boy of nine), Henry's only son, succeeds to the throne (28 Jan.),* and is crowned (20 Feb.).

His mother, Jane Seymour, had been a Protestant, and he had been educated as one. The Earl of Hertford (brother of Jane Seymour, and consequently uncle to the young king) is made Duke of Somerset (16 Feb.) and Protector of England (13 Mar.).

Francis I., King of France, dies (22 Mar.); his son Henry II. succeeds him.

The Scots decline the proposed alliance between Queen Mary and Edward VI. and betroth her to the Dauphin Francis, son of Henry II. of France. A French fleet captures and destroys St. Andrews Castle (Aug.), which since Beaton's death in 1546 has been held by Norman Leslie and the party favoring the English alliance. Somerset thereupon invades Scotland with an army of 18,000 men, and defeats the Scots, under the Earl of Arran, at Pinkie Cleugh, near Musselburgh, on the Frith of Forth (10 Sep.), the Scots losing 10,000 slain and 1500 prisoners; the English, less than 200. Somerset then captures Edinburgh and other places. The victory at Pinkie is otherwise fruitless, as want of supplies compels the English army to retreat.

An Act (1 Ed. VI., c. 1) is passed repealing the Acts against the Lollards (5 Rich. II., stat. 2, c. 5; 2 Hen. V., st. 1, c. 7; 25

* The practice is now first introduced of proclaiming a new king on the day of the death of his predecessor. It had formerly been the day after.

Hen. VIII., c. 14); the Act of the Six Articles (31 Hen. VIII., c. 14); and the Act forbidding the reading of the Bible (34 & 35 Hen. VIII., c. 1).

The first book of Homilies is published by Cranmer.

1548. Mary Queen of Scots (now 6) is taken to France (July), escorted by a French fleet, and is betrothed to the Dauphin Francis, son of Henry II. of France (Aug.).

1549. A "Book of Common Prayer" having, "with the aid of the Holy Ghost," been framed by commissioners under the presidency of Archbishop Cranmer, parliament passes (15 Jan.) "the Act of Uniformity" (2 & 3 Ed. VI., c. 1), ordering the book to come into general use on the evening of Whit Sunday (20 May). It is printed (7 Mar.). An Act (c. 21) is passed allowing priests to marry.

Lord Seymour of Sudeley (the Protector's brother) is, at the instance of the Protector himself, sent to the Tower (17 Jan.), attainted by parliament for treason, and beheaded (20 or 27 Mar.).

The radical measures of the Protector in the direction of Protestantism create discontent, and insurrections break out in Cornwall and Devonshire, and in Norfolk. The western insurgents, under Humphrey Arundell, besiege Exeter (June), but are defeated by the royal troops under Lords Russell and Grey, in a two-days' battle at St. Mary's Clyst, near Topsham in Devonshire (4-5 Aug.); Exeter is relieved (6 Aug.), and the insurgents are finally defeated at Stamford Courtenay in Devonshire (Aug.), and dispersed; martial law is proclaimed, and the insurgents are severely punished.

In Norfolk, a force of 16,000 men, under Robert Ket, a tanner, of Wymondham, captures Norwich (1 Aug.), but is defeated (Aug.) at Mousehold Hill, near Norwich, by the royal troops under John Dudley,* late Lord Lisle, now Earl of Warwick.

Arundell, Ket, and the other leaders are tried at Westminster (26 Nov.); they plead guilty and are all executed in Nov. or Dec. save Arundell, who is executed at Tyburn (27 Jan., 1550).

The French having made continual attempts to recapture Boulogne, the English government formally declares war against France (Sep.).

Somerset's domestic and foreign policy having thus led to rebellion at home and war with Scotland and France, the

* Son of Sir Edward Dudley, the extortionate minister of Henry VII., beheaded by Henry VIII. in 1510.

Council, at the instigation of the Earls of Warwick and Southampton, compel him to resign the Protectorship, and commit him to the Tower (11 Oct.); he makes formal submission before the king and Council (23 Dec.).

An Act (3 & 4 Ed. VI., c. 10) is passed, ordering all pictures of saints and images in churches to be destroyed.

1550. Somerset is released from the Tower (6 Feb.), readmitted to the Council (10 Ap.), and his property is restored to him (May).

Peace is made with France and Scotland (24 Mar.), Boulogne being given up on payment of 400,000 crowns.

Joan Bocher, a woman of Kent, is burnt alive for heresy (2 May).

In order to raise money, the new government under Warwick put about £150,000 of debased currency into circulation; prices rise enormously in consequence, and great distress and discontent are occasioned.

1551. Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, being a Catholic, is deprived of his see (23 Mar.).

George Van Parre, an Anabaptist, is burned alive (24 Ap.).

The inconvenience and disorder occasioned by the debased currency are so great, that the Council is compelled to reform the coinage, and to return to a normal standard (1 Aug.).

The Earl of Warwick is made Duke of Northumberland (11 Oct.). At his instance Somerset, ex-Protector, is arrested, sent to the Tower (16 Oct.), tried for treason and felony (1 Dec.), acquitted of treason but found guilty of felony, and sentenced to be hanged.

An order in council is issued to Cranmer, directing him to frame Articles of Religion.

The sweating-sickness visits England for the fifth and last time.

1552. Somerset is beheaded (22 Jan.). Four of his alleged accomplices are also executed (26 Feb.). The principal charge was a design to murder Northumberland.

The Prayer-Book is revised by a committee under Cranmer, and published as "the Second Prayer-Book of Edward VI." The revisions show a greater tendency towards the doctrines of the continental reformers. Its use is enforced by a new Act of Uniformity (5 & 6 Ed. VI., c. 1).

An Act (c. 12) is passed abolishing celibacy and authorizing the clergy to marry.

Somerset had been very popular, and his death induces parliament to amend the law of treason, by enacting (c. 16) that two witnesses, who shall confront the accused, shall be neces-

sary to convict. This law is still in force. For this display of independence parliament is dissolved, and a new and carefully chosen one is substituted.

1553. The Articles of Religion prepared by Cranmer and Bishop Ridley, after having been submitted to the Council, to five of the royal chaplains, and to John Knox,* and having undergone many revisions, are finally issued (May), as "the Articles of Edward VI.," or "the Forty-two Articles," with a royal mandate ordering the bishops to call on all clergy, schoolmasters, and churchwardens to subscribe them. These Articles were mainly based on the Lutheran Confessions, particularly the Augsburg.

Edward VI. grants to the citizens of London his palace of Bridewell for a workhouse (10 Ap.); also St. Thomas's Hospital, in Southwark.

Northumberland, with an eye to obtaining the throne for his son Guilford Dudley, causes him to marry Lady Jane Grey (25 May). She is the granddaughter of Henry VIII.'s younger sister Mary, upon whose heirs, in the event of his own failing, Henry has settled the throne by his will, passing over his elder sister Margaret, who had married James IV. of Scotland.

It being evident that the young king cannot live long, Northumberland persuades him to execute letters-patent excluding his half-sisters, Mary and Elizabeth, as illegitimate, and bequeathing the crown to Lady Jane Grey, the next heir under Henry VIII.'s will. At Northumberland's instigation, this document is subscribed by the Privy Council (21 June), some of them doing so very reluctantly.

Edward VI. dies at Greenwich (6 July), aged 15. Northumberland proclaims Lady Jane Grey queen (10 July), but the people refuse to recognize the usurpation, and declare in favor of Mary, who soon finds herself at the head of a large force. Northumberland's troops desert or refuse to fight, and at Cambridge he proclaims Mary queen (20 July), but is arrested (21 July) by the Earl of Arundel, tried, condemned, and beheaded on Tower-Hill (22 Aug.), along with Sir Henry Gate and Sir Thomas Palmer, two of his accomplices. His sons, the Earl of Warwick and Sir Andrew Dudley, along with the Earl of Northampton, are also condemned, but were afterwards pardoned. Nicolas Ridley, Bishop of London, having publicly declared for Lady Jane Grey (16 July), is committed to

*Now a minister at Newcastle, and one of Edward VI.'s chaplains.

the Tower (Aug.). Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester (a Catholic), is made chancellor (23 Aug.), and until his death in 1555 acts as her chief minister in civil matters. John Hooper, Bishop of Worcester *in commendam* (a Reformer), is imprisoned in the Fleet, London (Sep.). Queen Mary releases Edward Courtenay from the Tower and makes him Earl of Devon (3 Sep.).

Queen Mary restores Romanism, including the Mass, and refuses to recognize the marriage of the clergy under the Act of Edward VI. (5 & 6 Ed. VI., c. 12), on the ground that all Acts passed during his minority are void. Many clergy are driven from the country; and ten bishops are deposed for being married, and their places are filled by Catholics.

Hooper, Bishop of Gloucester, is sent to the Fleet (1 Sep.); Latimer and Cranmer are sent to the Tower (13, 15 Sep.).

Mary is crowned at Westminster Abbey (1 Oct.), by Bishop Gardiner.

Robert Holgate, Archbishop of York, is sent to the Tower (4 Oct.).

Parliament passes an Act declaring Mary legitimate.

Lady Jane Grey and her husband Lord Guilford Dudley are arraigned for treason (13 Nov.); they plead guilty, are condemned to death and sent to the Tower; her father, the Duke of Suffolk, is also condemned, but pardoned on payment of a fine.

1554. Queen Mary creates great discontent among the Protestant English by refusing to recognize her half-sister Elizabeth (a Protestant) as her heir, and by entering into a contract (Jan.) to marry Philip, eldest son of the Emperor Charles V., the leader of the Catholic powers of Europe. Insurrections break out (Jan.) in favor of Elizabeth, in Kent under Sir Thomas Wyatt, and in the Midlands under the Duke of Suffolk (Lady Jane Grey's father). Through the personal courage of the queen, Wyatt's insurrection is suppressed, and he is taken prisoner (7 Feb.). This insurrection brings about the death of Lord Guilford Dudley and Lady Jane Grey, who are beheaded on Tower-Hill (12 Feb.). The Duke of Suffolk is defeated near Coventry by the Earl of Huntingdon (Feb.), betrayed to his pursuers by a retainer named Underwood, condemned, and beheaded (23 Feb.). The Princess Elizabeth is committed to the Tower (18 Mar.); and Wyatt is convicted (15 Mar.) and executed (11 Ap.); also over 100 of his followers.

Archbishop Cranmer, Hugh Latimer (Bishop of Worcester), and Nicolas Ridley (Bishop of London) are removed from the

Tower to Oxford (13 Mar.), where, after a public disputation on the Mass (16-18 Ap.), they are pronounced "obstinate heretics" (28 Ap.).

Parliament passes an Act (Ap.) authorizing Mary's marriage with Philip of Spain. Philip comes to England, and the marriage takes place (25 July), Mary being 38 and Philip 27.

Arran, regent of Scotland, resigns (12 Ap.), and the queen-mother, Mary of Guise, is made regent; she opposes Protestantism.

With a view to the restoration of England to communion with Rome, Mary calls a carefully elected parliament (12 Nov.), which passes a Bill reversing the attainder of Reginald Pole,* cardinal and legate; and Pole (after an absence of 23 years) returns to England (14 Nov.), as papal ambassador. Parliament meets, and with only one dissenting voice, votes for reconciliation with Rome; the members of both Houses assemble (St. Andrew's day, 30 Nov.), and on their knees receive papal absolution from Cardinal Pole, as legate; and the reconciliation is complete.

Parliament re-enacts (1 & 2 Ph. and Mary, c. 6) the statutes of Henry IV. and Henry V. for the burning of heretics; and also enacts (c. 8) that the statutes of Mortmain shall be suspended for 20 years, and repeals all statutes (19 in all) passed in Henry VIII.'s reign against the see of Rome. Bishop Gardiner and Cardinal Pole at once put the Acts in force.

1555. John Rogers, prebendary of St. Paul's, is burnt alive at Smithfield (4 Feb.); Rowland Taylor, vicar of Hadleigh in Suffolk, is burnt alive at Hadleigh (8 Feb.); Bishop Hooper is burnt alive at Gloucester (9 Feb.); and Lawrence Sandars is burnt alive (Feb.). Early in March 8 more persons are burnt alive; and 16 in all before the end of April. Mary issues a letter (May), exciting the bishops to greater energy, and 50 more persons are burnt alive for heresy.

Philip, Mary's consort, goes to Flanders (Aug.); and his father, the Emperor Charles V., abdicates the throne of the Netherlands in his favor (25 Oct.), and he becomes king as Philip II.

Bishops Latimer and Ridley are burnt alive for heresy, chained back to back to the same stake, at St. Giles's, Oxford (16 Oct.). "Play the man, Master Ridley," said Latimer, as the flames began to ascend; "we shall this day light such a candle in England as by the grace of God shall never be put out."

* Passed in 1539, when his brother Henry Pole, Lord Montague, was beheaded.

Many other persons suffer martyrdom, some being starved to death in prison. Cranmer, being archbishop, the charge of heresy against him is tried at Rome, and he is condemned (4 Dec.).

Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester and Lord Chancellor, dies at Whitehall (12 Nov.), aged 72.

1556. Charles V. resigns the crown of Spain to his son Philip II. (5 Feb.).

Cranmer is degraded from his office of archbishop by Thirlby and Bonner (14 Feb.), and is burnt alive (21 Mar.). Cardinal Pole, papal legate, is made Archbishop of Canterbury.

The persecutions for heresy lead to great discontent among the Protestants, and a conspiracy is formed, of which Sir Henry Dudley is leader, to depose Mary and place Elizabeth on the throne. The plot is discovered, and a large number of persons are arrested, condemned, tortured, and executed (Mar.-Ap.). Dudley, however, escapes abroad. The religious persecution now goes on more fiercely than ever, and large numbers of Protestants are burnt alive as heretics, or hanged as criminals.

1557. Many English have taken refuge in France, where, with the secret support of the king, Henry II., they plot against Mary. One of these, Sir Thomas Stafford (a nephew of Cardinal Pole), lands in Yorkshire (25 Ap.) with 31 followers, with the object "of delivering his country from foreign tyranny," and takes Scarborough Castle. It is retaken by the Earl of Westmoreland, and Stafford and all his followers except one are executed (May). In consequence of the French king's support of this movement, Queen Mary, instigated by her husband Philip II. of Spain (who is then at war with France), and by Pope Paul IV., declares war against France (7 June). She sends troops to the Netherlands, who assist Philip's army in the pursuit after their victory over the French at St. Quentin (10 Aug.).

The Protestant and anti-French party in Scotland organize, and their leaders, "the Lords of the Congregation," issue the First Covenant (Dec.).

1558. Calais, the last stronghold of England in France, is captured by the Duke of Guise (7 Jan.). The combined Spanish and English fleets, under Count Egmont and Lord Edward Clinton, defeat the French off Gravelines, near Calais (13 July).

Mary Queen of Scots, who has been in France since 1548, and is now 15, is married to the Dauphin Francis, son of

Henry II. of France (24 Ap.), and her husband receives from the Scotch Commissioners the title of King of Scots.

Queen Mary of England on her deathbed nominates (6 Nov.) her half-sister Elizabeth as her successor ; she dies (17 Nov.), aged 42. Elizabeth (now 25) is unanimously proclaimed queen (17 Nov.) by parliament, which, though dissolved by the queen's death, is sitting at the time.

Mary Queen of Scots, alleging that Elizabeth is illegitimate, claims the throne of England, as grand-daughter of Henry VIII.'s eldest sister Margaret, wife of James IV. of Scotland.

Elizabeth appoints Sir William Cecil (created Lord Burghley in 1571) Secretary of State and her chief adviser, a position which he holds throughout the 40 years of the rest of his life. He was "the oracle she consulted on every emergency, and whose answers she generally obeyed."

Cardinal Pole, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (18 Nov.), aged 58.

At the instance of the government of the Scottish regent (Mary of Guise), Walter Mill, an old man of 80, is burnt alive for heresy (being a Protestant), an act which rouses the Protestants to fury. The regent is inclined to give way, but under instructions from the Guises in France, determines to oppose the Reformation with all her power.

John Knox, who has been living in Geneva since 1554, publishes there his "First Blast of the Trumpet against the Monstrous Regiment [Government] of Women," a work which gives great offence to Elizabeth.

1559. Many of the bishops fear to crown Elizabeth, but the ceremony is at last performed by Oglethorpe, Bishop of Carlisle (15 Jan.).

Parliament meets (25 Jan.) and passes "the Act of Supremacy" (1 Eliz., c. 1), declaring the queen "Supreme Head of the Church ;" doing away with all jurisdiction of the Papal See, and making it punishable to uphold any foreign authority in the country ; giving all spiritual jurisdiction to the Crown ; authorizing the establishment of the Court of High Commission ; * and repealing the persecuting Act of the late reign (1 & 2 Ph. & Mary, c. 6). It also passes "the Act of Uniformity" (1 Eliz., c. 2), ordering the Prayer-Book (which, at Cecil's instance, has been secretly revised by a committee of divines preparatory to introducing it) to be used in every church ; and ordering all persons to attend church under a shilling fine.

* The Court was not actually established till 1583. Its powers were in the meantime exercised by temporary commissions.

Elizabeth makes peace at Cateau-Cambrésis with Henry II. of France (2 Ap.); Calais to be restored to England in 8 years or France to pay 500,000 crowns. Philip II. of Spain and Henry II. make a separate peace (3 Ap.), one of its avowed objects being the suppression of Protestantism, which is becoming dangerous to both. Philip marries the French princess Elizabeth. Henry II. is accidentally killed (10 July) by Montgomery, a Scotchman, at a tournament held in honor of the marriage. His son, Francis II., succeeds; and Mary Queen of Scots thus becomes Queen of France also. The French and Spanish courts also declare her Queen of England.*

Eleven Articles of Religion to be held by all the clergy are issued by authority, preparatory to the promulgation of a revision of the 42 Articles of Edward VI.

In Scotland the regent Mary publishes an edict against the Protestants; John Knox returns to Scotland (2 May), and preaches a stirring sermon at Perth (June), against the "idolatry of the Mass" and of "image-worship," which leads to a riot. The Lords of the Congregation take up arms against the regent, capture St. Andrews, clear the French out of Fife, and occupy Edinburgh (29 June), where Knox is made a minister. In the expectation that France will support the regent, the Lords of the Congregation seek an alliance with Elizabeth. The regent Mary holds and fortifies Leith (close to Edinburgh).

Elizabeth appoints Matthew Parker Archbishop of Canterbury; he is consecrated (17 Dec.).

The Index Expurgatorius, a catalogue of books prohibited by the Church of Rome, is made by the Inquisition, and approved by the Council of Trent. Many works of the great writers of England, France, Germany, Spain, and other countries have, between 1559 and the present day, been "placed on the Index."

1560. Elizabeth makes with the Lords of the Congregation the treaty of Berwick (27 Feb.), agreeing to send an army to Scotland to assist them to expel the French. This she does, and the combined troops lay siege to Leith. The regent, Mary of Guise, dies (10 June). Through the intervention of Cecil, peace is made with France by the treaty of Edinburgh

* She was the nearest heir after Elizabeth (supposing the latter legitimate), being the only grandchild of Margaret, Henry VII.'s elder daughter, who had married James IV. of Scotland. If Elizabeth were deemed illegitimate, Mary would, of course, be rightfully entitled to supersede her.

(6 July); the French to retire from Scotland, to renounce their claim on behalf of Mary Queen of Scots to the English throne, and to pay a fine for having made it; the fortifications of Dunbar and Leith to be razed; and the government of Scotland to be carried on by a council or regency of 12 nobles. Mary Queen of Scots refuses to ratify this treaty. The Estates of Scotland, however, meet (25 Aug.), and adopt the Confession of Faith (according to the formula of the Geneva Church), repeal all Acts authorizing any other form of worship, abjure the authority of the pope, and enact that the celebration of the Mass shall, on the third offence, be punishable by death. Protestantism thus becomes the established religion in Scotland.

The Anabaptists are ordered to leave England (22 Sep.). They rejected the Trinity and baptism, and denied the lawfulness of oaths, of war, and of magistrates.

Francis II. of France dies (5 Dec.); his brother Charles IX. (a boy of 10) succeeds him; his mother, Catherine de Medici, acts as regent.

1561. Lord James Stuart (afterwards Earl of Murray), an illegitimate brother of Queen Mary, puts himself at the head of the Scotch national party, and invites her (now a widow) to return to Scotland, stipulating that no foreign troops shall be introduced, and that she shall not disturb the established religion. She sails from France, and lands at Leith (19 Aug.); but still refuses to recognize the Treaty of Edinburgh, or to give up her claim to the English throne.

1562. The followers of the Duke of Guise (Catholics) kill a party of Protestants at worship (1 Mar.), "the Massacre of Vassy." Similar massacres by the Catholics are perpetrated in other places; the Reformers, or Huguenots as they are called, resort to arms; and the religious war which desolates France for nearly 40 years begins. Cecil writes that, should the Protestants be overthrown, "Philip [King of Spain and the Netherlands] and the Guises would become the dictators of Europe, Spain would have Ireland, Mary Queen of Scots would marry Don Carlos [Philip's son and heir], the Council of Trent would pass a general sentence against all Protestants, and the English Catholics, directed and supported from abroad, would rise in universal rebellion."*

* This pregnant utterance of the great English statesman is a key to the foreign policy of England during Elizabeth's reign, and also to much of her Irish and domestic policy. The triumph of Catholicism on the Continent meant the conquest and destruction of England as the great Protestant power. With England and Elizabeth, conse-

At the solicitation of Condé, the leader of the French Protestants, Elizabeth sends to France an army, which occupies Havre (Sep.).

Sir John Hawkins begins the English slave-trade (Oct.).

1563. The 42 Articles of Edward VI., having been revised and altered by Archbishop Parker, further altered and reduced to 39 by Convocation, and still further altered and curtailed by one (the present 29th) by Elizabeth, are promulgated in Latin, as the "38 Articles of the Church of England" (29 Jan.). An English translation is soon issued.

Condé makes peace at Amboise (19 Mar.) with the French Catholics, who besiege Havre (22 May-28 July); the plague breaks out among the English troops there, under Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick, and they are forced to surrender (28 July). The troops carry the plague back to England, where it commits great ravages, the deaths in London rising to 2000 a week.

An Act (5 Eliz., c. 16) is passed declaring persons practising "conjurations, enchantments, and witchcrafts" to be felons; and another (c. 32) fixing the expenses of the royal household at £40,027 per annum.

quently, that Catholicism should not triumph on the Continent was a matter of life and death. The great struggle between Romanism and the Reformation continued in western Europe for nearly 90 years, until the Treaty of Westphalia (1649) closed the Thirty Years' War of Germany, the most horrible war that ever desolated any portion of the earth's surface. In this awful struggle of nearly a century, England and Scotland were found on the side of Protestantism and liberty. They were fighting not merely for self-preservation, but for human freedom. Ireland, on the contrary, was found on the side of Catholicism and despotism; of physical, mental, moral, and religious slavery; of the Inquisition, the rack, the torture-chamber, and the stake. Could Ireland have worked her will, could the Catholic traitors in England itself have worked their will; the liberties of England, and with them the liberties of Europe, would have been laid at the pope's feet; and England, with Scotland and Ireland, would have become an appanage of Spain, then the leading power in Europe. What Romish despotism meant had been branded in letters of blood and fire into the memories of English Protestants during the brief but terrible reign of "Bloody Mary."

To these and similar considerations full weight must be given in order to arrive at a just estimate of the policy of Elizabeth and Cecil, of the English Protestant and Puritan parties, and of Oliver Cromwell. Men fighting for life and liberty cannot pick and choose their weapons, but have to use the rough-and-ready means which lie nearest to their hands. Least of all should the Protestants of to-day, who are enjoying in peace and security the rich harvest which their English forefathers reaped in blood and terror, scrutinize too nicely the methods by which that harvest was gathered in.

1563-8. A company of 8 prelates and other learned men, under the authority of Archbishop Parker, produce "the Bishops' Bible," a revision of Cranmer's. It is the foundation of the present Authorized Version, and was designed to counteract the Calvinistic tendency of the Geneva Bible published in 1560.

1564. Peace is made with France (1 Ap.).

William Shakspeare, the dramatist, is born at Stratford-on-Avon in Warwickshire (about 23 Ap.).

1565. Mary Queen of Scots, with an eye to the throne of England, determines to join the European Catholic league, and marries her cousin Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley (29 July), the head of the English Catholic party, a great-grandson of Henry VII., and next heir to the English throne after herself. The marriage gives great offence to Lord Murray (Mary's chief adviser) and the Scotch Protestants, and civil war breaks out; the Protestant lords are driven from Scotland and take refuge in England (Aug.).

Shan O'Neil defeats the Scots in Antrim.

Sir Henry Sidney is made Lord-Deputy of Ireland (13 Oct.). O'Neil refuses to restore O'Donnell's lands, raises an insurrection in Ulster, and ravages the Pale.

There is famine in the British Isles.

1566. David Rizzio, an Italian, private secretary of Mary Queen of Scots, who conducts her correspondence with the Catholic powers of Europe, is dragged from her room in Holyrood Palace, and murdered (9 Mar.), at the instigation of her husband, Darnley. Mary gives birth to a son (19 June), afterwards James I. of England.

Shan O'Neil seeks aid from France, but is defeated by Col. Randolph (12 Nov.).

The Puritans are becoming numerous, and they publish books against vestments and ceremonies; the books are prohibited under heavy penalties. On the publication of Archbishop Parker's "Advertisements," 37 out of 140 clergymen in London are driven from their cures for refusing to wear the surplice; this was the first definite secession from the Church of England.

1567. A house occupied by Darnley at Kirk-of-Field, close to Edinburgh, is blown up with gunpowder at two o'clock in the morning (10 Feb.); after daybreak his dead body and that of his page are found strangled in a neighboring orchard. There is little doubt that he was murdered, with Queen Mary's connivance, by James Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell, with whom she was in love. Bothwell is tried for the murder (12 Ap.), but is acquitted because of the non-appear-

ance of his accuser. He obtains a divorce from his wife, Lady Jane Gordon, and marries Queen Mary (15 May). The Scotch lords again rise, and Mary, finding resistance hopeless, surrenders (15 June) at Carberry Hill, near Edinburgh, to Sir William Kirkcaldy of Grange. Bothwell flees to Borthwick Castle, thence to Dunbar, and to the Orkneys.* Mary is taken to Lochleven Castle, forced to sign a deed of abdication (24 July) in favor of her infant son, who is proclaimed king as James VI., Lord Murray (Mary's illegitimate half-brother) being summoned from France to act as regent. Queen Elizabeth intercedes for her with her opponents in vain. The Scotch parliament, on the evidence of the Casket Letters,† adjudges Mary guilty (Dec.) of being an accomplice in the murder of her husband Darnley.

O'Neil is defeated by the O'Donnells near Lifford (May); he takes refuge with the Scots in Antrim, but is murdered (2 June) at the instigation of Oge MacCormel in revenge for the defeat and death of his brother.

A company of over 100 Puritans are seized (19 June) while at worship in Plumber's Hall, London, and 15 are imprisoned. This is the first instance of the punishment of Protestant dissenters in England.

Rugby Grammar School is founded by Lawrence Sheriff.

1568. Mary Queen of Scots escapes from Lochleven Castle (2 May); collects 6000 troops, revokes her abdication,

* Being still pursued, he escapes to sea, but is captured as a pirate by a Danish war-vessel and taken to Denmark, where he is kept in prison, in Draxholms Castle in Zealand, becomes insane, and dies (14 Ap., 1578).

† The history of these famous letters is as follows: When Bothwell fled from Carberry Hill (15 June) he sent a messenger to get a casket which he had left in Edinburgh Castle; the messenger was intercepted on his return, and the casket fell into the hands of the Earl of Morton (20 June). It contained, or was alleged to contain, a correspondence between Bothwell and Mary, clearly indicating the complicity of both in Darnley's murder. The letters, after passing from one regent to another, came into the custody of the Earl of Gowrie (Lord Ruthven), and after his execution in 1584 they disappeared and have never since been seen. They were then probably destroyed by James VI. (Mary's son). Mary alleged that the letters were forgeries, an assertion which may be taken for what it is worth, which isn't much. Their authenticity is still a moot question. Burton, Froude, Gaedeke, Laing, Mignet, Pauli, and Ranke pronounce them genuine; while Caird, Chantelauze, Gauthier, Hosack, Philippson, and Schiern pronounce them forgeries. In the absence of the documents themselves the question seems hardly susceptible of solution. Their disappearance as soon as they got into hands friendly to Mary is, however, a strong point in favor of their authenticity.

and seeks aid from France and England ; but is defeated by the Regent Murray at Langside, near Glasgow (13 May), and flees to England, landing at Workington in Cumberland (16 May), whence she is escorted to Bolton Castle. A commission to try the differences between her and her subjects opens its sittings at York (Sep.), but removes to Westminster. The Casket Letters are produced, and after being compared with undoubted letters of Mary's, are pronounced genuine (Oct.), and she is formally charged with the murder of her husband Darnley (26 Nov.).

About this date a congregation of Separatists, who hold that congregations should be voluntary and self-governing, is formed, under Richard Fitz as pastor.

1569. The commission on Queen Mary's case gives judgment (10 Jan.) to the effect that Murray has not been proven guilty of disloyalty, and that nothing has been produced or shown against Mary. Mary is removed to Tutbury Castle in Staffordshire (3 Feb.).

A murderous insurrection breaks out (July), in Munster, Ireland, under the Earl of Clancarty and James Fitz-Maurice (brother of the Earl of Desmond), who apply to Philip II. of Spain for help, and offer to hand over Ireland to him. After a horrible and sanguinary war, in which both sides spare neither age nor sex, the insurrection is temporarily suppressed by Sir Henry Sidney.

The division of Ireland into shires is completed by the Irish Act 11 Eliz., 3d sess. c. 9.

Pope Pius V. sends agents to England, who denounce Elizabeth as a heretic and "fallen from her usurped authority." Thereupon the Catholics of the north of England enter into a plot for the liberation of Mary Queen of Scots from Tutbury, and her marriage with the Duke of Norfolk ; for the overthrow of Cecil ; and for the restoration of Catholicism. Norfolk is arrested on suspicion and sent to the Tower (11 Oct.). The rebels then openly rise (Nov.) and advance towards Tutbury, but before they reach that place Queen Mary is removed to Coventry. The royal troops march north to meet the rebels ; Lords Northumberland and Westmoreland, the leaders of the insurgents, flee to Scotland and the Netherlands ; and about 600 or 700 of their followers are executed (Dec.).

1570. The Earl of Murray, regent of Scotland, is murdered at Linlithgow by James Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh (23 Jan.). Matthew Stuart, Earl of Lennox (Darnley's father) is elected regent (12 July) ; but Mary's party refuse to recognize him.

Pope Pius V. excommunicates and deposes Elizabeth (25 Ap.) ; the bull is fastened to the Bishop of London's door by John Felton and Cornelius Irishman, a priest (24 May); Felton is condemned and executed (8 Aug.).*

On giving a written promise not to pursue his scheme of marrying Queen Mary, the Duke of Norfolk is released from the Tower (4 Aug.) ; and Mary is imprisoned in Sheffield Castle, where she remains till 1585.

James Fitz-Maurice goes from Munster to Spain to seek aid from Philip II. for the insurrection in Ireland.

Thomas Cartwright, the leader of the Puritan party, is expelled from Cambridge University (Dec.).

1571. The 38 Articles of 1562 are revised by John Jewel, Bishop of London ; the present 29th is restored ; and " the 39 Articles of the Church of England," in their present form, are adopted by convocation (Mar.).

Parliament meets (2 Ap.), for the first time in four years, and passes an Act (13 Eliz., c. 1) making it treason to call the queen heretic, schismatic, or usurper ; also an Act (c. 2) making it high treason to introduce papal bulls ; also the Act of Uniformity (c. 12), providing that no one shall be admitted to a benefice till he subscribes the 39 Articles in presence of the Ordinary, and publicly reads them in the parish church with a declaration of his unfeigned assent. Strickland, the most prominent member of the Puritan party, gives offence to the queen by his outspokenness, is summoned before her, reprimanded, and excluded from the House ; but the Commons assert their privilege of free speech, and he is reinstated.

James Fitz-Maurice returns from Spain to Ireland, insurrection again breaks out in Munster, and an army is sent from England under Sir John Perrot (Ap.), which ravages Munster ; Fitz-Maurice submits, but again goes to Spain to induce Philip II. and France to aid the Irish Catholics.

A conspiracy, known as the Ridolfi Plot,† is entered into between Philip II. of Spain, Pope Pius V., Mary Queen of Scots, and the Catholic party in England for the murder of Queen Elizabeth, the invasion of England by Philip, the making of Mary queen, and her marriage with Norfolk. The

* At this time a bull excommunicating and deposing a sovereign absolved subjects from their allegiance, and made it lawful and right, according to the doctrines of the Catholic Church, for any subject to murder the sovereign so excommunicated.

† So called from Robert Ridolfi, a Florentine banker living in London, who was employed by Pope Pius V. to act as agent between the conspirators in England and their allies on the continent.

plot is gradually discovered (May-Sep.), and the leaders, including Norfolk and Leslie (Bishop of Ross), Mary's agent, are arrested. Norfolk and Leslie are committed to the Tower (7 Sep.).

The Earl of Lennox, Regent of Scotland, is shot in a fray at Stirling, and dies (4 Sep.); John Erskine, Earl of Mar, is elected regent (5 Sep.).

Harrow School is founded by John Lyon.

1572. Norfolk is tried for high treason, condemned (16 Jan.), and beheaded (2 June).

The massacre of Protestants by Catholics, known as the "Massacre of St. Bartholomew," is perpetrated in Paris (24-27 Aug.), and is followed by similar massacres in Rouen, Orleans, Bordeaux, Toulon, and other parts of France, about 70,000 Protestants of all ages and both sexes being cruelly murdered.* The news of the massacre is received with joy and triumph by the Catholics throughout Europe; Pope Gregory XIII. formally approves of it (Sep.); orders a *Te Deum laudamus* ("We praise thee, O God") to be performed; and has a medal struck in its honor. By the Protestants in England the news is received with horror, and the people demand the execution of Mary Queen of Scots, as having been a party to the Ridolfi plot. The Earl of Mar, regent of Scotland, gives his formal sanction to her execution (Oct.). Queen Elizabeth, however, refuses her consent to it.

The Earl of Mar, regent of Scotland, dies (28 Oct.); James Douglas, Earl of Morton, is elected regent (24 Nov.).

The Puritans form their first presbytery at Wandsworth. John Field and Thomas Wilcox, two Puritan divines, publish their "Admonition to Parliament," declaring against dignities in Church and the Universities. They are sent to prison for a year. Thomas Cartwright publishes another "Admonition to Parliament" (Nov.), for relief against the subscription required by the ecclesiastical commissioners under the Act of 1559. Archbishop Whitgift answers him, and a six years' controversy ensues, which leads to Hooker writing his "Ecclesiastical Polity."

John Knox, the Scotch reformer, dies (24 Nov.), aged 67.

1573. Fitz-Maurice returns to Ireland, and Perrot, failing to receive adequate support from Elizabeth, offers him pardon on conditions which he accepts. The attempt to introduce English law has failed, and the Irish chiefs resume their sway.

* The estimates vary from 30,000 to 100,000; the most trustworthy seems to be that of Sully, 70,000, as above. In Paris alone over 10,000 were murdered, including 500 persons of rank.

Queen Mary's party in Scotland gains the upper hand, and Kirkcaldy of Grange, governor of Edinburgh Castle, goes over to her side and holds the castle against the regent Morton. Elizabeth sends an army under Sir William Drury to assist the Scotch Protestant party, who are upholding the young king, James VI. The army captures Edinburgh Castle (28 May); Morton causes Kirkcaldy to be hung as a traitor in Edinburgh market-place (3 Aug.); and the queen's party is crushed.

Walter Devereux, Earl of Essex, begins an attempt to establish an English colony in Antrim, Ireland (Sep.); the attempt fails.

1574. The Earl of Essex is made Governor of Ulster (May), and establishes English authority over the O'Neils.

1575. Sir Henry Sidney is again made Lord Deputy in Ireland, and is well received there.

A congregation of 27 Dutch Anabaptists is seized in London (Easter Sunday, 3 Ap.), 5 recant, 11 are condemned to be burnt (21 May), but are banished instead; two are burnt at Smithfield (22 July).

Mathew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies (17 May), aged 71.

The population of England and Wales is about 5,000,000.

1576. Sidney makes Sir William Drury president in Munster, and Malby president in Connaught; Drury governs cruelly, hanging about 100 men on his first circuit.

Edmund Grindal, Archbishop of York, is made Archbishop of Canterbury (15 Feb.).

1577. An insurrection breaks out in Connaught under Shan Burke and Ulick Burke, sons of the Earl of Clanrickard (Jan.); it is temporarily suppressed by Malby with ruthless severity.

Eight persons are tried at Aylesbury (18 Ap.) as "Egyptians" (gypsies), and hanged.

Elizabeth forbids (7 May) the meetings of Puritans, called "Propheisyngs," and they are discontinued.

Pope Gregory XIII. raises a force to go to Ireland under Fitz-Maurice and Sir Thomas Stukeley, to assist the malcontents there; but at the instance of the King of Portugal, Stukeley takes the troops over to Africa to make conquests.

Elizabeth, believing war with Spain inevitable, makes an alliance with the Netherlands; and also (13 Dec.) sends Francis Drake on a piratical expedition to South America.

A playhouse, called "The Theatre," is built by James Bur-

bage outside the walls of London, in Shoreditch.* The prices of admission were : lords' rooms, 1s. ; gallery, 2d.

1578. Drake plunders all the Spanish towns on the coasts of Chili and Peru, capturing an immense booty ; he then crosses the Pacific Ocean.

The plague rages in London.

1579. The success of Drake's expedition becoming known in Spain, the Catholics there send an expedition of 700 men under Fitz-Maurice and Dr. Nicholas Sanders (as papal legate) which lands at Dingle (or Smerwick) in Kerry (17 July), and erects a fort there ; the Earl of Desmond (Fitz-Maurice's brother) rouses Kerry and Limerick to arms ; the insurgents burn Youghal and march in triumph to Cork. Fitz-Maurice is slain in battle in Tipperary.

Esmé Stuart, Count d'Aubigné,† is sent from France (Sep.) to Scotland as the agent of the Guises, the European Catholic party, and the Jesuits,‡ for the purpose of restoring the old French and Catholic party in Scotland, and organizing an invasion of England with the help of France and Spain. He soon becomes a favorite with James VI. (now a boy of 13).

Philip Sydney§ (a young man of 25) writes his famous letter to Elizabeth, to dissuade her from her contemplated marriage with the Duke of Anjou.

Matthew Hamond is burnt at Norwich as a heretic, for denying the Trinity and the gospel (20 May).

1580. The English, with the aid of Ormond, Desmond's old enemy, subdue the insurgents in Munster (Jan.-June) ; the fort at Smerwick still holds out, and Desmond takes refuge there. Insurrection breaks out in the English Pale in Ireland ; Lord Arthur Grey de Wilton is sent over as Lord Deputy (Aug.), but is defeated with great slaughter at Glen Malure, in the Wicklow Mountains, by the Wicklow septs (Sep.). With the connivance of Philip II. of Spain, 800 Spanish and Italian soldiers are sent from Spain to Ireland (Sep.) ; they go to Smerwick and enlarge the fort there, and the insurrection in Munster is renewed. The Smerwick garrison is

* Its site is close to the present Standard Theatre.

† Son of John d'Aubigné, captain of the Scots Guard in France, and nephew of Matthew Stuart, Earl of Lennox, regent of Scotland in 1570-1. He had been brought up in France by his patrons the Guises, and was now heir to the earldom of Lennox.

‡ The Society of Jesus was founded in Paris by Ignatius Loyola, 15 Aug., 1534, and confirmed by a bull of Pope Paul III., 27 Sep., 1540. Loyola died 31 July, 1556, aged 65. He was canonized in 1622 by Gregory XV. as St. Ignatius, being the third saint of that name.

§ Created a knight, 13 Jan., 1583.

cut off from the sea by the English fleet under Admiral Winter, and Grey besieges Smerwick on the land side ; the garrison (reduced to 600) being refused all terms, surrender at discretion (9 Nov.), and are all put to death (Nov.), except Desmond, who manages to escape. This is a death-blow to the insurrection, which, however, lingers on fitfully for two or three years longer.

As part of the general plot to dethrone Elizabeth and restore Catholicism in England, a Jesuit mission under Edmund Campian and Robert Parsons is sent from Rome to England (June). They reach England (July) and immediately set to work. They are authorized by the Catholic Church to proclaim, with regard to the bull of excommunication and deposition issued against Elizabeth in 1570, that Catholics may *profess* loyalty to Elizabeth till the time comes for enforcing the bull ; in other words, that, while being traitors at heart, they may rightfully and religiously pretend to be loyal subjects. To protect herself against this infamous doctrine, Elizabeth publishes an address appealing to the loyalty of her people against her enemies ; and a proclamation is issued declaring that to harbor Jesuit priests is to support rebels. Several priests are arrested (Dec.), and some are tortured to extort confession ; but the full extent of the plot is not revealed.

Francis Drake returns to England (3 Nov.), having in three years circumnavigated the globe ; he is knighted.

About this date Robert Browne, a clergyman of the Church of England, becomes prominent by opposing episcopacy, refusing to hold communion with the Church of England as impure, and advocating Separatist doctrines. His followers are called Brownists, and at a later date Independents or Congregationalists ; they soon become numerous, especially in the eastern counties.

1581. To combat the machinations of the Jesuits and other Catholics, parliament passes (Jan.) an Act (23 Eliz., c. 1) forbidding private Masses ; inflicting a fine of £20 a month for refusing to attend the Established Church ; making it high treason to claim the power of absolving subjects from their allegiance, or to receive any person into the Church of Rome ; and inflicting severe penalties for harboring Jesuits.

Parsons escapes to the Continent, but Campian is arrested at Lyfford in Berkshire (17 July), sent to the Tower (22 July), and tortured to extort a confession of the names of those who have concealed him. He is executed at Tyburn (1 Dec.), on a charge of conspiring to compass the queen's death.

Twelve other priests and laymen are also convicted, of whom 9 are executed.

Esmé Stuart, having obtained the earldom of Lennox, and got into favor with the young king James VI. (now 15), procures the execution of the regent Morton (1 June) on a charge of complicity in the murder of Darnley. Lennox becomes the king's favorite, and is made Duke of Lennox (5 Aug.); and the French and Catholic party again become paramount in Scotland. Philip II. of Spain, however, being engaged in an attempt to conquer Portugal, is unable to assist in the proposed invasion of England, and that part of the plot falls through. The Scotch Catholics thereupon endeavor to effect the restoration of Mary as queen.

The United Provinces (now Holland) throw off the yoke of Philip II. of Spain, and proclaim their independence (26 July).

1582. Esmé Stuart, Duke of Lennox, takes steps towards the restoration of Catholicism in Scotland. This action leads to a riot in Edinburgh (July), and to the "Ruthven Raid." Lord Gowrie and others seize the young king, James VI. (now 16), at Castle Ruthven (12 Aug.); also his other obnoxious favorite James Stuart, Earl of Arran, who confesses the plans of the Jesuits. These are thwarted, and Lennox is obliged to return to France (Dec.). The Scotch Parliament passes an Act of Indemnity voting the thanks of the nation to those who took part in the Raid.

Pope Gregory XIII. publishes a bull (24 Feb.) reforming the calendar, by making this year consist of only 355 days, omitting ten days in October by making 5 Oct. the 15 Oct. The "Gregorian Calendar," or "New Style," is at once adopted in Italy, Spain, and Portugal; and in France (10 Dec.-20 Dec.).*

1583. Edmund Grindal, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies at Croydon (6 July), aged 64. John Whitgift is made archbishop.

James VI. of Scotland (now 17) escapes from his Protestant custodians (7 July), collects troops under Argyll and Huntley, and defeats the Ruthven party. The Earl of Mar takes refuge in England, but Gowrie is induced by a

* It was adopted in Catholic Switzerland, Germany, and Netherlands, 1583; Poland, 1586; Hungary, 1587; Protestant Germany, Holland, Denmark, 1700; Protestant Switzerland, 1701; and in Great Britain and her colonies, 1752, by an Act (24 Geo. II., c. 23) passed in 1751. The Old Style is still retained in Russia, Greece, and throughout the East.

false promise of pardon to confess his guilt to the king ; on which evidence he is condemned and executed at Stirling (4 May, 1584). James offers to allow Guise to land a French army in Scotland as a base of operations against England, but Guise, dreading the power of the Protestant party in Scotland, adopts other measures.

The Court of High Commission, for the trial of spiritual offences, is formally established under the Act of 1559.

Elias Thacker and John Copping (Brownists) are hanged for disseminating books written by Robert Browne against the Prayer-Book (4, 6 June). John Lewis is burnt at Norwich for denying the divinity of Christ (17 Sep.).

John Somerville is executed (Oct.) for conspiring to murder Elizabeth ; and Edward Arden is executed (20 Dec.) as an accomplice.

A plot is arranged in Paris between the agents of Mary Queen of Scots, the Duke of Guise, and the agent of Philip II. of Spain, in connection with the English Jesuits and other Catholics, for the invasion of England by a combined French and Spanish army, sailing from the Netherlands under cover of a Spanish fleet. Sir Francis Walsingham, one of Elizabeth's secretaries of State, gets some information of the plot, and also of a conspiracy to murder the queen (Nov.). Francis Throgmorton, who has been seen frequently visiting the house of Mendoza, the Spanish ambassador, in London, is arrested, and makes a full confession under the rack ; which, however, he afterwards declares to be false.

1584. Mendoza, the Spanish ambassador, is ordered to leave England (Jan.).

Elizabeth's authority is fully re-established in Ireland, and Sir John Perrot is made Lord-Deputy (7 Jan.).

Thomas Morgan (agent of Mary Queen of Scots in Paris) and Cardinal Como instigate Dr. Wm. Parry to go over to England (Jan.) for the purpose of murdering Queen Elizabeth, with a view to placing Mary Queen of Scots on the throne.

Francis Throgmorton is tried, condemned, and executed (10 July). Many Jesuits and Seminary priests are also executed ; and a number of Catholic lords are deprived of their offices.

Since 1572 the Protestants in the Netherlands, headed by William the Silent, Prince of Orange, have been maintaining a terrible struggle to throw off the Catholic yoke of Philip II. of Spain. Philip has set a price on the head of William, and two or three attempts have been made to murder him, in one of which he has been desperately wounded. At last, in this

year, one Baltazar Gerard shoots and kills him at his house in Delft (10 July), thereby earning the promised reward. Gerard is beheaded (24 July), but Philip II. ennobles his family, and grants them the confiscated estates of William. The news of this murder leads Elizabeth and the loyal English to fear that she may be the next victim of the Catholic assassin, and the Council and chief nobles of England draw up a "Bond of Association" to protect the queen. Parliament meets (23 Nov.) and passes an Act (27 Eliz., c. 1) to incorporate the association, and making "provision for the surety of the queen's most royal person;" also an Act (c. 2) expelling the Jesuits from the kingdom within 40 days.

By the advice of the Earl of Arran, James VI. determines to follow the example of Elizabeth, to ignore both Protestant and Catholic parties, and establish a State Church in Scotland, with himself as head, and with bishops and an ecclesiastical hierarchy.

A settlement is made in North America, and called Virginia in honor of the queen (July). It is soon abandoned (Sep.).

1585. James VI.'s design to form a State Church in Scotland is pleasing to Elizabeth, who, on James agreeing to give up the cause of his mother Mary, promises to pay him a moderate annual pension. Mary, angry at her son's desertion, declares Philip II. of Spain heir to her claims to the English throne. She is removed to closer confinement at Tutbury Castle in Staffordshire (Jan.), in charge of Sir Amyas Paulet.

Dr. William Parry is arrested and sent to the Tower (8 Feb.); confesses under torture to conspiring with Edmund Neville to murder the queen; is tried at Westminster (25 Feb.), and executed (2 Mar.).

The people of the Netherlands ask Elizabeth to become their protector against Philip II. of Spain, with whom their struggle still continues; and she negotiates with them. Philip detains all English ships in Spanish harbors (29 May), and imprisons their crews. This act creates great irritation in England, especially as most of the ships had been sent with corn to supply a scarcity in Spain; and Elizabeth makes a treaty with the Netherlands (July) to assist in the defence of Antwerp, then besieged by Philip's troops. She agrees to keep 6000 troops in the Netherlands to assist the people till the close of the war with Philip.

Sir Francis Drake sails to Spain to demand the release of the imprisoned English sailors. This is refused, and he plunders Vigo, and then sails to the West Indies and captures St. Iago, St. Domingo, and Carthagena.

John Ballard (*alias* Capt. Fortescue), a Jesuit priest of Rheims, having obtained the sanction of Pope Gregory XIII. to the murder of Queen Elizabeth, travels in disguise through England organizing disaffection. He returns to the continent, and reports to Mendoza, ex-ambassador from Spain, that the queen's death is necessary to the success of an insurrection.

Mary Queen of Scots is removed from Tutbury Castle to Chartley Manor (Sep.).

1586. An English army of 7000 men, under the Earl of Leicester, goes to the Netherlands (Jan.), but with orders to act only on the defensive. An action is fought with the Spanish cavalry, at Zutphen (2 Oct., N. S.), at which Sir Philip Sidney * is wounded; he is taken to Arnheim, and there dies (17 Oct.), aged 32. His body is taken to London (5 Nov.), and after lying in state in the Minories till 16 Feb., 1587, is, on that day, buried at St. Paul's Cathedral.

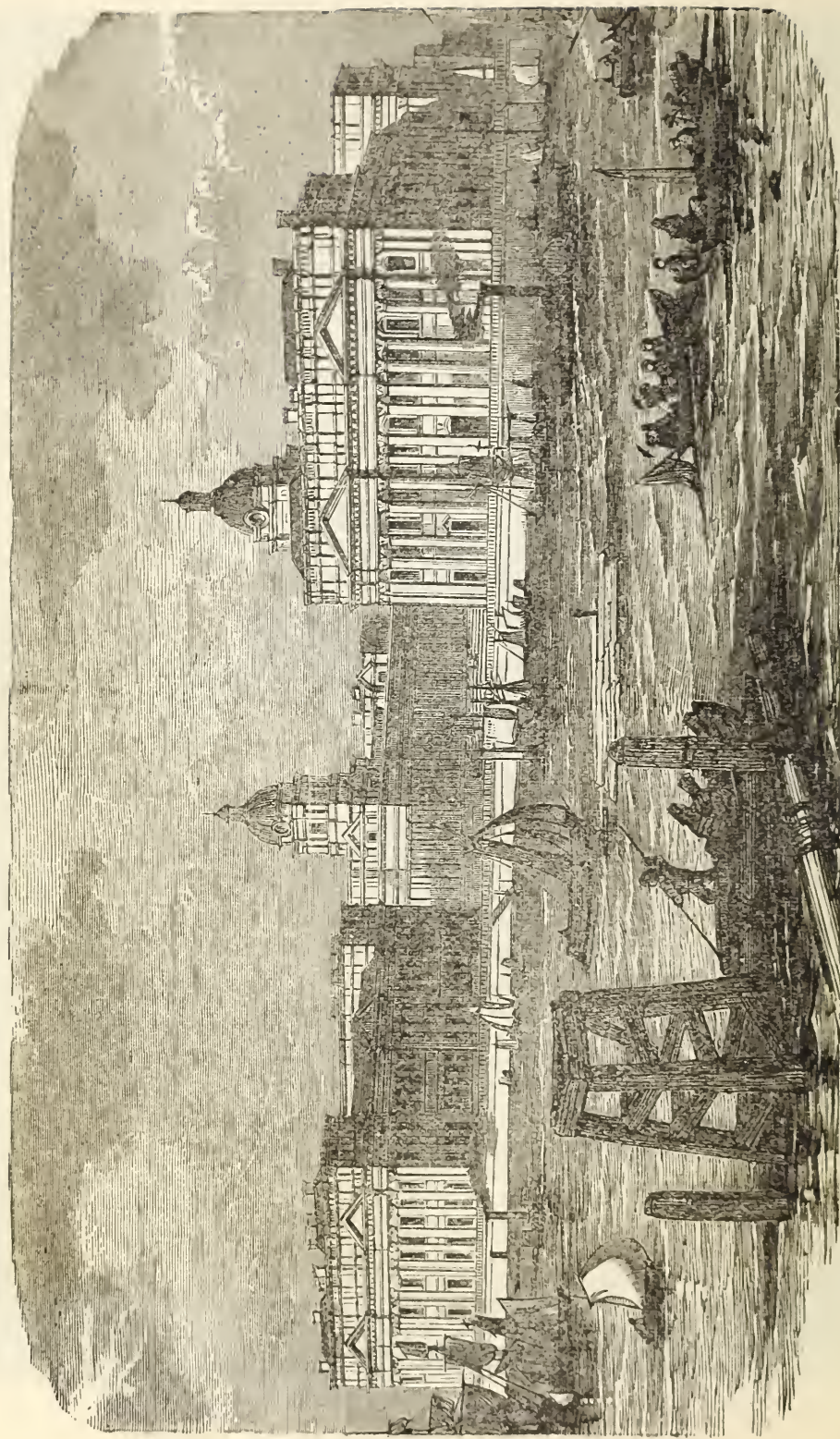
John Ballard, the Jesuit priest, returns to England, and at his instigation Anthony Babington, of Dethick in Derbyshire, "a young man of family and fortune," closely attached to the Jesuits, and a number of others undertake to murder Queen Elizabeth and raise the country for Mary. The conspirators choose six of their number—Abington, Barnwell, Salisbury, Savage, Tichbourne, and Tilney—to commit the crime. Babington writes to Mary Queen of Scots, informing her of the plot, and she replies, through one of her secretaries, approving it, writing—"When all is ready, the six gentlemen must set to work." Walsingham intercepts the correspondence; Ballard is arrested (4 Aug.), also Babington and 4 others (14 Aug.); also others. They are tried at Westminster (13 Sep.), and 14 of them are executed at Tyburn (20–21 Sep.). Mary and her two secretaries are arrested while hunting, and she is taken to Fotheringay Castle in Northamptonshire (25 Sep.). She is there tried by a commission of peers (11–15 Oct.), found guilty (25 Oct.), and sentenced to death. Parliament meets (28 Oct.), and demands the immediate execution of the sentence.

Henry Barrow, a barrister of Gray's Inn, is brought before the Court of High Commission (27 Nov.), charged with holding "schismatical and seditious opinions," that is, Separatist opinions derogatory to the Church of England, similar to those of the Brownists; he and two of his followers, John Greenwood

* The famous author of the "Arcadia." This poem was commenced in 1580, but was left incomplete at the author's death, and was published in London in 1590, under the title of "The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia."



JAMES AT THE BATTLE OF THE BOYNE.—P. 302,



GREENWICH HOSPITAL.—P. 302.



EXECUTION OF CHARLES I.—P. 284.



MONTROSE IN EDINBURGH.—P. 285.

and John Penry, are sent to the Fleet. His followers are called Barrowists.

Drake returns to England from the West Indies, bringing with him the colonists from Roanoke, Va., who introduce tobacco and the potato into England.

Christopher Marlowe produces the first part of his "Tamburlaine the Great," a work which marks an epoch in the history of English tragedy.

1587. With much reluctance, and under strong pressure from her advisers, Elizabeth signs Mary's death-warrant (1 Feb.); the Council determine to assume the responsibility and issue the warrant (3 Feb.); and Mary, clad in a costume of scarlet, is beheaded in the hall of Fotheringhay Castle* (8 Feb.). Her body was buried (July) with great pomp at Peterborough, whence it was removed in 1612 to Henry VII.'s chapel in Westminster Abbey, where it still lies, in a tomb erected by James I.

Mary having left her claim to the English throne to Philip II. of Spain (excluding her son James), Philip at once prepares to assert his claim by invading England. He begins to fit out a great fleet at Cadiz, but Drake attacks it (19 Ap.), and destroys 10,000 tons of shipping, and the projected invasion is postponed.

1588. Philip II. of Spain fits out "the Invincible Armada" for the invasion and conquest of England. It consists of 130 vessels, besides caravels, with 2680 cannon, 8450 sailors, 2088 galley-slaves, 19,295 soldiers, 1355 volunteers, and 180 priests and monks for the re-conversion of England to Catholicism, with Martin Alarco, Vicar of the Inquisition, and a plentiful supply of fetters, whips, thumb screws, and other instruments of torture—in all 31,369 souls; the whole under the command of the Duke of Medina Sidonia. The plan is to sail to the Netherlands, where Alexander Farnese, Duke of Parma (the Spanish governor), has collected an army of 34,000 men and a fleet of transports; and the combined armies of 55,000 men are to sail from Flanders to England under cover of the Armada. The fortunes of the expedition are anxiously watched by all Europe, for upon its success or failure depends the fate of Protestantism on the Continent as well as in England.

The English fleet of about 140 vessels, with 15,000 men, under Lord Howard of Effingham, with Sir Francis Drake, Sir John Hawkins, and Martin Frobisher as subordinate com-

*This castle was demolished by James I. (Mary's son) on his accession to the English throne in 1603.

manders, is far inferior to the Spanish in the size of its ships, and in weight of metal ; but the vessels are swifter and much more easily handled. In consequence of Elizabeth's parsimony, however, it is short of food and ammunition, and the food has to be eked out by dividing 2 rations among 3 men.

The Armada assembles in the bay of Ferrol, in Galicia, Spain, and after having received the blessing of Pope Sixtus V., sets sail (22 July, N. S.). On reaching the English Channel (29 July), the English fleet, while avoiding close quarters, continually harasses it (31 July-6 Aug.) and cuts off stragglers, inflicting much damage ; and the Armada goes into Calais harbor to wait for the arrival of the Duke of Parma. He, however, has no war-ships ; is closely blockaded by the Dutch, and watched by an English squadron under Lord Seymour ; and cannot come out. Their shortness of supplies compels the English to take active measures, and they send fire-ships towards Calais harbor (Sunday night, 7 Aug.) ; these have the desired effect of driving out the Armada, which sails N. E. in much disorder towards Dunkirk. At daybreak (8 Aug.) the English attack it off Gravelines (12 miles E. N. E. of Calais, and about half-way to Dunkirk) ; the battle rages till dark, and results in the success of the English, who inflict terrible damage, and drive the Armada towards Holland. The total Spanish loss to this date is about 35 ships sunk or captured, many others badly damaged, and 13,000 men killed and wounded ; and the Spanish commander, hopeless of success, seeks to return to Spain by way of the north of Scotland. Part of the English fleet follows as far as Yorkshire, and captures a number of vessels, but can do little for want of ammunition. The Armada, however, is practically destroyed by storms off Flamborough Head in Yorkshire, the Orkneys, the Hebrides, and (2 Sep.) the west coast of Ireland ; and only 53 shattered vessels, with 9000 or 10,000 starving men, get back to Spain (Oct.). The loss of life was so terrible that it was said that every family in the country lost a member.

At St. Paul's Cathedral Queen Elizabeth attends a solemn thanksgiving for the defeat of the Armada (24 Nov.).

The insufficient and bad food supplied to the English fleet leads to an outbreak of disease among the sailors, and thousands of them fall victims to the pestilence.

Thomas Hobbes, the philosopher, is born at Malmesbury (5 Ap.).

1589. At the instigation of the Guises, Henry III. of France is murdered by Jacques Clement, a monk. Henry IV. (of Navarre), a Protestant, becomes king, and Elizabeth sends

6000 troops, under Lord Willoughby, to France, to help him against the Catholic League.

James VI. of Scotland marries Anne of Denmark (24 Nov.); an alliance which places Scotland in accord with the Protestant powers of Europe, rather than with Catholic France as heretofore.*

1590. Edmund Spenser publishes the first three books of the "Faerie Queene."

Christopher Marlowe publishes his "Tamburlaine the Great," having added a second part.

The potato is first cultivated in England, in London, by Gerarde.

1591. An English force of 3000, under Sir John Norris, is sent to France (Ap.); and a larger body is sent to Normandy (July) under Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex (the queen's favorite), to assist Henry IV. against the Catholic party.

Trinity College, Dublin, is founded.

1592. The Presbyterian form of church government is established in Scotland.

The Irish Catholic clergy, by their machinations and the aid of forged documents, obtain the recall of the Lord-Deputy, Sir John Perrot, who is tried for high treason, condemned (16 June), and committed to the Tower, where he dies of a broken heart (3 Nov.).

1593. Parliament passes an Act (35 Eliz., c. 1), directed against the Brownists and Barrowists (or Separatists), providing that any person over 16 who shall, for one month, neglect to attend church shall be imprisoned until he shall openly submit and make a declaration of conformity. The rigorous enforcement of this Act drives many Brownists and Barrowists to seek an asylum in Holland.

Henry Barrow, the founder of the Barrowists, and John Greenwood are found guilty (21 Mar.) of "writing and publishing sundry seditious books and pamphlets, tending to the slander of the queen's government;" and both are executed at Tyburn (6 Ap.). The "seditious books and pamphlets" complained of were simply writings against the Established Church. John Penry, another Brownist, is executed (29 May).

Christopher Marlowe, the greatest English dramatist before Shakspeare, is killed (aged 29) in a quarrel with a footman.†

* This alliance seems to have been an indirect result of the defeat of the Armada.

† His greatest work, "The Tragical History of the Life and Death of Dr. John Faustus" (the original of Goethe's "Faust"), was not published till 1616.

“William Kempe, William Shakespeare, and Richard Burbage” show “two several comedies or enterludes” before Queen Elizabeth at Christmas, for which they are paid £20.

1594. Roger Loppez, physician to the queen, with two confederates, are convicted of conspiring with the ministers of Philip II. of Spain to poison Elizabeth (28 Feb., 14 Mar.); all three are executed (7 June).

1594-7. Richard Hooker, the “Judicious Hooker,” publishes the first portion of his “Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity.”

1595. War breaks out between France and Spain.

Sir Walter Raleigh voyages to Guiana, South America, in search of El Dorado, and explores the Orinoco for 400 miles.

The establishment of the Index Expurgatorius is confirmed by a bull of Pope Clement VIII.

1596. Archduke Albert (Philip II.’s general) invades France from Flanders, and captures Calais and Amiens. Elizabeth thereupon sends 4000 troops to France to help Henry IV. against Spain. She also creates a diversion in his favor by sending an expedition to Cadiz harbor, in Spain, under Essex and Lord Howard of Effingham (June). They defeat the Spanish fleet in the harbor; and Essex, with 3000 men, lands at Puntal and captures and sacks Cadiz (21 June).

Spenser publishes books 4, 5, and 6 of his “Faerie Queene.”

Sir Walter Raleigh, having introduced the potato from America, first plants it on his Irish estate.

Three ships sail from England to India, the first direct intercourse between the two countries.

1597. Hugh O’Neil, Earl of Tyrone, rises in rebellion against Elizabeth, and assumes the royal title of “The O’Neil.”

1598. Henry IV. of France issues the Edict of Nantes (13 Ap.), granting toleration to the Huguenots, and thus ending the religious wars which have desolated France since the massacre of Vassy in 1562.

Lord Burghley dies (4 Aug.), aged 77, having acted as Elizabeth’s chief minister for 40 years.* His son, Sir Robert Cecil, becomes chief minister.

The Earl of Tyrone defeats the English under Sir Henry Bagenal (or Bagnall), at Yellow Ford, near Blackwater in Tyrone (14 Aug.), the English losing 1500 men, and all their stores and baggage, Tyrone killing Bagenal (his father-in-law) with his own hands. Tyrone then captures Blackwater Fort.

*The Marquis of Salisbury, premier of England in 1887, is his direct descendant.

This victory leads to a general rebellion throughout Ireland. Edmund Spenser is made sheriff of Cork County (Sep.). The rebels sack and burn his castle at Kilcolman,* his youngest child perishing in the flames; and he returns to England.

Philip II., King of Spain and the Netherlands, dies (13 Sep.); Philip III. succeeds him.

"The Theatre" at Shoreditch is pulled down, and its materials are sent across the Thames to build the Globe Theatre.

1599. Edmund Spenser, the poet, dies in penury and want, heartbroken at the loss of his child and his property (16 Jan.), aged 45. He is buried in poet's corner, Westminster Abbey, near Chaucer.

Essex is made Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland (12 Mar.), and sent over (15 Ap.) with 22,000 troops to suppress the rebellion. After some desultory skirmishing, he meets Tyrone (Sep.) in the middle of the river Lagan, near Ballyclinch in Louth; arranges a truce; and agrees to submit his demands to Elizabeth. Essex, being suspected of seeking to make himself an independent ruler in Ireland, is recalled in disgrace (Sep.), and placed in free custody (2 Oct.). Sir Charles Blount, Lord Mountjoy,† is made commander in Ireland (Oct.).

The Globe Theatre, on Bankside, Southwalk,‡ is built by Richard Burbage, Shakspeare being one of the "partners in the profits."

1600. Mountjoy lands in Ireland (24 Feb.).

Essex is confined to his own house (5 June); but liberated (26 Aug.).

The East India Co. is incorporated by royal charter (31 Dec.).

1601. Essex enters into a plot to get possession of the queen's person, and to remove his opponents from the government by arms; he arrests the queen's messengers (8 Feb.); marches into London and attempts to excite insurrection; but is arrested, tried for high treason (19 Feb.), condemned, and beheaded (25 Feb.), aged 33.

For the purpose of assisting Tyrone in his rebellion, 5000 Spaniards, under Don Juan del Aguila, land at Kinsale in Kerry (23 Sep.), and about 2000 more at Castlehaven. Lord Mountjoy and the Earl of Thomond besiege the Spaniards

* Its ruins are still to be seen about two miles from Doneraile, in Cork County.

† Created Earl of Devon in 1603.

‡ Its site was about 100 yards west of the Surrey end of London Bridge, and is now occupied by Barclay's brewery.

at Kinsale; Tyrone, reinforced by the 2000 Spaniards from Castlehaven, advances to raise the siege, but is defeated at Kinsale (23-24 Dec.), with a loss of 1200 slain.

Elizabeth (now 68) summons her last parliament (27 Oct.). The Commons complain of the exercise of the royal prerogative in the granting of monopolies. The queen sends a message stating that, having learned that some of the patents granted are grievous to her people, none shall be acted on save those which shall first have a trial according to law, for the good of the people. A deputation of the Commons waits upon her to thank her for this message. She replies in a noble and pathetic speech, declaring that "she appealed to the judgment of God, but never thought was cherished in her heart that tended not to her people's good," and closing with these memorable words, the last she ever addressed to her faithful Commons: "Though you have had, and may have, many princes more mighty and wise sitting in this seat, yet you never had, or shall have, any that will be more careful and loving." These words form her own true and best epitaph.

Parliament passes the Poor Law (43 Eliz., c. 2); it remains in force till 1834.

1601-8. Shakspeare writes his great tragedies.

1602. The Spaniards, on condition of being allowed to return to Spain, surrender Kinsale and Castlehaven (2 Jan.). Tyrone is again defeated (June) at the Blackwater, by Mountjoy, who follows him into Tyrone and ravages his country.

1603. Elizabeth, after nominating James VI. of Scotland as her successor, dies at Richmond (24 Mar.), aged 69. She is buried (28 Ap.) in the north aisle of Henry VII.'s chapel, Westminster Abbey, where a magnificent tomb still marks her last resting-place.

Tyrone, at Mellifont, makes submission to Mountjoy (30 Mar.), is pardoned, and reinstated in his earldom.

Though faults many and grievous disfigured the character of Queen Elizabeth, she yet possessed this greatest quality of a ruler—she had her people's good at heart; and this it is which constitutes her truest claim to greatness. During the 44 years of her reign, thanks to her stringent economy—not to say parsimony—and the consequent lightness of taxation, and thanks to the absence of turmoil and strife within the country itself, England advanced in population, wealth, prosperity, power, and prestige at a rate which she had never before known. The defeat of the Spanish Armada settled forever the question as to England's religion, and placed her on the side of Protestantism, liberty, and progress.

CHAPTER IX.

THE STUARTS: THE STRUGGLE BETWEEN THE CROWN AND PARLIAMENT.

1603. James VI. of Scotland is proclaimed King of England (24 Mar.), as James I. He has three children: Henry (aged 10), Elizabeth (aged 6), and Charles (aged 2).

He immediately sets out for London. On his progress the "Millenary Petition" (so-called as representing the views of 1000 Puritan clergy of the Church of England), praying the abolition of ceremonies which the petitioners could not conscientiously accept, is presented to him (Ap.). He reaches London (7 May); makes Sir Robert Cecil Baron of Essingden (13 May), and continues him as chief minister; and he and Anne of Denmark are crowned at Westminster Abbey (25 July).

Tyrone makes his submission to James I.

Lord Cobham and possibly also Sir Walter Raleigh enter into a correspondence with Aremburg, the Spanish ambassador, to overthrow Cecil, and apparently also to place Arabella Stuart on the throne, on the ground that, having been born in England, she has a better right than her cousin, James I., an alien. Besides this "Main Plot," as it is called, another, styled the "Bye Plot" or "Surprise Plot," is entered into by Watson (a Catholic priest), Sir Griffin Markham, Anthony Copley, and other Catholics, with Lord Grey of Wilton, George Brooke (a brother of Lord Cobham's), and other Puritans. The plan is to seize the king, and compel him to dismiss his ministers and grant toleration to Catholics and Puritans. There is no connection between the two plots, but the government mixes them up. The conspirators are arrested (July), and tried at Winchester (Nov.); Watson and Clarke are hanged (29 Nov.); Brooke is beheaded (5 Dec.); Copley is banished; but Cobham, Markham, and Grey are reprieved on the scaffold, Grey being sent to the Tower. Raleigh is condemned to death (17 Nov.), but is also reprieved and sent to the Tower, where he remains for 12 years, during which he writes his "History of the World."

The plague rages in England.

A theatrical license is granted to William Shakspeare and others.

1604. As a result of the Millenary Petition of 1603, the "Hampton Court Conference," between Archbishop Whitgift and 15 other Church dignitaries on the one side, and four representatives of the Puritan party in the Church on the other, is held in presence of the king (14-16 Jan.). All concessions to the Puritans are refused; and they are ordered to subscribe to the whole Prayer-Book, the 39 Articles, and the king's supremacy; the king threatening to make them conform or "harry them out of the kingdom, or else worse." Reynolds, the Puritan spokesman, makes a proposal that a new translation of the Bible be made, which James accepts.

John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, dies at Lambeth (29 Feb.), aged 73. Richard Bancroft, Bishop of London, is made archbishop (10 Dec.).

All Jesuits and seminary priests are ordered to leave England (22 Feb.). In consequence of this order, and of the general enforcement of the Acts against the Catholics, the "Gunpowder Plot" is originated, probably by Robert Catesby, who is joined by Thomas Winter, John Wright, and other Catholic gentlemen (Ap.); and preparations are commenced (Dec.) for blowing up the Houses of Parliament in Feb., 1605.

James I. assumes the title of "King of Great Britain, France, and Ireland" (20 Oct.).

1605. Lord Bacon* publishes his "Advancement of Learning."

The "Gunpowder Plot" is matured by Catesby, Thomas Winter, John Wright, Thomas Percy, Robert Winter, Ambrose Rookwood, Guy Fawkes, and other Catholics. The design is to blow up the Houses of Parliament at their opening (which has been postponed till Sep.), when the king, Prince Henry, and nearly all the members will be present; and then to seize Prince Charles and the Princess Elizabeth, and attempt a rising in the midland counties. Fawkes goes to Flanders to enlist Romish refugees in the conspiracy, and to raise troops. Parliament, however, is prorogued till Oct.; and Sir E. Baynham goes to Rome (Sep.) to gain the sanction of Pope Paul V.; and Henry Garnet, Provincial of the Jesuits, joins the conspirators (Oct.). Parliament is further prorogued till 5 Nov., and Sir Everard Digby and Francis Tresham join the conspir-

* This title, by which he is commonly known, is incorrect. His real title was, first, Sir Francis Bacon, then Baron Verulam (July, 1618), and afterwards Viscount St. Albans (Jan., 1621).

acy. Lord Monteagle receives a letter (26 Oct.) from one of the conspirators (probably Tresham, his wife's brother) warning him not to be present at the opening of parliament; this letter he shows to Cecil and the king (1 Nov.). The vaults beneath the Houses of Parliament are searched (4 Nov.); Fawkes is there found and arrested, and thirty barrels of gunpowder are discovered. The other conspirators thereupon flee, and, under Digby, attempt to make a stand at Holbeach in Worcestershire, but fail, Catesby, Percy, and the Wrights being shot, and most of the other leaders captured (8 Nov.).

1606. The Gunpowder Plot conspirators are tried (27 Jan.) and executed (30, 31 Jan.), except Garnet, who is tried (28 Mar.), and executed (3 May). An annual thanksgiving is appointed for 5 Nov. (3 Jac. I., c. 1).

In the case of John Bate, the Court of Exchequer holds that all matters of commerce, including customs' duties, come under the absolute power of the Crown.

The Union Jack, consisting of the crosses of St. George and St. Andrews, is adopted as the national flag of Great Britain by royal proclamation (12 Ap.).

The melody of the national anthem, "God Save the King," is said to have been composed by John Bull, Mus. Doc., about this date.

1607. An insurrection of the peasantry in the midland counties, under John Reynolds, calling himself Capt. Pouch, breaks out against the prevalent practice of enclosing commons (May); it is suppressed, and a few of the leaders are executed, but the others are leniently treated.

An Act (4 Jac. I., c. 5) is passed punishing drunkenness by a fine of 5s. or six hours in the stocks.

The London Company founds Jamestown, in Virginia, the first permanent English colony in America (14 May).

1608. The preparation of "the Authorized Version" of the Bible is commenced. To perform the task 47 of the most learned men in the country are selected, and divided into three companies, to meet at Westminster, Oxford, and Cambridge; 25 to undertake the Old Testament, 15 the New, and 7 the Apocrypha; the work of the three committees to be revised and made uniform by a committee of six. The king directs that the Bishop's Bible be taken as the basis, to be departed from only when necessary.

Cecil, now Earl of Salisbury, is made Lord Treasurer (4 May). Relying on the judgment of the Court of Exchequer in Bate's Case in 1606, he issues a "Book of Rates" raising considerably all customs' duties.

A band of Puritans, mostly Brownists and Barrowists, under John Robinson and William Brewster, leave England to escape persecution, and settle in Leyden, Holland. This colony becomes the father of the Independents or Congregationalists.

1608-14. The Ulster Settlement or Plantation is made on forfeited estates in Tyrone, Coleraine, Donegal, Fermanagh, Cavan, and Armagh.

1609. The House of Commons, on being asked for supplies, complains of "the new impositions" (as the increased customs' duties under the Book of Rates are called), and states other grievances; thereby beginning the struggle against the absolute power of the crown and the doctrine of Divine right claimed by the king, which continues till the revolution of 1688.

1610. The Commons declare that the imposition of customs' duties without the consent of Parliament is unconstitutional, and petition for their removal.

A charter for the colonization of Newfoundland is granted (2 May).

James's eldest son, Henry, is made Prince of Wales (30 May).

The potato is introduced or reintroduced into Ireland.

Tea is first brought to Europe by the Dutch.

Henry Hudson discovers Hudson's Bay.

1611. Arabella Stuart having (in 1610) secretly married William Seymour (son of Lord Beauchamp), a descendant of Henry VII., thereby provokes the suspicions of James I.; and she is placed in confinement at Lambeth and Durham, and after an abortive attempt to escape to France, is imprisoned in the Tower (5 June), where she becomes insane, and dies (27 Sep., 1615, aged 38). Her husband escapes to the Continent.

James I. institutes the order of Baronets (22 May).

The Authorized Version of the Bible is completed and published.

1612. Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, dies at Marlborough (24 May), aged 62. The king's favorite, Robert Carr, Viscount Rochester (afterwards Earl of Somerset), is made chief minister.

Henry, Prince of Wales, dies (6 Nov.), aged 19.

The first Irish Parliament representative of the whole country, and not merely of the English Pale, meets.

1613. Princess Elizabeth (now 16) is married to Frederick V., Elector Palatine (14 Feb.).

Carr, having formed an adulterous connection with the

Countess of Essex,* forms the design of marrying her, for which purpose she is to get a divorce from Essex. Carr's friend, Sir Thomas Overbury, opposes the design, and to get him out of the way, he is, through Carr's machinations, committed to the Tower (21 Ap.), where, at the instigation of Lady Essex, he is poisoned (15 Sep.). The projected divorce is obtained; Carr, in order that his wife may not lose rank, is created Earl of Somerset (3 Nov.), and the marriage takes place (26 Dec.).

1614. James I., being in want of supplies, calls parliament. It meets (5 Ap.), and the Commons at once begin the discussion of the old grievances, and before "the Addled Parliament," as it was christened, has passed a single Act, James dissolves it (7 June). He calls no other till 1621, and begins to raise money by benevolences, by the sale of patents, monopolies, and peerages, and by other unconstitutional means.

Baron Napier of Merchiston (near Edinburgh) invents logarithms.

1615. Elwes, lieutenant of the Tower, reveals to Sir Thomas Winwood, Secretary of State, the suspicious circumstances attending Overbury's death; and Winwood discloses them to James I. Somerset, his wife, and four accomplices are arrested; and the four latter are tried and executed.

George Villiers becomes the favorite and chief minister of James.

1616. Somerset and his wife are tried for the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury, convicted, and condemned to death (25 May). The countess confesses her guilt, but Somerset denies his,† and threatens, if the charge is pressed, to make certain revelations affecting the king; and both are reprieved and sent to the Tower, from which they are released in 1622.

Raleigh is released from the Tower (19 Mar.) for the purpose of taking an expedition to the Orinoco, to open a gold mine discovered in 1596 by Captain Keymis. James, however, is anxious for an alliance with Spain, and treacherously discloses Raleigh's plan to Gondomar, the Spanish ambassador, by whom it is sent to Spain and thence to South America.

Coffee is first brought to western Europe from Arabia by the Dutch.

William Harvey discovers the circulation of the blood about this date.

* Frances Howard, daughter of the Earl of Suffolk.

† Mr. S. R. Gardiner, the highest authority on this period of English history, believes him to have been innocent.

Shakspere dies (23 Ap.), aged 52, at his house in Stratford-on-Avon, Warwickshire. He had bought this house in 1597, and it was then the handsomest in the town.

1617. Raleigh sails for the Orinoco (28 Mar.), but finds the Spaniards so thoroughly prepared against him, that though he is successful in an inevitable collision, and captures the town of St. Thomas, he sees that his expedition is doomed to ultimate failure, and sails for home.

James I. visits Scotland and restores the bishops in their supremacy.

Baron Napier of Merchiston, the inventor of logarithms, dies at Merchiston (Ap.), aged 67.

1618. Sir Francis Bacon is made Lord Chancellor (4 Jan.).

James I. publishes his "Book of Sports" (24 May), allowing certain sports on Sundays, after divine service.

Raleigh returns to England (21 June); is arrested (July); the old sentence of 1603 is revived against him, and he is beheaded (29 Oct.), aged 66.

The General Assembly of the Scotch Church agree to the "Five Articles of Perth" (25 Aug.).

Ferdinand II., King of Bohemia, oppresses the Protestants there; they revolt against him, and thereby originate the "Thirty Years' War" between the Protestant and Catholic powers of Germany.

1619. Anne of Denmark, queen of James I., dies (2 Mar.), aged 44.

Ferdinand II. of Bohemia is deposed (19 Aug.) by his subjects; he is elected Emperor of Germany (28 Aug.). Frederick V., the Elector Palatine (husband of James's daughter Elizabeth), is elected King of Bohemia (5 Sep.): relying on the support of James I. he accepts the throne, and is crowned (25 Oct.).

1620. Frederick V., the Elector Palatine and King of Bohemia, is totally defeated at Prague (7 Nov.) by the Spaniards and Imperialists under Spinola and Maximilian, Duke of Bavaria, who conquer Bohemia and invade the Palatinate; Frederick takes refuge in Holland. This defeat causes great excitement in England, and the Protestants manifest a general desire to assist Frederick.

The Pilgrim Fathers land at Plymouth Rock (11 Dec.).

Lord Bacon publishes his "*Novum Organum*" (Oct.), written in Latin.

1621. With the hope of obtaining supplies on the pretext of helping his son-in-law the Elector Palatine, James I. calls parliament (30 Jan.), for the first time in nearly 7 years. The

Commons grant two subsidies,* but at once proceed to the redress of grievances, especially in the matter of monopolies, denying the power of the Crown to grant them. They also impeach Lord Chancellor Bacon (18 Mar.) for taking bribes; 26 charges are made against him, in 22 of which the receipt of gifts or loans is fully proven. He acknowledges his guilt (22 Ap.), alleging in excuse that the gifts or loans had not influenced the course of justice; and it is shown that in 14 of the cases the presents were not given till long after the termination of the suits, and that in the others he had given judgment against the donors or lenders of the money. He is sentenced (3 May) to pay a fine of £40,000; to be removed from office, and incapacitated from holding office or sitting in parliament in future; to be imprisoned in the Tower during the king's pleasure; and to be banished from Court for life. This sentence proves merely nominal; he is released from the Tower after two days' confinement, and allowed to appear at Court; his fine is remitted by the king; and in 1624 his political disabilities are removed.†

At the instigation of James I. (who is probably influenced by his chaplain, William Laud), the Scotch Estates ratify the "Five Articles" passed in 1618 by the General Assembly at Perth. These articles are: 1. The Lord's Supper must be received on the knees, instead of sitting; 2. It may be given in private houses; 3. Private baptism is allowed; 4. Episcopal confirmation is ordered; and 5. Five church holidays are established. These innovations give great offence to the majority of the Scotch Protestants.

William Laud is made Bishop of St. Davids (Nov.).

Parliament reassembles (20 Nov.), and a dispute takes place between the king and the Commons. They send him a pro-

* A subsidy was 4s. in the pound on real property, and 2s. 8d. on personal property of £3 and upwards. Aliens and popish recusants paid double these sums.

† Mr. S. R. Gardiner, the highest authority on this period of English history, says: "The charge that Bacon knowingly and corruptly sold or delayed justice falls entirely to the ground. The only possible explanation of his conduct is that, with his usual carelessness of forms, he contented himself with knowing that the immediate reception of the money, which he believed himself to have fairly earned, would not influence his decision; in other words, that without a corrupt motive he accepted money corruptly tendered." *History of England*, vol. iv., p. 81. Commenting on this, Mr. Ashley says: "Bacon saw that the attack was due to political animosity, and that no defence would save him; by complete submission he might escape with a more lenient sentence."—Low and Pulling's *Dictionary of English History*, p. 904.

test declaring that their privileges are not the gift of the Crown, but the birthright of English subjects, and that matters of public interest are within their province. The king, in anger, tears the protest from the journal, adjourns the House (19 Dec.), and imprisons the opposition leaders, Lords Oxford and Southampton, and Sir E. Coke, Malary, Philip, and Pym (27 Dec.).

1622. James I. dissolves Parliament (8 Feb.). Coke and others are released from the Tower (6 Aug.).

1623. Prince Charles (now 22) and the king's favorite, George Villiers, now Earl of Buckingham, are sent to Spain (17 Feb.) to negotiate a marriage between Charles and the Infanta. Villiers is made Duke of Buckingham (May). Through his instrumentality the treaty falls through (Dec.); he thereby acquires great popularity, as the proposed match had been highly obnoxious to the Protestants in England.

John Webster publishes his drama, "The Duchess of Malfi."

1624. James I. declares war against Spain (10 Mar.), and allows Count Mansfeldt, the Protestant general in Germany, to enlist 12,000 soldiers in England for service on the Protestant side in the Thirty Years' War. Nearly half die from overcrowding on shipboard, and the rest are of little use.

An Act (21 Jac. I., c. 3) is passed, declaring grants of monopolies illegal and void, except for patents of inventions for 14 years.

A treaty for the marriage of Prince Charles to the Princess Henrietta Maria, daughter of Henry IV. of France, is ratified by James I. (12 Dec.).

Richard Burton publishes his "Anatomy of Melancholy."

1625. James dies of the ague (27 Mar.), aged 58; his only surviving son (now 24) succeeds him as Charles I. The young king marries the Princess Henrietta in Paris by proxy (1 May), Buckingham acting as proxy.

Charles calls his first parliament (17 May); an outbreak of the plague compels it to adjourn to Oxford; 35,417 die in London alone. The Commons charge Buckingham with maladministration, and refuse to grant supplies till grievances are redressed, and Charles dissolves it (12 Aug.).

An expedition to Spain (Oct.) is unsuccessful, and the troops bring back the plague, which rages in England.

1626. Charles I. is crowned (2 Feb.). He calls his second parliament (6 Feb.). It complains of illegal taxation and other grievances, again refuses supplies till these are redressed,

and impeaches Buckingham (8 May) for mismanaging the revenue and buying and selling offices. Charles arrests two of the chief speakers, Sir Dudley Diggs and Sir John Eliot (10 May), and then, in order to save his favorite Buckingham, dissolves parliament (15 June), and calls no other for two years. He raises a forced loan (Aug.).

Lord Bacon dies at Highgate, near London (9 Ap.), aged 65.

1627. Many persons refuse to pay the forced loan, and are imprisoned, one of them being the famous John Hampden. Five of them obtain a writ of Habeas Corpus, and the question of the legality of their imprisonment on the mere command of the king is tried, and the Chief-Justice, Sir Nicholas Hyde, gives judgment for the Crown (28 Nov.); a decision which virtually repeals the 29th section of Magna Carta, that "no free man shall be taken and imprisoned unless by lawful judgment of his peers, or the law of the land."

At the instance of the Huguenots Charles I. declares war against France, and sends an expedition under Buckingham to attack the Island of Rhé. After a disastrously unsuccessful siege of 13 weeks (12 July-12 Oct.), the expedition returns home.

1628. Money being absolutely necessary to carry on the war against France, Charles is obliged to call his third parliament (17 Mar.). The Commons promise five subsidies, but refuse to pass the bill till grievances are redressed, the recent Habeas Corpus decision being a new one. Charles demands the appointment of a day for the completion of supplies, when, on the motion of Sir Thomas Wentworth (afterwards Lord Strafford), the House resolves that "grievances and supplies shall go hand in hand;" and presents the "Petition of Right" (28 May), embodying four points: 1. No forced loans, benevolences, or taxes to be levied without the consent of parliament. 2. No one to be imprisoned without cause shown. 3. Soldiers and sailors not to be billeted on the people without their will. 4. No one to be tried by martial law in time of peace. After an attempt at evasion (2 June), and a stormy and exciting scene in the House (5 June), the king signs the petition (7 June), which then becomes an Act (3 Car. I., c. 1); whereupon the House at once completes the grant of the five subsidies. It then proceeds to act upon the Petition of Right by remedying grievances, and also demands the dismissal of Buckingham, when Charles prorogues it (26 June).

While engaged at Portsmouth in preparing an expedition for the relief of Rochelle, where the Huguenots are being besieged, Buckingham is stabbed to the heart (23 Aug.) by

John Felton, a discontented officer who had served under him. Felton is hanged at Tyburn (28 Nov.). He claimed that in committing the crime he was inspired only by religious and patriotic zeal. In Felton's case torture was declared by the judges to be unlawful.

Charles determines to be his own minister ; but Wentworth, who has deserted the popular cause and been made a peer,* soon becomes his chief adviser. Taxes are raised illegally by tonnage and poundage, and by increased customs' duties. Charles also gives offence to the Puritan party by favoring Arminianism, which is being fostered by the Jesuits as a step towards Romanism.

William Harvey publishes his "*Exercitatio anatomica de motu cordis et sanguinis in animalibus*," announcing his discovery of the circulation of the blood.

1629. Parliament reassembles (20 Jan.), and at once begins to discuss the religious grievances and the question of arbitrary taxation. Sir John Finch,† the Speaker, a partisan of the king's, declares (2 Mar.) that the king has ordered him to adjourn the House ; but fearing that a dissolution is intended, two members, Denzil Holles and Valentine, hold the Speaker down in his chair, and, after the doors are locked, Holles reads a protest declaring that any one who shall countenance Popery or Arminianism, or advise the levying of subsidies not granted by parliament, or voluntarily pay any such subsidy, shall be reputed a capital enemy to the kingdom and commonwealth. The House then adjourns and disperses. Charles immediately dissolves parliament (10 Mar.‡), and Holles, Valentine, Eliot, and Selden are arrested (5 Mar.), and the first three are sent to the Tower.

Charles now determines to rule without a parliament, and none is called for 11 years. To defray the expenses of government, he raises money by every species of legal or illegal device. Heavy fines and rents are imposed on the owners of lands which had formerly been Crown forests; about £100,000 is raised from £40 holders who have not taken up their knighthood ; the Act (31 Eliz., c. 7) providing that cottages shall not be erected on less than four acres of land is so enforced as to inflict heavy fines on the peasant holders; "ship-money," that is money assessed on the counties for the supply

* Baron Wentworth (22 July, 1628) ; Viscount Wentworth (10 Dec., 1628) ; Earl of Strafford (1639).

† Made Chief-Justice of the Common Pleas in 1634.

‡ The proclamation of dissolution, though not issued till 10 Mar., was signed on the 2d.

of shipping, nominally for the national defence, is raised everywhere, the total sum being about £220,000 a year; "tonnage and poundage" are also levied; and large sums are raised by the sale of monopolies, the list of articles prohibited from sale, except by monopolists, including beer, butter, buttons, coal, hops, iron, leather, linen, salt, soap, and tobacco, the patentees of a new soap, for instance, agreeing to pay £30,000 for two years, and £40,000 a year in perpetuity. But the most prolific source of revenue was through the Star Chamber, where men were summoned for all sorts of offences, including some unknown to the law, such as private quarrelling and speaking ill of the government, and subjected to enormous fines, Lord Morley, for example, being on one occasion fined £20,000. In this way it is said that during 11 years not less than £6,000,000 (equal to £30,000,000 in present money) was raised in fines alone.

1630. Charles I. makes peace with France (14 Ap.) and Spain (15 Nov.).

Alexander Leighton, a clergyman, having (in 1629) written a book against the bishops and the queen (a Catholic), entitled "Sion's Plea against Prelacy," is brought before the Star Chamber, fined £10,000, publicly whipped, pilloried, branded, slit in the nostrils, and sent to prison for life (26 Nov.).

1632. William Prynne, a lawyer, publishes his "Histriomastix," attacking the immorality of the stage, and containing words supposing to reflect on the queen for taking part in the Court theatricals or masks, as they were called. He is taken before the Star Chamber (1633), degraded from his profession, fined £5000, pilloried, deprived of both his ears, and sentenced to imprisonment for life.

1633. Charles I. visits Scotland, is crowned there (18 June), quarrels with its parliament,* and offends the Presbyterians by ordering the clergy to wear the white clerical dress or surplice. He makes Wentworth Lord-Deputy of Ireland (3 July), and William Laud (Bishop of London) Archbishop of Canterbury (16 Aug.). Laud's Arminian and High Church tendencies make the appointment obnoxious to the Protestant and Puritan parties.

1634. Charles I. imposes "ship-money," in accordance with a scheme devised by Noy, a renegade lawyer. It is collected only in maritime counties. Sir John Finch, the subser-

* The Scotch parliament consisted of only one House, all orders sitting and voting together. It had no power of amendment, the vote being a simple Yea or Nay to the measures introduced by the Lords of the Articles.

vient Speaker of the Commons in 1629, is made Chief-Justice of the Common Pleas (14 Oct.).

1635. Charles I. issues a proclamation against quitting the realm (21 July).

The Puritans begin to oppose theatrical performances.

Wentworth attempts to enforce his policy of "Thorough" in Ireland. He enforces conformity with the Church of England, thereby offending the Presbyterians and Puritans of Ulster, as well as the Catholics.

1636. The imposition of ship-money is extended to the inland counties. John Hampden, of Buckinghamshire, being assessed in 20s., refuses to pay the tax as illegal, and brings the question of its legality before a court of law.

Laud, as archbishop, claims supremacy over the Scotch Church, and introduces Canons which are regarded as illegal.

Wentworth attempts to colonize Connaught.

1637. William Prynne, while in prison, publishes his book, "News from Ipswich," in which the bishops are spoken of as "Luciferian Lords;" John Bastwick publishes his "New Litany," and Henry Burton his "Apology," in both of which the bishops are denounced. The three authors are brought before the Star Chamber (14 June); Prynne is sentenced to be branded,* and Bastwick and Burton to the loss of their ears; and all three are fined £5000 each, pilloried (30 June), and banished for life, Prynne and Burton to the Channel Isles, and Bastwick to the Scilly Isles (Aug.). Sympathizing crowds, estimated at 100,000, line the roads to witness their departure.

Laud introduces into Scotland a new Service Book, the use of which is first ordered for Easter, but postponed till 23 July. The attempt to read it leads to riots in Edinburgh (18 Oct.), and it is opposed all over the country. To punish Edinburgh the government is removed to Linlithgow, a measure which leads to further rioting. The opponents of the changes in the Church government and ritual in Scotland organize themselves into a body called "The Tables" (Oct.).

Hampden's case is tried in the Exchequer Chamber before 12 judges, with Finch at their head (Nov.).

1638. Charles causes a proclamation to be published in Edinburgh (15 Feb.) forbidding assemblies of the people for petitioning; thereupon, the Tables issue (1 Mar.) the "Solemn League and Covenant" (drawn up in 1557), and it is signed by multitudes all over the country. The Covenanters, as they are now called, demand a free parliament and a General As-

* He had already, in 1632, been deprived of his ears. The remains of them were now pared off.

sembly, and the abolition of the Court of High Commission, the Service Book, and the Canons. Charles I. pretends to surrender (9 Sep.), and summons a General Assembly, which meets at Glasgow (21 Nov.), under James, Marquis of Hamilton, as Commissioner. Charles's apparent surrender is merely a ruse to gain time to prepare for war against Scotland, and when the Assembly begins its real work by preparing to hear charges against the bishops, Hamilton dissolves it (28 Nov.). The Assembly, however, continues its work; declares the bishops guilty of popish practices and immorality; annuls all acts of previous Assemblies since 1606, including the Five Articles of Perth, the Service Book, and the Canons; and declares Episcopacy and the Five Articles contrary to the Confession of Faith.

The judges give judgment in Hampden's ship-money case; 7 rule in favor of the Crown, 5 against (12 June). "No Act of parliament," said Finch, "can bar the king of his regality." The decision virtually makes the king supreme above parliament.

1639. War being inevitable, the Covenanters prepare a splendid army of over 22,000 men, mostly veteran soldiers from the Thirty Years' War; Alexander Leslie is made commander. They also gain the support of the French minister, Richelieu; and issue a declaration (7 Feb.) stating that they have taken up arms against the "meditated introduction of popery."

Charles I. orders an English army to assemble at York; and directs Hamilton, with a fleet of 19 vessels, conveying 5000 troops, to join the Marquis of Huntley at Aberdeen. The English Puritans and Protestants, however, are in sympathy with the Covenanters, and Charles, finding himself weakly supported, negotiates the Treaty of Berwick (18 June), granting to the Covenanters a free parliament and a General Assembly. The Parliament and Assembly meet (Aug.), and the Acts of the Assembly of 1638 are ratified. These proceedings displease Charles, and he again resolves on war.

Wentworth is made Earl of Strafford and Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland. He is summoned to England (Sep.) as the king's chief adviser.

1640. To raise money for his projected war against Scotland, Charles is driven to call a parliament, for the first time since 1629. It meets (13 Ap.), and Pym at once begins the old tale of grievances; supplies are refused; and Charles dissolves "the Short Parliament" (5 May).

Laud compels Convocation to sit illegally (up till 29 May)

after the dissolution of parliament, and to pass new Canons ordering the clergy to instruct the people as to the sin of resisting the government, and to take a sweeping oath to uphold the doctrine and discipline of the English Church.

Laud's palace is attacked (11 May), and a man named Archer, who took part in it, is racked. This was the last instance of the use of torture in England. It had been declared illegal in 1628.

Charles's army assembles at York, under Lord Northumberland; also about 12,000 men at Newcastle under Lord Conway. He finds difficulty in raising supplies; the ship-money is collected with difficulty; London refuses to pay a forced loan; and the troops become mutinous, kill some of their officers, and desert in large numbers. The army in consequence is too weak to oppose that of the Scotch, which enters England (20 Aug.), defeats Conway (28 Aug.) at Newburn, on the Tyne (4 miles above Newcastle), and takes possession of Northumberland and Durham.

Charles I. summons a great council of peers at York (24 Sep.), which advises him to call a parliament; and feeling the absolute necessity of so doing, he issues writs for one. The peers, on their own security, raise £200,000 for immediate purposes, and make a truce with Scotland at Ripon (1-26 Oct.), agreeing to pay its army £40,000 a month; the army to remain in England till peace is concluded.

The Court of High Commission meets at St. Paul's (22 Oct.); it is broken up by the people and never sits again.

"The Long Parliament," the most memorable in English history, meets (3 Nov.). [It sits for over 12 years, till 20 Ap., 1653, when it is forcibly dissolved by Cromwell.]

One of the first acts of the Commons is to impeach Strafford (11 Nov.), the real offence as distinct from the merely technical charges of treason being, that "he had endeavored to subvert the ancient and fundamental laws of the realm, and to introduce an arbitrary and tyrannical form of government." He is arrested (11 Nov.) and sent to the Tower (25 Nov.). The Commons declare ship-money illegal (7 Dec.), and the Acts of the recent Convocation also illegal (16 Dec.). They impeach Archbishop Laud (18 Dec.) for attempting to subvert the laws and overthrow the Protestant religion; and he is committed to custody. They impeach Chief-Justice Finch* for having decided against Hampden in the ship-money case in 1638; he escapes to Holland (21 Dec.). They impeach Sir Francis

*Speaker of the Commons in 1629.

Windebank, Secretary of State, for corruptly favoring Romanists; he escapes to France (Dec.).

An Act is passed abolishing torture in England.

1641. The House of Lords declares ship-money illegal (20 Jan.).

The Commons impeach Sir Robert Berkeley, Justice of the King's Bench, and the remaining five judges who had decided against Hampden in the ship-money case; and all six are arrested (13 Feb.).

The "Triennial Bill" (16 Car. I., c. 1) is passed (15 Feb.), providing that parliament shall be called at least once in three years; * also acts abolishing the Star Chamber (c. 10), the Court of High Commission (c. 11), and the Council of the North.

Articles of impeachment against Archbishop Laud are unanimously passed in the Commons (26 Feb.); he is sent to the Tower (1 Mar.), his revenues are confiscated and his goods sold.

Strafford is tried in Westminster Hall before the House of Lords (22 Mar.-13 Ap.).

In the meantime, with the connivance of Charles I., plots (called collectively "the Army Plot") have been entered into by Percy Wilmot, Sir John Suckling,† Henry Jermyn, the Earl of Newcastle, George Goring, and others, to overawe parliament by the army, and to release Strafford from the Tower. Pym gets a knowledge of the plots (1 Ap.), and introduces a Bill of Attainder (16 Car. I., c. 38) against Strafford in the Commons (10 Ap.). It is passed (21 Ap.); also a bill (c. 7) to prevent the dissolution of parliament without its own consent (5 May). Both bills pass the Lords (29 Ap., 8 May), and are assented to by the king (10 May), the Attainder Bill with much grief and reluctance, with the words, "the Earl of Strafford is a happier man than I;" and Strafford is beheaded on Tower-Hill (12 May). Wilmot, Jermyn, Suckling, and others flee to France, and are declared guilty of high treason.

Charles I. engages with one Daniel O'Neill in another plot (June) to bring the army to London to overawe parliament. This plot is also discovered by Pym, and O'Neill flees to the Continent. The English and Scotch armies are disbanded (6 Aug.).

An Act declaring ship-money illegal (16 Car. I., c. 14), and

* The Act was violated by the Long Parliament itself, and was repealed in 1664.

† The well-known lyric poet, author of the "Ballad on a Wedding," etc.

cancelling the records in Hampden's case in 1637-8, is passed, and assented to by Charles (7 Aug.).

The Commons impeach 13 bishops for voting for the Canons of 1640 (13 Aug.).

The Massacre of St. Ignatius (the Irish St. Bartholomew), a dreadful massacre of Protestants by Catholics, is begun in Ireland (St. Ignatius day, 23 Oct.). During the next few months from 12,000 to 40,000 Protestants (men, women, and children) are estimated to have been butchered or hunted to death.*

The Commons, by a vote of 159 to 148, pass "the Grand Remonstrance" (22 Nov.). It contains 206 clauses, and recites the history of Charles's misgovernment; describes the abuses abolished and the reforms made by parliament; refers to obstructions to reform in the shape of evil counsellors, army plots, and the Irish rebellion; and specifies the reforms still demanded. It is presented to the king (1 Dec.), and he replies to it (23 Dec.).

Coffee is first brought to England by Nathaniel Canopus, a Cretan, a student at Baliol College, Oxford.

1642. Charles, fearing that the parliamentary leaders intend to impeach the queen, impeaches "the Five Members" of the Commons (John Pym, John Hampden, Denzil Holles, Sir Arthur Haselrig, and William Strode), and Lord Kimbolton, of the Lords, for treason (3 Jan.). With a guard of 400 he goes to Westminster (4 Jan.) to arrest them, but they have been warned by Lady Carlisle, and have taken refuge in London. The Commons adjourn till the 11th, appointing a committee to meet at Grocers' Hall, London, in the meantime; and the committee declares the king's proceedings illegal. Charles, baffled, leaves London (10 Jan.) and prepares for war. He sends the queen to Holland with the crown jewels, to raise money on them for supplies and arms (Feb.). Parliament passes a bill conferring on itself the control of the militia; Charles, at Newmarket, refuses his assent (1 Mar.). Charles goes to Hull, where the arms and ammunition of the northern army are stored, and demands their delivery up to him. At the instance of parliament, the commander, Sir John Hotham, refuses (23 Ap.). Charles rejects proposals of peace (2 June), and parliament puts the Militia Bill into force, and both sides raise troops. Charles raises his standard at Nottingham (22

* This Irish massacre of St. Ignatius, like the French massacre of St. Bartholomew, received the papal blessing. In 1643 Pope Urban VIII. issued a bull promising absolution to all who joined in rooting out the English heretics.

Aug. The parliamentary army, under Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, leaves London (9 Sep.) Charles makes Shrewsbury his headquarters (20 Sep.).

The Civil War is commenced by the capture of Worcester (23 Sep.) by Prince Rupert.*

The first battle of the Civil War is fought at Edgehill (23 Oct.), near Kington in Warwickshire, the royalists under the king and Prince Rupert, the parliamentarians under Essex. The result is indecisive, but the advantage is with the royalists, who capture Banbury, and occupy Oxford (26 Oct.) without opposition. Essex retires to Warwick.

The royalists under Rupert defeat the parliamentarians under Denzil Holles at Brentford (12 Nov.), and capture 1500 prisoners and 11 cannon; Holles receives reinforcements, and the royalists retire into winter-quarters at Oxford (29 Nov.).

Sir Thomas Browne publishes his "Religio Medici."

1643. The Cornish royalists, under Sir Ralph Hopton, defeat the parliamentarians at Bradock Down (19 Jan.).

Negotiations for peace are carried on (30 Jan.-15 Ap.), but without success. Charles's queen, Henrietta Maria, lands at Burlington in Yorkshire (22 Feb.), with arms obtained by means of the crown jewels.

James Compton, Earl of Northampton, defeats the parliamentarians at Hopton Heath, near Stafford (19 Mar.).

John Hampden is wounded (18 June) in a skirmish with Rupert's cavalry at Chalgrove Field (about 22 miles E. of Oxford), and dies (24 June).

Sir John Hotham, commander of Hull, and his son are arrested (29 June) on a charge of plotting to give up Hull to the royalists. Lord Fairfax is made commander of Hull.

The parliamentarians under Fairfax are defeated at Atherton Moor or Adwalton in Lancashire (30 June), by the royalists under the Earl of Newcastle, who captures Bradford, 4 miles from Atherton. Fairfax retires to Hull, and is there besieged by Newcastle (2 Sep.-10 Oct.); Fairfax breaks out of Hull (10 Oct.), and defeats Newcastle. His son, Sir Thomas Fairfax, having left Hull with some cavalry and joined Cromwell in Lincolnshire, the combined forces defeat the royalists at Winceby (12 Oct.).

In the west the parliamentarians under Lord Stamford are defeated at Stratton Hill in Cornwall (16 May), by the Cornish royalists under Sir Ralph Hopton, 1700 prisoners, 13 guns, and all the baggage and stores being captured. Parliament

* Third son of Frederick V., Elector Palatine, and Elizabeth, daughter of James I. He was born in 1619.

sends Sir William Waller thither to re-establish affairs, but he is defeated at Lansdown, near Bath (5 July), by Hopton and Prince Maurice ; and again at Roundway Down, near Devizes (13 July), by Lord Wilmot, and his whole army is destroyed. Rupert captures Bristol (27 July). Charles I., instead of marching on London with his victorious army, lays siege to Gloucester (10 Aug.) ; Essex, with 12,000 men, marches from London, relieves Gloucester (6 Sep.), returns towards London, but is met by Charles at Newbury in Berkshire (20 Sep.), and after a hard but indecisive battle, marches on to Reading (21 Sep.), and the king retires to Oxford. Many Irish Catholics come to England to assist Charles I.

Parliament enters into an alliance with the Scotch (23 Sep.), who, on condition of parliament accepting the Solemn League and Covenant, agree to come to its aid. The condition is performed (25 Sept.) ; the Scotch set on foot an army of 22,000 men under Lord Leven ; and the management of the war is entrusted to a "Committee of the Two Nations."

Parliament convokes the Westminster Assembly of divines (12 June), to consider the condition of the Church, and the reform of its liturgy, discipline, and government. It is prohibited by proclamation of Charles I. (22 June), but meets (1 July). It consists of 120 divines and 30 lay assessors. The majority are Presbyterians ; and their influence is increased after the acceptance of the Covenant, when a number of commissioners of the General Assembly of the Scotch Church are admitted to it (25 Sep.). It sits till 1647.

John Pym, statesman, dies in London (8 Dec.), aged 59.

1644. A royalist army of Catholics from Ireland, under Lord Byron, lands in Wales, but is defeated by the parliamentarians, under Sir Thomas Fairfax, at Nantwich in Cheshire (Jan.). The Scotch army enters England (25 Jan.), and the royalists, under Newcastle, fall back on York, which is then besieged by the parliamentarians.

The parliamentarians, under Sir Wm. Waller, obtain an advantage over the royalists under the Earl of Brentford and Hopton at Alresford or Cheriton Downs in Hampshire (27 Mar.), but Waller's losses prevent him from following it up.

Charles I. defeats Waller at Cropredy Bridge, near Banbury in Oxfordshire (29 June), and goes to Oxford. Waller's army disbands, and he returns to London.

Rupert relieves York and effects a junction with Newcastle ; Manchester and Cromwell also effect a junction in Yorkshire with Lord Fairfax and his son Sir Thomas. The two armies meet at Marston Moor, near York (2 July), and the royalists

are completely defeated ; Rupert is left with only 4000 or 5000 troops, and Newcastle retires to the continent. The parliamentarians capture York and Newcastle, and complete the conquest of the North of England.

Essex, being hemmed in by the king's troops in Cornwall, escapes by sea to Plymouth ; but his infantry under Philip Skippon surrender (1 Sep.). Charles marches towards Oxfordshire, but is met by the parliamentarians, under Manchester, Waller, and Cromwell, in the second battle of Newbury in Berkshire (27 Oct.), which proves as indecisive as the first. The king is worsted, but marches off unmolested to Wallingford and Oxford ; and 12 days later carries off without molestation his artillery and baggage from Donnington Castle. Cromwell blames Manchester for his supineness, and they quarrel in consequence. Cromwell is an Independent and Manchester a Presbyterian, and their quarrel is the commencement of a struggle between these two parties.

John Milton (now 36) publishes his famous "Areopagtica.

The Commons pass (19 Dec.) a "Self-denying Ordinance," prohibiting members of either House from holding commands in the army ; it is rejected by the Lords.

1645. Archbishop Laud is beheaded (10 Jan.), aged 71.

The Commons pass a scheme for remodelling the army (28 Jan.) ; this "New Model," as it is called, passes the Lords (15 Feb.). The Commons then pass a second Self-denying Ordinance, providing that all members of parliament shall vacate office, whether civil or military, within 40 days, but not prohibiting them from re-election ; it passes the Lords (3 Ap.). Its passage is a triumph for the Independents. Essex has already resigned his command ; and Sir Thomas Fairfax has been appointed in his stead (21 Jan.). Cromwell is re-appointed at the expiration of each 40 days, as Lieutenant-General to Fairfax.

Fruitless negotiations for peace are made with the king at Uxbridge (30 Jan.-22 Feb.). Charles relieves Chester (15 May), and captures Leicester (31 May).

The newly-modelled parliamentary army, under Sir Thomas Fairfax and Cromwell, takes the field (May), and completely defeats the royalists, under Charles and Rupert, near Naseby in Leicestershire (14 June), capturing 5000 prisoners, all their guns and baggage, and Charles's private correspondence. Charles takes refuge in Wales, and tries to raise another army. Fairfax twice raises the siege of Taunton in Somerset (11 May, 3 July) ; defeats George Goring* at Langport (10

*Afterwards Earl of Norwich.

July), and captures Bridgewater, Bristol, Tiverton, and other royalist strongholds.

Charles I., having raised forces, advances to relieve Chester, but his troops, under Sir Marmaduke Langdale, are defeated near that city, at Rowton Heath (23 Sep.), by the parliamentarians under Sir W. Brereton and Col. Poyntz, with a loss of 1000 prisoners. Charles shuts himself up in Oxford (5 Nov.).

The Scotch royalists under Montrose are crushingly defeated at Philiphaugh, near Selkirk (13 Sep.), by the Covenanters under David Leslie; Montrose escapes with a small force; the rest are cut to pieces. This defeat and that at Naseby practically end the Civil War in favor of the Parliamentarians and Covenanters.

1646. Chester surrenders to the parliamentarians (3 Feb.). Fairfax defeats the royalists under Hopton at Torrington in Devon (16 Feb.), and completes the conquest of the West.

Charles I. leaves Oxford in disguise (26 Ap.), and delivers himself up to the Scots near Newark in Nottinghamshire (5 May). The royalists surrender Oxford (24 June) and Raglan Castle (19 Aug.), and the Civil War comes to an end.

1647. The Scotch deliver up Charles I. at Newcastle to the parliamentary commissioners (30 Jan.), receiving in return £400,000 as payment for their expenses in the war. The Scotch army retires beyond the Tweed (3 Feb.). Charles is taken to Holmby in Northamptonshire.

The Presbyterian leaders in parliament wish to impose uniformity in religion, and require the army to disband without payment of its arrears. The army is mainly Independent, and having fought for religious as well as civil liberty, objects to both proposals; in consequence a dispute arises between parliament and the army. Joyce, a cornet in the army, with 500 troopers, seizes Charles at Holmby House (4 June), and takes him to Childersley, near Cambridge. The army then marches on London, and expels 11 of the Presbyterian leaders from parliament (7 Aug.). Charles is taken to Hampton Court (16 Aug.), but escapes (11 Nov.), goes to Carisbrook in the Isle of Wight (14 Nov.), and opens negotiations with parliament.

The Scotch members of the Westminster Assembly retire, and its main business comes to an end. It has framed the Westminster Confession of Faith, and the Longer and Shorter Catechisms, which have ever since been the authoritative expositions of British Presbyterianism. It has also superseded the Prayer-Book by the "Directory of Public Worship." A few members continue to meet for business until 1653, when, on

Cromwell's dissolution of the Long Parliament they cease attending without formal dissolution.

About this date, George Fox, a young man of 23, begins preaching, and originates the Society of Friends or Quakers.*

1648. A reaction takes place in Charles's favor; the royalists, Presbyterians, and the Scotch side with him against the Independents and the army, under Fairfax and Cromwell. A rising takes place in Kent (23 May), under Lord Arthur Capel and George Goring, but Fairfax defeats the royalists under Capel at Maidstone in Kent (1 June), and captures Colchester in Essex from them (28 Aug.). Capel and Goring surrender and are sent to the Tower.

Col. Poyer, a Presbyterian, declares for Charles I. at Pembroke in south Wales (Mar.), but is defeated by Cromwell, who captures Pembroke (11 July). The Scotch, under the Duke of Hamilton, invade England (5 July); but Cromwell defeats them at Preston in Lancashire (17 Aug.), at Wigan (18 Aug.), and at Warrington (19 Aug.); and Hamilton is taken prisoner at Uttoxeter (20 or 25 Aug.). Cromwell enters Scotland (20 Sep.), makes peace with Argyll (22 Sep.), and occupies Berwick (30 Sep.) and Carlisle.

The Earl of Holland appears in arms for Charles (July), but is taken prisoner at St. Neots in Huntingdon (10 July).

By direction of the army Charles I. is seized at Carisbrooke and removed to Hurst Castle (30 Nov.). The army occupies London (2 Dec.). Parliament decides (5 Dec.) that the king's answers to their proposals offer a foundation for peace. The army, however, has determined to bring the king to trial, and the regiments of Col. Thomas Pride, Hewson, and Hardress Waller surround the House of Commons (6, 7 Dec.), and by what is known as "Pride's Purge," exclude 96 Presbyterians from entering, 47 of them being arrested for resisting. The House, now reduced to 78 members, and christened "the Rump Parliament," votes (23 Dec.) that the king shall be tried on a charge of treason against the people.

1649. Charles I. is tried publicly at Westminster Hall (20-27 Jan.) before a special court, nominated by the "Rump," composed of about 80 members or judges, including Cromwell and Ireton. John Bradshaw, Cromwell's cousin, presides. Charles is found guilty of having endeavored to overturn the liberties of the people, and of being a tyrant, traitor, and murderer;

*The name Quakers was given to the Society in 1650 by Justice Bennet, of Derby, because Fox admonished him and the others present to "quake" at the word of the Lord.

condemned to death (27 Jan.) ; and beheaded (30 Jan.) at Whitehall. He is buried at Windsor (8 Feb.).

The Duke of Hamilton escapes (30 Jan.), but is retaken.

Prince Charles, the late king's eldest son, who is at the Hague in Holland, assumes the title of king, and is proclaimed at Edinburgh as King of Scotland (3 Feb.).

The Rump votes (6 Feb.) that the House of Peers "is useless, dangerous, and ought to be abolished ;" and (7 Feb.) that the office of king ought to be abolished : and it passes Acts (17 Mar.) abolishing both, and declaring the House of Commons to be the supreme power of the nation. The executive power is placed in a Council of State of 41 members, to hold office for a year. The House of Commons, by the readmission of some of the excluded members, and the filling of vacancies, is raised to about 150 members. The council appoints Milton (15 Mar.) its secretary for foreign tongues ; he holds office for ten years.

The Duke of Hamilton and Lords Holland and Capel are tried and executed (9 Mar.) for complicity in the second Civil War. Goring is also found guilty by the Commons, but saved from execution by the casting vote of the Speaker, and pardoned (Mar.).

Fairfax and Cromwell suppress mutinies of Levellers in London, under Lockyer, who is shot (25 Ap.) ; and at Burford in Oxfordshire, where Cornet Thompson and two corporals are shot (14 May).

The Commons pass an Act (19 May) declaring and constituting the people of England a Commonwealth and free State.

Cromwell, having been appointed (15 Mar.) commander of the army destined for the conquest of the royalists of Ireland, who have declared for Prince Charles, and also to exact vengeance for the Massacre of St. Ignatius (see 1641), leaves London (10 July) ; lands in Dublin with about 16,000 men (15 Aug.) ; storms Drogheda (10-11 Sep.) and massacres the garrison (12 Sep.) ; captures Trim, Dundalk, Arklow, and Enniscorthy ; storms Wexford (9 Oct) and massacres the garrison ; captures Ross (19 Oct.), and completes the conquest of Leinster, and nearly all the south of Ireland except Waterford.

The acting of plays is prohibited. The prohibition remains in force till the Restoration (1660).

1650. Cromwell captures Kilkenny (28 Mar.) and Clonmell (9 May) ; but is recalled to London, Ireton being left as Lord-Deputy. Cromwell arrives in London (31 May).

The Scotch royalists under the Marquis of Montrose are defeated by the Covenanters at Corbiésdale in Ross-shire

(27 Ap.), and Montrose is taken prisoner, brought to Edinburgh (May), and executed (21 May). Prince Charles comes to Scotland (16 June), is proclaimed king (15 July), and takes the Covenant (16 Aug.).

Cromwell, having been made Captain-General (26 June), enters Scotland with 16,000 men (16 July), and defeats the Scots under David Leslie at Dunbar (3 Sep.), inflicting a loss of 3000 slain and 10,000 prisoners; he then takes Edinburgh and Leith, and conquers the country south of the Forth.

The first coffee-house in England is opened in Oxford, by Jacobs, a Jew.

1651. Prince Charles is crowned at Scone as King of Scotland (1 Jan.).

Admiral Robert Blake destroys the royalist fleet under Prince Rupert in Malaga harbor, Spain (Jan.).

Prince Charles invades England, takes Carlisle, is there proclaimed king (Aug.), and advances south. Cromwell, leaving George Monk with 5000 men in Scotland, follows Charles and completely defeats him at Worcester (3 Sep.); David Leslie, Charles's general, is taken prisoner and sent to the Tower, where he is confined till the Restoration in 1660. Charles escapes to France (Oct.). Monk storms Dundee (1 Sep.), and completes the conquest of Scotland.

Friendly relations having been broken off with Holland, parliament, with a view to striking a blow at the Dutch carrying trade, passes the Navigation Act (9 Oct.), forbidding the importation of goods into England except in English ships, or those of the nation producing the goods.

Ireton captures Limerick in Ireland (23 Oct.), but dies there of the plague (15 Nov.), aged 41. He is succeeded in the command by Edmund Ludlow (Nov.).

Under Cromwell's pressure the Long Parliament fixes Nov., 1654, as the date of its own dissolution (18 Nov.).

Thomas Hobbes (now 63) publishes his "*Leviathan*."

William Harvey publishes his "*Exercitationes de generatione animalium*."

1652. Ireton is buried at Westminster Abbey (6 Feb.).

While negotiations for a settlement of differences are pending between England and Holland, the English fleet under Blake meets a Dutch fleet under Martin Van Tromp in the Straits of Dover, a battle ensues, and the Dutch are defeated (19 May); this action leads to a declaration of war (8 July). Blake again defeats Van Tromp in the Downs (18 Sep.). A Dutch fleet of 80 ships, under Van Tromp, defeats an English fleet of 40 in the Downs, after a terrible battle (29 Nov.).

1653. Blake defeats Van Tromp off Portsmouth (18–20 Feb.), capturing 11 men-of-war and 30 merchantmen.

Cromwell, with a body of soldiers, enters the House of Commons, and pointing to the mace with the words, "Take away that bauble," forcibly dissolves the Long Parliament (20 Ap.); he forms a Council of State of 13 persons (30 Ap.).

Blake again defeats Van Tromp, off North Foreland in Kent (3–4 June), sinking 11 ships and capturing 7. Blake falls ill, and temporarily retires from command. The English fleet under George Monk defeats Van Tromp off the coast of Holland (31 July), Van Tromp being slain and 30 men-of-war taken or sunk.

Cromwell and his council call (6 June) an Assembly of Nominees, 139 in number (England 122, Wales 6, Scotland 5, and Ireland 6). It is called "the Little Parliament," or "Barebone's Parliament," after a prominent member named Praise-God Barbon, or Barebones, a leatherseller of London. It sits (4 July–12 Dec.); reforms the administration of the law, relaxes imprisonment for debt, passes a Civil Marriage Act and an Act for the registration of births, marriages, and deaths, begins to codify the law and to abolish the Court of Chancery, and decides to abolish tithes and the power of patrons to present to benefices. The country becomes alarmed at its reforming zeal, and finally, dissentients being excluded by a company of soldiers, the remnant resign their power into the hands of Cromwell (12 Dec.). The council then installs Cromwell as Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland (16 Dec.), to govern with the aid of a permanent council, and a parliament of 400 members, to be summoned every three years, and not to be dissolved until it has sat five months.

1654. Peace is made with Holland (5 Ap.); and England, Holland, Denmark, the Hanseatic towns, and the Swiss provinces are included in a general Protestant alliance.

A royalist plot, headed by Vowell and Gerard, for the assassination of the Protector is discovered, and Vowell and Gerard are tried and hanged (10 July).

Cromwell's first parliament meets (3 Sep.); it claims to revise the constitution and to limit the Protector's powers.

The return of Jews to England is connived at by Cromwell; they had been banished since 1290.

1655. Cromwell's parliament proving recalcitrant, and doing no real work, he dissolves it (22 Jan.) after it has sat for 20 weeks, or 5 *lunar* months.

Anabaptist and royalists plots are hatched against Cromwell.

During the assizes at Salisbury the royalists, under Col. John Penruddock and Sir Joseph Wagstaff, rise in arms (11 Mar.), seize the judges, proclaim Charles II., and withdraw towards Cornwall. They are defeated at South Molton, Penruddock and Grove are beheaded, and others are sent to Barbadoes. To prevent similar plots in future, Cromwell divides England into 12 military districts (Aug.), governed by major-generals, the expenses being paid by a tax levied on the royalists.

An English fleet under Sir William Penn * and Venables conquers Jamaica (3 May) from the Spaniards.

Cromwell forces Savoy to restore the privileges of the Vaudois a Reformed sect, (19 Aug.) He makes a treaty of commerce with France (24 Oct.); and open war is declared against Spain. He suppresses the public service of the Church of England (Nov.). He appoints a Board of Trade (the first in England) to promote trade and navigation.

1656. At Cadiz Blake captures 2 galleons (Sep.) with treasure valued at 2,000,000 pieces of eight† (about £400,000); it is brought from Portsmouth to London in 38 wagons.

Cromwell calls another parliament (17 Sep.), which, after the exclusion of about 100 of the most violent of his enemies, proceeds to do real work in the way of framing a constitution; and Cromwell withdraws the arbitrary government of his major-generals.

1657. Plots are hatched (Jan.) between Col. Sexby, an Anabaptist and a Leveller, and Miles Sindercomb to assassinate the Protector by means of an infernal machine, or that failing, by setting fire to Whitehall, Cromwell's residence. Sindercomb is tried and condemned (9 Feb.), but dies in prison (13 Feb.).

Parliament passes the "Petition and Advice" (Mar.), consisting of 18 articles, and virtually restoring the old constitution by re-establishing a House of Lords and making Cromwell king. It is presented to him for acceptance (31 Mar.); after consideration, he rejects the title of king (8 May), but accepts the new constitution, and is installed as Protector (26 June), with legally defined powers.

Cromwell makes an alliance with Louis XIV. against Spain (Mar.), and sends an army of 6000 men to the Spanish Netherlands, where they capture Mardyke (Sep.).

Blake captures or destroys the whole Spanish fleet in the harbor of Santa Cruz, Teneriffe, one of the Canary Islands

* Father of William Penn, the founder of Pennsylvania.

† A piece of eight was a piastre, a coin of variable value, usually about a dollar.

(20 Ap.). On his way home he dies at sea (17 Aug.), while entering Plymouth Sound, and is buried in Westminster Abbey.

Col. Sexby circulates throughout England a pamphlet entitled "Killing no Murder,"* inciting people to rebellion and to kill the Protector; he is arrested when on the point of leaving England (Oct.); he dies soon afterwards in the Tower.

Tea begins to be used in England; the price is from £6 to £10 per pound.

William Harvey, the discoverer of the circulation of the blood, dies (3 June), aged 79.

1658. Cromwell summons the reconstructed parliament, the House of Lords consisting of 62 members nominated by himself. It meets (20 Jan.); the Commons include many of his enemies, who at once renew their old attacks upon him, and he dissolves parliament in anger (4 Feb.). During the short remainder of his life he governs absolutely.

The French and English armies, under Turenne, besiege Dunkirk in the Netherlands (May); defeat a Spanish relieving army under Don John and the Duke of York † (4 June); and Dunkirk surrenders (17 June), and is delivered up to the English in accordance with the treaty made with Louis XIV. in 1657. They hold it till 1662.

Cromwell falls ill of a fever (Aug.); his eldest and favorite daughter, Lady Claypole, dies (6 Aug.); and he dies (3 Sep.), aged 59; he is buried in Westminster Abbey (23 Nov.).

It is almost certain that he nominated no successor; but his secretary Thurloe and other officers spread a report that he had named his third but eldest surviving son Richard; and he is proclaimed Protector by the council (3 Sep.).

1659. Parliament assembles (29 Jan.), but under the pressure of force from Lambert, Fleetwood, Desborough, and other officers of the army, Richard is compelled to dissolve it (22 Ap.). The army then puts an end to Oliver Cromwell's constitution, and recalls the old republican remnant of the Long Parliament dissolved by Cromwell in 1653. Forty-two members assemble in triumph under Lenthall, their old Speaker (7 May); the authority of the new parliament is generally acknowledged; and Richard signs his abdication (25 May).

Parliament and the army quarrel; and the royalists in Cheshire, under Sir George Booth and Sir Thomas Middleton, rise against the new government, but are defeated by Lambert at Nantwich (19 Aug.). Lambert returns to London and ejects the parliament (13 Oct.). George Monk, com-

* Probably written by Captain Titus, a royalist.

† Charles I.'s second son, afterwards James II.





OLIVER CROMWELL.—P. 286.

mander of the English army in Scotland, refuses to acknowledge the government set up by the army in London, and enters England at the head of 7000 men (8 Dec.), crossing the Tweed at Coldstream. Lambert marches to Newcastle against him, but his troops desert, and he is made prisoner. The fleet, under Lawson, declares against the army and sails up the Thames; the London apprentices rise; and the army allows parliament to reassemble (26 Dec.).

John Bradshaw, President of the Court which tried Charles I., and Cromwell's cousin, dies (22 Nov.), aged 57; and is buried in Westminster Abbey.

1660. Monk, being joined by Lord Fairfax at York, marches to London; enters the city (3 Feb.); declares for a free parliament (10 Feb.); recalls the Long Parliament, including all the Presbyterian and other excluded members (21 Feb.), which resolves (22 Feb.) that a new parliament shall be summoned for the 25 Ap., passes the necessary Bill, and then dissolves itself (16 Mar.), thus finally coming constitutionally to an end.

Lambert is sent to the Tower (6 Mar.); he escapes (11 Ap.), but is defeated at Daventry and retaken (21 Ap.).

Monk, knowing the royalist feeling of the country, enters into negotiations (Ap.) with Prince Charles for his restoration on certain conditions; and Charles, in the "Declaration of Breda" (14 Ap.), evasively gives the required promises.

The Convention Parliament meets (25 Ap.), the Lords resuming their old seats; the Declaration of Breda is laid before both Houses (1 May), and accepted; and Charles II. is proclaimed king in London (8 May). He lands at Dover (25 May), is everywhere received with the greatest joy, and enters London in triumph (29 May) on his 30th birthday. Monk is made Duke of Albemarle (7 July). Richard Cromwell* and Edmund Ludlow† escape to the continent.

The regicides of Charles I. having been excepted from the Amnesty Act (12 Car. II. c. 11), 10 of them are executed (13-19 Oct.), 19 are imprisoned for life, and 19 take refuge in foreign countries. The legislation passed since the execution of Charles I. is annulled. The feudal tenure of land, however, which had been abolished during the Commonwealth, is reabolished (c. 24), the year 1660 being counted as the 12th of Charles II.'s reign. Parliament also re-establishes the Church of England. Charles dissolves parliament (29 Dec.).

* He remained in exile till 1680, when he returned to England, where he died in 1712, aged 86.

† He died at Vevay in Switzerland, 1693, aged 73.

John Bunyan is imprisoned (12 Nov.) in Bedford gaol for nonconformity; he remains there till Jan., 1672, writing his "Pilgrim's Progress" while in prison.

Thomas Betterton (now 25), the first great tragic actor in England, begins to act about this date, when the performance of plays is again permitted.

1661. The remains of Cromwell, Ireton, and Bradshaw are removed from Westminster Abbey, hanged at Tyburn, beheaded, and burnt (30 Jan.). Admiral Blake's body is removed from Westminster Abbey to St. Margaret's Church.

Charles II. is crowned at Westminster Abbey (23 Ap.).

Charles calls (8 May) a new parliament ("The Pensionary Parliament"), which proves even more royalist than the preceding. It confirms the Acts of that parliament, and passes a series of strong reactionary measures, including the Corporation Act (13 Car. II. st. 2, c. 1), directed against Dissenters, providing that all officers of corporations shall take the oaths of supremacy, allegiance, and non-resistance; abjure the Covenant; and take the sacrament according to the Church of England.

The Duke of Argyll, the head of the Scotch Covenanters, is executed for treason (27 May).

1662. The Royal Society is incorporated (22 Ap.).

An Act (14 Car. II., c. I) is passed against the Quakers. The third Act of Uniformity (c. 4) is passed (19 May), ordering the Book of Common Prayer to be used in all churches, the clergy to assent to the same by St. Bartholomew's day (24 Aug.); and over 2000 ministers resign their preferments.

Charles II. marries Catharine of Braganza (20 May), daughter of John IV., late King of Portugal.

Lambert is brought to trial and condemned to death, but his sentence is commuted (June) to imprisonment for life.* Sir Henry Vane, after being kept a prisoner in the Scilly Isles for nearly two years, is sent to the Tower, tried as a regicide (2-6 June), and beheaded in London (14 June), aged about 50.

Charles II. sells Dunkirk and Mardyke to Louis XIV. for 5,000,000 livres (27 Oct.).

The plague ravages England and Wales; before its outbreak the population was estimated at 6,500,000.

1663. Charles II. having manifested a tendency towards Catholicism, parliament passes stronger laws against Popery.

Drury Lane Theatre, London, is opened (8 Ap.), the play being "The Humorous Lieutenant;" the first play-bill printed in England is issued. The performance began at 3.

* He died in Plymouth, 1683, aged 64.

The *Public Intelligencer*, the first newspaper published in England, is started by Sir Roger L'Estrange.

1663-4. Samuel Butler publishes "*Hudibras*," first part.

1664. The Conventicle Act (16 Car. II., c. 4) is passed, providing that any person over 16 present at any conventicle shall be liable to fine and imprisonment. A conventicle is defined as an assembly of more than five persons besides the family, meeting for worship not according to the Church of England.

The "Great Plague" breaks out in London (Dec.).

1665. The plague continues its ravages in London through the whole of this year, the deaths rising to 10,000 a week in Sep.; and it spreads to other parts of the country. The clergy of the Established Church and the physicians flee panic-stricken to the country, and the Nonconformist ministers undertake the duties of the absent clergy, preaching and visiting the sick.

War is declared against Holland (22 Feb.). The English fleet, under the Duke of York (the king's brother, afterwards James II.), defeats that of the Dutch, under Opdam, off Harwich in Essex (3 June), Opdam being blown up in his own vessel, with all his crew, and 32 of his ships taken or destroyed. The Earl of Sandwich attacks the Dutch fleet off Bergen in Holland (12 Aug.), and captures 12 men-of-war.

On account of the plague parliament is held at Oxford. It passes (Oct.) "the Five Mile Act" (17 Car. II., c. 2), providing that no Nonconforming clergyman shall (except when travelling) come within five miles of any corporate town or any place where he once ministered, or act as schoolmaster, unless he first takes the oath of non-resistance, and swears not to attempt any alteration in Church or State.

1666. Louis XIV. declares war against England (16 Jan.).

A three days' battle is fought in the Downs between the English fleet of 54 vessels, under Albemarle, and the Dutch fleet of 80 vessels under De Witt and De Ruyter (1-3 June); the English are defeated, and Monk retires with the remnant of his fleet (3 June). The English fleet, however, decisively defeats that of the Dutch, at the mouth of the Thames (25, 26 July), the Dutch losing 24 men-of-war and 4000 men.

The Great Plague nearly wears itself out by Sep., having slain from 68,000 to 100,000 victims in London alone.

London is almost destroyed by a great fire which rages for five days (2-6 Sep.). It began in a baker's house in Pudding Lane, and destroyed 89 churches, including St. Paul's Cathedral, a large number of public buildings, and 13,200 houses, laying waste 400 streets; the ruins covered 438 acres.

About 200,000 people, being rendered homeless, encamped in Islington and Highgate fields. The fire put a complete stop to the plague. An Act (18 & 19 Car. II. c. 8) is passed for the orderly rebuilding of London.

Mrs. Coleman, the earliest female performer on the English stage, makes her first appearance, as *Ianthe*, in Davenant's "Siege of Rhodes." Shortly afterwards Nell Gwynne also makes her *début* on the stage, at Drury Lane Theatre.

1667. Owing to the lavish extravagance of Charles II. and his government, the finances are exhausted, and there is no money to equip the fleet. The coast is consequently unprotected, and the Dutch fleet, under De Ruyter, sails up the Thames (June-July), burns the dockyard and shipping at Chatham, and blockades London.

The Peace of Breda is signed (21 July) between England, France, and Holland. The Earl of Clarendon, Charles's chief minister, is disgraced, resigns the great seal (30 Aug.), is impeached by the Commons (12 Nov.), and banished (29 Nov.).*

A new ministry is formed (Sep.), consisting of Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley-Cooper (Lord Shaftesbury), and Lauderdale, called afterwards the "Cabal," from the initials of the five ministers.

Milton publishes his "Paradise Lost."

Charles II. establishes horse-races at Newmarket, the first in England.

Christopher Wren builds the Royal Exchange.

1668. Sir William Temple, the English ambassador at Brussels, brings about "the Triple Alliance" (13 Jan., 25 Ap.) between England, France, and Sweden, against Louis XIV.

John Dryden is made poet-laureate.

1670. Charles II. charters the Hudson Bay Co. (2 May).

Charles II. signs with Louis XIV. the infamous secret Treaty of Dover (22 May), the two powers agreeing to declare war against Holland, Charles to help Louis to make good his claim to the Spanish succession, and to receive a pension from him of £300,000 a year. By the secret clauses (known only to Charles, Clifford, Arlington, and Arundel) Charles agrees to re-establish the Catholic religion in England, for which purpose Louis will supply him with an additional £200,000 a year and 6000 French troops.

Christopher Wren builds Temple Bar.

* His "History of the Grand Rebellion" was published in 1702. He died at Rouen (9 Dec., 1704), aged 66. His daughter Ann Hyde married (3 Sep., 1660) the Duke of York, afterwards James II.

1671. An English squadron, under Sir Edward Spragge (or Sprague), destroys 12 Algerine ships-of-war (10 May).

1671-7. Wren builds the Monument of London, erected to commemorate the great fire, at the spot where it broke out.

1672. Charles II. publishes his "Declaration of Indulgence" (15 Mar.), granting toleration to Roman Catholics against the various Acts of Uniformity.

England and France declare war against Holland (17 Mar.). The English fleet, under the Duke of York, after a terrible battle, defeats the Dutch fleet, under De Ruyter, off Solebay, or Southwold Bay, in Suffolk (28 May).

The National Debt begins by the closing of the Exchequer.

1673. Parliament passes an address (27 Feb.) begging the king to recall his Declaration of Indulgence; he complies (8 May.) It passes (29 Mar.) the Test Act (25 Car. II., c. 2), directing all government officers, military and civil, to receive the sacrament according to the Church of England, and to take oath against Transubstantiation.* This act completes the triumph of the opposition, or Country Party. and Clifford and Arlington (as Catholics) are compelled to retire from the ministry, and the Duke of York has to resign his office of High Admiral. The other members of the Cabal also retire, except Lauderdale, who continues to rule in Scotland. Sir Thomas Osborne (afterwards Lord Danby) becomes chief minister.

The English fleet, under Prince Rupert, twice defeats that of the Dutch, under D'Estrées and De Ruyter, off the coast of Holland (28 May, 4 June); but is driven off (11 Aug.).

1674. By threatening to withhold supplies the Commons compel Charles II. to make peace with Holland (9 Feb.).

Milton dies in London (8 Nov.), aged 65. He had been blind since 1652.

1675. Parliament desires Charles I. to join the Protestant League in Europe against France; and in order to silence parliament, Louis XIV., by a bribe of 500,000 crowns, induces Charles to prorogue parliament (22 Nov.) till Feb., 1677.

Danby attempts to govern despotically. The coffee-houses are much resorted to for political discussions, and in order to prevent the free and sometimes seditious language used there, they are ordered to be closed (29 Dec.). This raises a great outcry, and they are allowed to be reopened under restrictions.

Charles II. founds Greenwich Observatory (10 Aug.).

Sir Christopher Wren begins the erection of St. Paul's Cathedral, London; it is finished in 1710.

* Not repealed till 9 May, 1828 (9 Geo. IV., c. 17).

1676. In return for a pension paid him by Louis XIV., Charles II., with the connivance of Danby and Lauderdale, makes a secret treaty with Louis (17 Feb.), agreeing not to enter into any treaty with any other power without his consent, and to prorogue parliament if it should desire such a treaty.

1677. Parliament meets (15 Feb.), and the Duke of Buckingham and Lords Shaftesbury, Salisbury, and Wharton denounce the long prorogation as illegal; whereupon they are sent to the Tower (17 Feb.), and kept there for over a year. Parliament demands that, in order to save the Netherlands, war be declared against France; but Charles II., in consideration of the promise of a further bribe of 2,000,000 crowns from Louis XIV., prorogues parliament till Ap., 1678.

Mary (afterwards queen), the eldest daughter of the Duke of York (afterwards James II.), and niece of Charles II., is married (4 Nov.) to William, Prince of Orange, the head of the Protestant interest in Europe. Louis XIV., deeming this an act of treachery towards him, refuses the promised subsidy to Charles, who, in revenge, at once summons parliament to meet in Feb. instead of Ap. Louis thereupon intrigues with the opposition or Country Party, some of whom receive sums of money (between £300 and £500) from him.

An Act (29 Car. II., c. 7) is passed for the better observance of the Lord's Day; also one (c. 9) abolishing the death penalty for heresy.

1678. Charles II. collects an army of 20,000, ostensibly to help Holland against France; but parliament, when it meets (Feb.), dreading that it may be used for purposes of despotism, demands that it be disbanded. Charles thereupon makes a secret treaty with Louis (17 May), agreeing, on receipt of 6,000,000 livres, to remain neutral if Holland refuses reasonable terms of peace. He thereupon mediates, and Holland, by the treaty of Nimeguen, makes peace with France (10 Aug.).

Titus Oates, an English clergyman who has been forced to give up his living on account of a charge of perjury, informs Charles II. of an alleged "Popish Plot" (13 Aug.). He deposes (28 Sep.) before a magistrate that the Catholics have entered into a plot to rise, and with the assistance of a French army, to perpetrate a general massacre of Protestants, murder the king, and invade Ireland. Sir Edmund Berry Godfrey, the magistrate who took the deposition, is murdered at Primrose Hill, near London (12 Oct.), and a universal panic seizes the nation. Parliament meets (21 Oct.), and the Commons resolve "that there hath been, and still is, a damnable and hellish plot, carried on by papist

recusants for assassinating the king, the subverting the government, and for rooting out the Protestant religion." An Act (30 Car. II., st. 2, c. 1) is passed (30 Nov.) "for disabling papists from sitting in either House of Parliament." On the evidence of Oates, Bedloe, and others, many leading Catholics, including 5 peers, are convicted and executed or imprisoned, Chief-Justice Scroggs shamelessly upholding the false stories of the informers. Oates is rewarded with a pension of £900 a year and lodgings at Whitehall. He dresses like a bishop, and styles himself "the Saviour of the Nation."

Louis XIV., having no further need of Charles II., refuses to pay the subsidy promised by the secret treaty, and makes the treaty known. Parliament thereupon impeaches Danby (21 Dec.), who pleads that he acted by the king's direct order; and Charles prorogues parliament (30 Dec.).

John Bunyan publishes "Pilgrim's Progress," first part.

1679. In order to save Danby, Charles II. dissolves parliament (24 Jan.), which has been in existence for 18 years. The new parliament meets (6 Mar.). The impeachment of Danby is resumed; the king pardons him, but the Commons hold that the pardon is invalid, and the modern constitutional theory is established that a minister is responsible for his acts; and Danby is sent to the Tower (16 Ap.). The Habeas Corpus Act (31 Car. II., c. 2) is passed (27 May), a statute next in importance to Magna Carta. It provides that any judge, at any time, shall be obliged to issue the old common law writ of Habeas Corpus, in favor of any one imprisoned, ordering the gaoler or other person detaining the prisoner to bring him before the court, for the purpose of trying the question whether his imprisonment or detention is lawful. The Act also forbids imprisonment out of England. The Commons bring in the Exclusion Bill (Mar.), excluding Charles's brother James from the throne as a Catholic. Before it passes, Charles dissolves parliament (12 July).

The Covenanters or Conventiclers of Scotland, having risen in arms against Charles II., are defeated at Bothwell Bridge in Lanarkshire (22 June), by the royal troops under Monmouth.*

Prosecutions arising out of the pretended Popish Plot are continued throughout the year, and 8 priests, 5 Jesuits, and one lawyer are condemned on the flimsiest evidence, and executed (June). Four others die in prison.

The new parliament meets (17 Oct.), but before doing any business it is prorogued by Charles for a year. In the

* A natural son of Charles II. by Lucy Walters, born at Rotterdam in 1649.

meantime party spirit runs high. The opposition or Country Party (now called Whigs, a name applied to the western Covenanters of Scotland), instigated by Shaftesbury, their leader, send petitions from all parts of the country praying the king to assemble parliament. The loyalists, or Tories as they are now called (a name taken from the Irish outlaws), or Abhor-rers (so named from the word used in their addresses) send in counter-addresses, expressing "abhorrence" of the petitions.

Thomas Dangerfield, in imitation of Oates and Bedloe, reveals (23 Oct.) an alleged plot to murder the Duke of York. As some papers relating to it were discovered in a meal-tub, the affair is known as the "Meal-Tub Plot." The persons accused by Dangerfield are tried but acquitted.

Thomas Hobbes, the philosopher, dies (4 Dec.), aged 91.

1680. Sir George Wakeman, the queen's physician, is accused by Oates of complicity in the Popish plot, but the judges, rendered cautious by the high station of the accused, intimate that the evidence is unworthy of credit; and he and three others are acquitted (18 July). A reaction sets in against Oates and the other informers.

Parliament meets (21 Oct.); the Commons pass the Exclusion Bill (11 Nov.), but it is thrown out in the Lords (Nov.). The Commons refuse to grant supplies till it is passed.

William Howard, Viscount Stafford, an old man of 68, is impeached by the Commons before the Lords for treason as an accomplice in the alleged Popish Plot. is tried (30 Nov.–7 Dec.), condemned on the perjured evidence of Oates and his accomplices (7 Dec.), and beheaded (29 Dec.). He protests his innocence on the scaffold, the people believe him, and the tide finally turns against Oates, Shaftesbury, and the other upholders of the Popish plot.

Henry Purcell,* father of the English school of music, composes his cantata, "Dido and Æneas."

1681. The Commons still proving recalcitrant, Charles II. dissolves Parliament (18 Jan.). The new parliament (Charles's fifth) is summoned to meet at Oxford (21 Mar.), but proving no more tractable than the last, is also dissolved (28 Mar.), and during the rest of his reign Charles governs without one.

He charges Shaftesbury with treason, and sends him to the Tower (2 July), but the London sheriffs and jury are strong Whigs, and throw out the indictment (24 Nov.), and Shaftesbury is released (1 Dec.). Charles then procures the confiscation of the charters of London and other corporations under

* Born in 1658, at Westminster; appointed organist in Westminster Abbey in 1676, when only 18 years old.

writs of Quo Warranto, and issues new charters framed in a Tory spirit. He also rigorously enforces the laws against the Nonconformists. These proceedings, though strictly legal, drive the Whig party to fury, and lead to the Rye-House Plot.

1682. A plot to effect a change of government, in which Shaftesbury* is implicated, is discovered, and Shaftesbury flees from London (19 Oct.), and goes to Holland (18 Nov.), where he dies at Amsterdam (21 Jan., 1683), aged 61.

1682-90. Sir Christopher Wren builds the Chelsea Hospital for pensioned soldiers.

1683. Richard Rumbold, formerly an officer in Cromwell's regiment, and other violent Whigs form a plot (Mar.) to murder Charles II. and his brother, the Duke of York, at Rye House, at Broxbourne, near Hoddesdon in Hertfordshire, the residence of Rumbold, and thus secure the succession of the Duke of Monmouth to the throne. The plot is revealed by some of the conspirators (12 June); Rumbold flees; and Lord William Russell, Algernon Sidney, and Arther Capel, Earl of Essex, are arrested for complicity (June), and sent to the Tower. Essex is found dead in the Tower (13 July), probably by his own hand. Russell is tried at the Old Bailey (13 July), convicted on the evidence of one witness† (13 July), and beheaded at Lincoln's Inn Fields (21 July), aged 43. Sidney is tried (21 Nov.) before Chief-Justice Jeffreys; the evidence of one witness being insufficient, it is supplemented by an unpublished MS. work of Sidney's advocating republicanism; and he is condemned and beheaded (7 Dec.), aged about 61. His attainder was reversed in 1689.

1684. The Earl of Danby, who has been imprisoned in the Tower since 1679, is released on bail (12 Feb.).

Titus Oates is convicted of libelling the Duke of York, fined, and imprisoned.

1685. Charles II. dies at St. James (6 Feb.), aged 54; his brother James II. (a Catholic) succeeds him.

Isaac Newton announces his discovery of the law of gravitation (23 Feb.).

James II. appoints as lord treasurer and his chief minister his brother-in-law Lawrence Hyde, Earl of Rochester (son of the Earl of Clarendon). James collects customs without parliament, and accepts a subsidy of £37,000 from Louis XIV. of France. He publicly celebrates mass (Easter); opens negotiations with Pope Innocent XI.; and is crowned (23 Ap.).

* Satirized by Dryden under the name of Achitophel.

† The Act 25 Ed. III., st. 5, c. 2 (1352), made *two* witnesses necessary to convict in cases of treason.

His first parliament meets (19 May), proves strongly Tory, and passes an act (1 Jac. II., c. 1) granting him a revenue for life.

Titus Oates and Thomas Dangerfield are tried before Jeffreys. Oates is convicted of perjury, and is flogged from Newgate to Tyburn twice in two days, 1700 lashes being, it is said, inflicted on him on the second occasion, and he is sentenced to imprisonment for life (9 May). Dangerfield is convicted of libel in connection with the Meal-Tub Plot (30 May), and is pilloried and whipped (1 June). On his way back to prison he is brutally assaulted by a Catholic named Robert Francis, one of his eyes being knocked out, and he dies a few days later; Francis is hanged for the crime. Richard Baxter,* now 70 years old, is convicted before Jeffreys (30 May) on account of some words complaining of the persecution of Dissenters, and sentenced (29 June) to a fine of 500 marks and 18 months' imprisonment.

The Duke of Monmouth, the Earl of Argyll, and other exiled malcontents in Holland plan an invasion of England in order to remove James from the throne. Argyll sails (2 May), lands in Argyleshire, but owing to divisions among them, his followers disperse without striking a blow, and Argyll is arrested in the disguise of a carter, taken to Edinburgh, and beheaded under his former sentence (30 June).

Monmouth lands at Lyme Regis in Dorsetshire (11 June), issues a proclamation asserting his legitimacy; marches to, and is proclaimed king at, Taunton, Bridgewater, Wells, and Frome; but is defeated at Sedgemoor, near Bridgewater (6 July), by the royal troops under Feversham and Churchill, captured near Holtbridge in Dorsetshire (8 July), and executed on Tower-Hill (15 July). The rebellion is crushed with brutal cruelty by the troops under Col. Kirke—"Kirke's Lambs," as they were called from their regimental emblem. The "Bloody Assizes" follow (July-Sep.), conducted by Judge Jeffreys. In Dorchester 300 persons are tried, 292 sentenced to death, 74 being hanged; in Somersetshire 233 are hanged, drawn, and quartered; and 841 other prisoners are sent to the West Indies and the American colonies, to be sold as slaves or indented servants, their value being from £10 to £15 each. In reward for his bloody work Jeffreys is made chancellor (28 Sep.).

James II. claims the right to keep Catholics in his service, parliament opposes the claim as illegal, and James prorogues parliament (20 Nov.).

The *Dublin News Letter*, the first Irish newspaper, is started by Joseph Ray.

* The famous Nonconformist divine, author of "The Saints' Everlasting Rest," published in 1650.

The population of England and Wales is about 5,500,000.

1686. James II. sends Castlemaine as ambassador to Rome. He claims the right to dispense with the action of penal statutes in individual cases, and grants dispensations to converts to Romanism. In a sham case against Sir Edward Hales, a packed court of judges, headed by Chief-Justice Sir Edward Herbert, upholds his claim to the dispensing power (21 June); and the king at once fills a large number of offices and benefices with Catholics. He also forms a camp at Hounslow Heath (July), the officers being principally Catholics; receives a Papal nuncio (July); and restores the public profession of Romanism. He also restores the Ecclesiastical Commission (14 July), with Jeffreys at its head.

1687. James II. publishes a "Declaration of Indulgence" in Scotland (12 Feb.) and in England (4, 27 Ap.), suspending all penal laws against the Catholics. He again forms a camp at Hounslow Heath (June); dissolves parliament (2 July); receives the Papal nuncio at Windsor (3 July); and admits Father Petre to the council (Nov.).

Isaac Newton publishes the first part of his "Principia."

1688. James II. republishes his Declaration of Indulgence (25 Ap.), and orders the bishops to direct the clergy to read it from their pulpits during divine service on 20 and 27 May. Seven of the bishops draw up at Lambeth a petition against this order, and are arrested, tried for seditious libel before venal judges and a packed jury, but are nevertheless acquitted (30 June) amid great popular rejoicings. On the same day an invitation is sent to William, Prince of Orange, husband of James's eldest daughter Mary, to invade England.

James II., being warned (Sep.) of the intended invasion of William of Orange, seeks the advice of the bishops (Oct.). restores the charter of London, dissolves the Ecclesiastical Commission (8 Oct.), and dismisses his ministers, Father Petre and Sunderland. William of Orange lands at Torbay in Devon (5 Nov.), enters Exeter (8 Nov.), and is joined by many influential persons. James advances against him, but at Salisbury his army deserts him. William opens negotiations with him; James flees from Whitehall in disguise (11 Dec.), but is seized at Faversham in Kent by some sailors, and brought back to London (16 Dec.). William enters London (18 Dec.), James escapes to France (23 Dec.), and William summons a Convention (28 Dec.).

1689. William of Orange summons a meeting of the Estates of Scotland (7 Jan.). The English Convention meets (22 Jan.), declares the throne vacant, and passes the Declara-

tion of Rights (13 Feb.); this is accepted by William and Mary, and the crown is tendered to them, and they are proclaimed king and queen (13 Feb.) as William III. and Mary; and crowned (11 Ap.). The Scotch Estates proclaim them king and queen of Scotland (11 Ap.), and they accept the crown from the Scotch Commissioners (11 May).

The Irish Catholics, however, headed by Richard Talbot, Earl of Tyrconnel (the Lord-Deputy), declare in favor of James II. Tyrconnel raises a force of 100,000 men (Jan.), and becomes master of all Ireland, except Londonderry and Enniskillen, which declare for William III. James II., supported by Louis XIV., sails from France; lands at Kinsale, in Ireland (14 Mar.); is received by Tyrconnel at Cork; and the two enter Dublin in triumph (24 Mar.). James lays siege to Londonderry (19 Ap.), but failing to capture it, entrusts the siege to Maumont (a French general) and Richard Hamilton, and returns to Dublin and holds a parliament (4 May), consisting entirely of Catholics. This parliament, among its other infamies, passes an Act of Attainder, whereby nearly 3000 Protestants* are in cold blood condemned to death without a hearing, "a law," says Macaulay, "without a parallel in civilized countries."

The people of Londonderry, though they have devoured everything eatable—salt hides, horse-flesh, and rats—and are dying of hunger, still heroically hold out. At last, after the siege has lasted 105 days, an English squadron of 3 ships, under Col. Percy Kirke, sent by William, succeeds in getting supplies into the town (30 July), and the enemy burn their camp and raise the siege (1 Aug.), which Macaulay speaks of as "the most memorable in the annals of the British Isles." Col. Wolseley, having been sent by Kirke to take command in Enniskillen, defeats the Irish Catholics under Macarthy at Newtown Butler (2 Aug.), inflicting upon them a loss of 2000 men. Schomberg is sent by William to Ireland with troops to help the Protestants, and lands at Carrickfergus (13 Aug.).

William declares war against France (May).

* The list of those condemned to death included the great majority of the members of both Houses of Parliament, and comprised 2 archbishops, 7 bishops, 64 temporal peers, 83 clergymen, 85 knights and baronets, 2182 esquires, 22 ladies, etc. "In fact," says Dr. Ingram, "the whole Protestant peerage and gentry of Ireland were at one sweep condemned to death." By the terms of the Act the king was precluded from pardoning any one mentioned in it; and the Act was concealed for some months, *till the time limited for surrender had expired*, so that there should be no possibility of escape. Ingram's *History of the Legislative Union of Great Britain and Ireland*, pp. 9-10.

In Scotland, John Graham of Claverhouse, Viscount Dundee, declares for James II., raises troops in the Highlands, and defeats Hugh Mackay (William's general) at the Pass of Killiecrankie in Perthshire (27 July), but is himself slain. Mackay defeats the Highlanders at St. Johnstone's, near Perth (Aug.), and at Dunkeld (21 Aug.), and finishes the war.

Parliament meets (19 Oct.), and passes (Dec.) the Bill of Rights (1 W. & M., st. 2, c. 2), embodying the Declaration of Rights. It declares that the suspending and dispensing powers claimed by James are illegal; that the High Commission Court and all similar courts are illegal and pernicious; that the levying of money by the Crown without grant of parliament is illegal; that subjects have a right to petition the king, and that punishment for the same is illegal; that raising a standing army without the consent of parliament is against law; that the election of members of parliament ought to be free; that freedom of debate in parliament ought not to be questioned outside parliament itself; that excessive bail ought not to be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted; that juries ought to be impanelled, and that in cases of treason they ought to be freeholders; and that parliament ought to be held frequently, for the redress of grievances and the amendment and preservation of the law. It allows arms to be carried for defence. The Act also limits the crown to the heirs of William III. and Mary, and in default of such heirs, then to the Princess Anne and her issue. The 9th section excludes all Catholics, and all persons who shall marry a papist, from the throne, which shall descend to the next Protestant heir, every king and queen on the first day of their first parliament being required to take the Declaration provided by the Test Act (25 Car. II., c. 2), against transubstantiation, the adoration of the Virgin, and the mass.

John Locke publishes his "Letters on Toleration."

Thomas Sydenham, the first great English physician, dies in London (29 Dec.), aged 65. His "*Opera Medica*" were published posthumously in 1716.

The population of England and Wales is about 5,600,000; of which 1,600,000 belong to the towns, and 4,000,000 to the country. The yearly crop is about 80,000,000 bushels of cereals, of which only about 16,000,000 are wheat. The average weight of a sheep is about 28 pounds, and of an ox about 370 pounds. The horses are equally poor, the worst Arab being superior to the best English.

The population of Scotland is about 1,000,000, and of Ireland about 1,500,000.

CHAPTER X.

CONSTITUTIONAL ENGLAND.

1690. Louis XIV. of France sends 7000 troops to Ireland to assist James II. William III. lands at Carrickfergus with 30,000 men (14 June), defeats James at the Boyne (1 July), enters Dublin (6 July), and returns to England (6 Sep.). James and Tyrconnel escape to France.

1691. The English, under Godart van Ginkel, defeat the Irish Catholics, under St. Ruth, at Aughrim (12 July); Limerick surrenders (3 Oct.). Ginkel and the Irish general, Sarsfield, agree to certain "Articles of Limerick," covering political matters as well as military.*

1692. The "massacre of Glencoe" takes place (13 Feb.).

The French defeat William III. at Steenkirk (3 Aug.).

At the instance of James II., Louis XIV. of France prepares to invade England, but an Anglo-Dutch fleet defeats the French fleet off Cape La Hogue (19 May), and the invasion is abandoned.

1693. The French defeat William at Landen (19 July).

William III. and Mary convert the Placentia palace at Greenwich into a Royal Hospital for retired Seamen; Wren builds additions in 1696.

Queen Mary dies of small-pox (28 Dec.), aged 32; William III. becomes sole monarch.

1696. James II., at the French court, authorizes (Jan.) "the Assassination Plot" to murder William III. on 15 Feb.

* Irish historians call these Articles "The Treaty of Limerick," and Limerick "the City of the Violated Treaty." Ginkel was a mere general in the field, and had no authority to make a treaty dealing with the political affairs of Ireland and her relations with England; nor had Sarsfield any such authority on behalf of either Irish Catholics or Irish Protestants. Ginkel was a foreigner, unacquainted with constitutional parliamentary government, and these Articles would have repealed several statutes of the Irish and English parliaments, a thing which the king himself had no power to do. As a matter of course, therefore, the political provisions of this pretended treaty were at once formally repudiated by the Irish and English parliaments. The military part was strictly observed.

The plot is disclosed, and the conspirators are condemned (24 Mar.) and executed.

“Berwick’s Plot” is discovered and frustrated.

Thomas Aikenhead (aged 17) is hanged in Edinburgh for heresy, the last execution for heresy in Britain.

The population of England and Wales is about 5,500,000.

1697. The Peace of Ryswick is signed (10 Sep.).

1698. The first expedition of the Darien Co. sails from Leith (26 July) to Darien (2 Nov.), and founds “New Caledonia.”

1699. The Darien colonists nearly all die of disease and famine; the survivors sail for New York (June). Two other expeditions sail from Scotland (May, Aug.), and reach Darien (July, Nov.).

1700. Spain claims Darien; a Spanish squadron blockades the Scotch settlement (Feb.); the settlers surrender (30 Mar.), and sail to New York (11 Ap.).

The population of England and Wales is about 5,000,000.

1701. The Emperor Leopold I. declares war against France, and the War of the Spanish Succession begins.

The Act of Settlement (12 & 13 Will. III., c. 2) settles the throne, in default of heirs of William III. or of the Princess Anne, upon the Electress Sophia of Hanover (grand-daughter of James I.) and her heirs, being Protestants.

1702. William III. dies (8 Mar.), aged 51. Anne, second daughter of James II., is proclaimed queen (8 Mar.).

In alliance with Holland and the Emperor Leopold I., war is declared against France and Spain (4 May).

1704. Marlborough defeats the Bavarians at Schellenberg (2 July), and the French at Blenheim in Bavaria (13 Aug.). A British fleet under Rooke captures Gibraltar (23 July).

1706. The commissioners for the union of England and Scotland meet at Westminster (16 Ap.–22 July), and agree (22 July) to 25 Articles of Union.

Marlborough defeats the French at Ramilies (12 May).

1707. The Scotch parliament, by 110 to 69, passes the Act of Union with England (16 Jan.). The English parliament passes it (6 Anne, c. 11), 6 Mar.

Berwick defeats the British at Almanza (14 Ap.); Marlborough defeats the French at Oudenarde (11 July).

1709. Torture is abolished in Scotland (7 Anne, c. 21).

Marlborough and Eugene defeat the French at Malplaquet in the Netherlands (11 Sep.).

1711. Marlborough is charged with peculation (21 Dec.), and deprived of all his offices.

1713. Peace is made with France at Utrecht (31 Mar., 2 July).

1714. Queen Anne dies (1 Aug.), aged 50; George I., eldest son of the Electress Sophia, becomes king.

1715. The Riot Act (1 Geo. I., st. 2, c. 5) is passed (20 July).

The Earl of Mar declares for the Pretender and raises 12,000 troops in Scotland. Mackintosh, with 1500, invades England, but is defeated at Preston (13 Nov.). An indecisive battle is fought at Sheriffmuir in Perthshire (13 Nov.).

1716. The Pretender comes to Scotland (Jan.), but fails and returns to France (30 Jan.). Lords Derwentwater and Kenmure are executed for complicity in the rebellion (24 Feb.).

The Septennial Act (1 Geo. I., st. 2, c. 38) provides for the election of a new parliament every seven years.

1720. The "South Sea Bubble" bursts; a panic ensues; and multitudes are ruined.

The population of England and Wales is about 5,350,000.

1727. George I. dies (10 June); his son George II. is proclaimed king (26 June).

1739. Britain declares war against Spain (19 Oct.). Admiral Vernon captures Portobello (22 Nov.) and Chagre.

William Hogarth establishes "the Society of Incorporated Artists," the germ of the Royal Academy.

1740. The "War of the Austrian Succession," or the "Silesian War," or "King George's War" begins (Dec.).

The population of England and Wales is about 5,800,000.

1741. A British expedition of 35,000 men besieges Carthagena, South America (Mar.-Ap.), but is attacked by fever, and returns to Jamaica (Nov.), having lost 20,000 men.

1742. Sir Robert Walpole, premier for 20 years, resigns (11 Feb.). Lord Wilmington is made premier (17 Feb.).

1743. George II. defeats the French at Dettingen (27 June).

Wilmington dies (26 July); Sir Henry Pelham is made premier (12 Aug.); he holds office for over ten years.

1744. France declares war against Britain (31 Mar.).

1745. The British and allies, under the Duke of Cumberland, are defeated at Fontenoy (11 May).

Charles Edward, the Young Pretender, lands in Inverness shire (25 July), defeats the royal troops at Coltbrigg, and Preston Pans (21 Sep.), invades England (8 Nov.), enters Derby (4 Dec.), but retreats to Scotland.

1746. Prince Charles defeats the royal troops at Falkirk (23 Jan.); but is defeated by Cumberland at Culloden (16 Ap.), and the Jacobite rising is over. Charles escapes to France.

1748. The Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle closes the War of the Austrian Succession (18 Ap.).

1751. The Act 24 Geo. II., c. 23 introduces the "New Style;" the year to begin on 1 Jan. instead of 25 Mar.; the 3 Sep., 1752, to be reckoned 14 Sep., losing 11 days by which the calendar was in error.

1754. Pelham dies (6 Mar.); Newcastle becomes premier.

1756. Suraj-ud-Dowlah, Nawab of Bengal, captures Calcutta and Fort William, and puts 146 British prisoners in the "Black Hole," Calcutta (20 June), where 123 die in raving madness during the night, from heat, suffocation, and thirst.

The "Seven Years' War" begins (24 Aug.).

The Duke of Newcastle resigns (Nov.); the Duke of Devonshire is made premier.

1757. Robert Clive captures Fort William (Jan.), and defeats Suraj-ud-Dowlah at Plassy (23 June).

In Hanover the British agree to capitulate under the Convention of Kloster-Seven (26 July). The government repudiates the convention, and the British, under Ferdinand of Brunswick, drive the French back.

1758. The British defeat the French at Creveld (23 June).

1759. Ferdinand defeats the French at Minden (1 Aug.). Wolfe defeats the French under Montcalm, at Quebec (13 Sep.), both being slain; Quebec surrenders to the British (18 Sep.).

George II. dies (25 Oct.); his grandson George III. succeeds.

1761. Pitt resigns (5 Oct.), leaving Bute as premier.

1763. The Treaty of Paris is signed (10 Feb.) between France, Spain, Portugal, and Britain. Canada and Florida are ceded to Britain.

Bute resigns (8 Ap.); George Grenville becomes premier.

No. 45 of the *North Briton*, a paper started in 1762 by John Wilkes, M.P., and Churchill, the poet, contains a scurrilous attack on the government; Wilkes is sent to the Tower (Ap.), but released on *habeas corpus* (6 May). The Lords order his prosecution on account of an indecent book, "An Essay on Woman;" he goes to France, and is declared an outlaw.

1764. Wilkes is expelled from the Commons (19 Jan.).

Grenville proposes to tax the American Colonies (Mar.); the Sugar Act (4 Geo. III., c. 15.) is passed. The Colonies protest against the scheme.

1765. The American Stamp Act (5 Geo. III., c. 12) is passed (22 Mar.). The king dismisses Grenville (June), and makes the Marquis of Rockingham premier (10 July).

1766. The stamp and sugar duties are repealed (20 Mar.).

Rockingham retires (22 July); Pitt is made premier (30 July).

1767. Townshend's Act (7 Geo. III., c. 46) for raising £400,000 in America by duties on tea, glass, and paper is passed (29 June). It produces great discontent in the Colonies.

1768. John Wilkes returns from France (Feb.), and is elected M.P. for Middlesex (Mar.). He is outlawed, but fined and imprisoned, which causes a riot in London (10 May). Chatham resigns (12 Oct.), and Grafton becomes premier.

1769. Wilkes is expelled from the Commons (17 Feb.), but is re-elected for Middlesex a second and third time.

1770. Grafton resigns; Lord North is made premier (28 Jan.). His Act (10 Geo. III., c. 17) repeals all the American duties except that on tea.

Wilkes is released from prison (Ap.).

1771. Reporting the debates in parliament is allowed.

1772. The Act 12 Geo. III., c. 7 grants a drawback of 1s. per lb. on tea exported to the Colonies (3 June). The Colonial tea duty is 3*d.* per lb., the Colonists gaining 9*d.*

In the case of James Somersett, an American slave, Lord Mansfield decides (22 June) that slavery is not "allowed by the laws of England," so liberating 14,000 or 15,000 negroes in England who had been deemed slaves.

1773. The colonists in Boston, Mass., empty the cargoes of three tea-ships into the harbor (16 Dec.).

1774. North's "Boston Port Bill" is passed (28 Mar.). The Quebec Act (14 Geo., III., c. 83) gives a constitution to Canada.

The first Continental Congress, at Philadelphia (5 Sep.–26 Oct.), adopts a "Declaration of Colonial Rights," and orders military preparations to resist the British government.

1775. The first battle of the American War is fought at Lexington (19 Ap.); the British lose 270, the Colonists less than 100. At Bunker's Hill, near Boston (17 June), the British loss is over 1000; the Colonial about 450.

1776. The Third Continental Congress, after a tie vote, resolves (7 June) by a majority of one * that "the United Colonies are and ought to be free and independent States;" and "the Declaration of Independence" is signed (4 July).

1777. Gen. Burgoyne, with about 5000 British, surrenders to Gen. Gates at Saratoga (17 Oct.).

1778. France signs a defensive alliance with the U. S. (6 Feb.), and declares war against Britain (10 July).

*In order to present an appearance of unanimity to the outside world, the sessions of Congress were held in secret, only the results being made public.

The repeal of some of the penal laws against the Catholics offends the Scotch Protestants, who form Protestant Associations, with Lord George Gordon as leader. The agitation spreads to England.

1779. Spain declares war against Britain (16 June), and lays siege to Gibraltar.

1780. Rodney defeats a Spanish fleet off Cape St. Vincent (16 Jan.).

The Protestant agitation of 1778 culminates in the "No-Popery" or "Gordon Riots" in London, which is in the hands of a mob for five days (3-7 June). The riots are put down and the city saved from total destruction by the personal resolution of George III., who orders the military to act (7-8 June); and over 500 of the rioters are killed or wounded. Lord Gordon is sent to the Tower (9 June).

The first "Armed Neutrality," between Russia, Denmark, and Sweden (9 July, 1 Aug.), resists the right of search claimed by Britain. Holland negotiates (Sep.) with the U. S. for an alliance; Britain declares war against Holland (20 Dec.); and Holland joins the Armed Neutrality (24 Dec.).

1781. Lord Gordon is tried (5-6 Feb.) and acquitted.

Prussia (8 May) and Germany (9 Oct.) join the Armed Neutrality against Britain.

Lord Cornwallis, with 7000 British, surrenders to the combined American and French armies under Washington and Rochambeau, aided by a French fleet under De Grasse, at Yorktown, Va. (19 Oct.); this surrender virtually ends the war.

1782. North resigns (20 Mar.); Lord Rockingham is made premier (22 Mar.).

The Act 22 Geo., III. c. 53 grants independence to the Irish parliament (May).

Rockingham dies (1 July); Lord Shelburne (afterward Marquis of Lansdowne) is made premier (July).

The three years' siege of Gibraltar is raised by Gen. Elliott and Lord Howe (13 Sep.).

1783. Shelburne resigns (21 Feb.); the Duke of Portland is made premier (5 Ap.).

The Treaty of Versailles is signed between Britain, on the one side, and the U. S., France, Spain, and Holland, on the other (3 Sep.); Britain acknowledges the independence of the U. S.

George III. dismisses the Portland ministry (18 Dec.), and makes Pitt (now 24) premier.

1784. Pitt's Bill to establish commercial equality between Ireland and Britain is passed.

1785. At the instigation of Grattan, the Irish parliament

rejects Pitt's Act to establish commercial equality between Ireland and Britain (Aug.).

1787. Warren Hastings is impeached for maladministration and corrupt practices in India (May).

1788. An Act (28 Geo. III., c. 54) is passed to mitigate the horrors of the slave-trade.

Australia is first colonized, and Sidney founded.

1788-95. The trial of Warren Hastings goes on.

1789. The French Revolution begins (14 July).

1791. Pitt's "Canada Bill" (31 Geo. III., c. 31) divides Upper Canada from Lower, with separate constitutions (May).

1792. The French convention abolishes royalty (22 Sep.), and issues a "Decree of Fraternity" (19 Nov.), promising help to all nations desirous of liberty, which was virtually a declaration of war against the monarchies of Europe; it also issues orders to disregard all treaty obligations.

Revolutionary societies are formed, and riots break out (Nov.) in various places in Britain.

1793. Louis XVI. is guillotined (21 Jan.), an act which fills England with horror. The French ambassador is ordered to leave England (24 Jan.); France declares war against Britain, Spain, and Holland (1 Feb.), and invades Holland (Feb.). Marie Antoinette is guillotined (16 Oct.).

Russia and the U. S. make treaties with Britain, recognizing "the right of search."

1795. Warren Hastings is acquitted (23 Ap.).

An expedition of French *émigrés* sail from England (10 June) and land at Quiberon Bay in France (29 June), but are defeated by Hoche (20-21 July), and 700 prisoners are massacred in cold blood. Holland joins France.

1796. Spain joins France (July), and places her fleet at France's disposal. The French arrange with the Irish malcontents, under Theobald Wolfe Tone, for the conquest of Ireland and the invasion of England. A French expedition sails (15 Dec.) for Ireland, but is dispersed by a storm.

1797. A plan is formed for the invasion of England under cover of the combined French, Spanish, and Dutch fleets; but the British fleet, under Jervis and Nelson, defeats the Spanish off Cape St. Vincent (14 Feb.).

A Dutch fleet, prepared for the purpose of co-operating with the French in an invasion of Ireland, is defeated by Duncan, off Camperdown (11 Oct.).

Austria makes peace with France (17 Oct.); Britain is left without allies against France, Spain, and Holland.

1798. A horrible civil war breaks out in Ireland (23 May).

The insurgents are defeated at Vinegar Hill, Wexford (21 June). A French force lands in Mayo and defeats Lake at Castlebar (26 Aug.), but surrenders to Cornwallis at Ballinamuck (8 Sep.). A French fleet with reinforcements is defeated by Warren off the Irish coast (11 Oct.); Wolfe Tone is captured on board, taken to Ireland, tried, and condemned; but commits suicide (19 Nov.).

Napoleon conquers Egypt (July). Nelson defeats the French fleet in "the battle of the Nile" (2-3 Aug.). Pitt induces Austria and Russia to join Britain against France.

1799. The French conquer Italy. Napoleon invades Syria (17 Feb.), but is forced by Sir Sidney Smith to raise the siege of Acre (21 May), and returns to Egypt. Italy joins the coalition against France. Napoleon secretly leaves Egypt (22 Aug.), arrives in Paris (16 Oct.), abolishes the Directory (9 Nov.), and is elected First Consul (24 Dec.).

1800. The majority of the Irish people, both Catholic and Protestant, are in favor of union with Britain; and the Irish House of Commons, by 152 to 108, votes for it (21 Feb.). The British parliament passes (2 July) the "Act of Union" (39 & 40 Geo. III., c. 67), to take effect 1 Jan., 1801.

Russia deserts the coalition against France, and renews the Armed Neutrality against Britain (16 Dec.).

1801. Austria and France make peace at Luneville (9 Feb.); Britain is again left without allies against France and the Armed Neutrality.

Pitt prepares to bring in a Catholic Relief Bill; George III. declares that he "should hold any one who supported it as his personal enemy;" Pitt resigns (Mar.), and Henry Addington is made premier.

The British, under Abercromby, defeat the French at Alexandria (21 Mar.); Abercromby is mortally wounded. The French surrender (27 Aug.), and are allowed to return to France.

A British fleet under Parker and Nelson attacks the Danish fleet and batteries at Copenhagen (2 Ap.), and captures several prizes. Russia makes peace with Britain (June), and abandons the Armed Neutrality.

1802. The Treaty of Amiens is signed (25 Mar.) between Britain and France; Britain retains Ceylon and Trinidad. Fox goes to Paris, and has a political interview with Napoleon.

Robert Emmett sees Napoleon in Paris for the purpose of raising a rebellion in Ireland.

1803. Napoleon endeavors to stir up rebellion in Ireland; Britain sends an ultimatum to him; his answer is unsatisfactory; and Britain declares war (18 May). Napoleon arrests

about 12,000 English in France, and keeps them in prison for 11 years, till the peace.

Emmett returns to Ireland and instigates a rising; riots break out in Dublin, and Chief-Justice Kilwarden is brutally murdered (23 July); the riot is put down; Emmett, in disguise, is captured, tried, convicted, and hanged (20 Sep.).

1804. Addington resigns (26 Ap.); Pitt is made premier (12 May).

Napoleon proclaims himself emperor (18 May). Spain joins France, and Britain declares war against her (Dec.).

1805. Russia and Austria join Britain against Napoleon (Sep.). Napoleon prepares an immense armament at Boulogne to invade England and Ireland; but the covering Franco-Spanish fleet is intercepted by the British (23 July), and Napoleon breaks up camp, and invades Austria (Oct.). The British fleet, under Nelson, defeats the combined French and Spanish fleets, under Villeneuve, at Trafalgar (21 Oct.), Nelson being slain.

1806. The British capture Cape Colony from the Dutch (Jan.).

William Pitt dies (23 Jan.), aged 46; Lord Grenville becomes premier (Feb.).

The British defeat the French at Maida, Italy (4 July).

Napoleon defeats the Prussians at Jena (14 Oct.), enters Berlin in triumph (27 Oct.), and issues the "Berlin Decree" against Britain (21 Nov.).

1807. In reply to the Berlin Decree, Britain issues four Orders in Council (Jan.-Nov.).

George III., rather than concede Catholic emancipation, dismisses his ministry (18 Mar.), and makes the Duke of Portland premier (Ap.).

An Act (47 Geo. III., c. 36) is passed (25 Mar.), prohibiting the slave-trade.

Napoleon makes peace with Alexander I. at Tilsit (7 July). By secret articles they agree to divide Europe between them. These articles become known to the British government, and to prevent the Danish fleet from falling into the hands of Napoleon, a British fleet goes to Copenhagen (July), and demands its surrender till the close of the war. The demand is refused, Copenhagen is bombarded (2-5 Sep.), and the Danish fleet is surrendered (5 Sep.).

A French army occupies Spain (Oct.) and Portugal (Nov.).

1808. Napoleon makes his brother Joseph king of Spain (15 June); the Spaniards rise against the French, and make an alliance with England (July). British troops land in Portugal (1 Aug.), and "the Peninsular War" begins. Sir

Arthur Wellesley (afterwards Duke of Wellington) defeats the French at Rorica or Roliça (17 Aug.), and at Vimeira (21 Aug.). Wellesley is superseded by Sir Hugh Dalrymple, who agrees to the "Convention of Cintra" (30 Aug.), allowing the French army to return to France. Sir John Moore is made commander (6 Oct.), and advances to Salamanca (13 Nov.), but is forced to retreat (Dec.) before superior numbers under Napoleon.

1809. Napoleon returns to Paris (Jan.), leaving Soult in command in Spain; Soult is repulsed at Corunna (16 Jan.) by Sir John Moore, who is slain. The British troops return to England. Another British expedition is sent to Portugal, under Wellesley (Ap.), who defeats the French at Talavera in Spain (27-8 July). He constructs the lines of Torres Vedras.

A British expedition to Walcheren in Holland is unsuccessful (July-Dec.), thousands dying of malaria.

The Duke of Portland dies (30 Oct.); Spencer Perceval is made premier (31 Oct.).

1810. Wellington repulses the French at Busaco (29 Sep.), and retires behind the Torres Vedras lines (8 Oct.).

George III. becomes hopelessly insane (Nov.); George, Prince of Wales, is made regent.

1811. Graham defeats Soult at Barossa (5 Mar.). Massena, having for 5 months vainly tried to force the Torres Vedras lines, and lost 30,000 men, retreats (1 Mar.). Wellington follows and defeats him at Sabugal (3 Ap.) and Fuentes d'Onore (5 May). Beresford defeats Soult at Albuera (16 May).

Low wages and the high price of wheat (15s to 20s. a bushel) give rise to Luddite riots at Nottingham and other places.

1812. In Spain Wellington storms Ciudad Rodrigo (19 Jan.) and Badajos (6 Ap.).

Perceval is shot and killed by Bellingham, a lunatic (11 May); the Earl of Liverpool is made premier (June).

The U. S. declare war against Britain (18 June).

Wellington defeats the French at Salamanca (22 July).

1813. Wellington totally defeats the French at Vittoria (21 June); the French evacuate Madrid (27 June); and Wellington defeats Soult in a series of "battles of the Pyrenees" (25 July-2 Aug.), drives him across the Pyrenees, invades France (7 Oct.), and defeats him at the Nivelle (10 Nov.). Napoleon is defeated by the Austrians, Russians, and Prussians at Leipsic (16, 18, 19 Oct.); and the allies invade France (Nov.).

1814. Britain offers to treat for peace with the U. S. (6 Jan.); American commissioners go to Europe to negotiate (Feb.).

Wellington defeats Soult at Orthes (27 Feb.), Tarbes (20 Mar.), and Toulouse (10 Ap.). The allies enter Paris (31 Mar.); Napoleon abdicates (4 Ap.), and is sent to Elba (May). Louis XVIII. becomes King of France (3 May); and the Treaty of Paris is signed between France and the allies (30 May).

The Peace of Ghent is signed between Britain and the U. S. (24 Dec.).

1815. News of the Treaty of Ghent not having reached America, the British attack New Orleans (8 Jan.), but are repulsed with great loss by the Americans under Gen. Jackson.

Napoleon leaves Elba (26 Feb.), and enters Paris (20 Mar.). The allied powers sign a treaty against him (Mar.), and war begins in Belgium. Napoleon defeats the Prussians at Charleroi and Ligny (15, 16 June); the British under Picton repulse the French at Quatre Bras (16 June). The British and allies, under Wellington, and the Prussians, under Blucher, totally defeat Napoleon at Waterloo (Sunday, 18 June). He returns to Paris, abdicates (22 June), surrenders to Capt. Maitland, of H. M. S. *Bellerophon* (15 July), and is sent to St. Helena (8 Aug.). Louis XVIII. returns to Paris (8 July), and the Treaty of Paris is signed (20 Nov.).

1816. A British fleet under Lord Exmouth, as a punishment for piracy, bombards Algiers (27 Aug.), and the Dey makes terms.

1819. The Act 59 Geo. III., c. 78 provides for the resumption of specie payment, suspended since 1797.

A great reform meeting of over 50,000 people, held in Manchester (the "Peterloo Riot" or the "Manchester Massacre"), is dispersed by the military, 16 being killed and about 600 wounded (16 Aug.).

1820. George III. dies (29 Jan.), aged 81; his son George IV. succeeds.

The "Cato Street Conspiracy" to murder the ministers, set fire to London, seize the Bank, and proclaim a provisional government, is revealed; the conspirators are arrested (24, 25 Feb.), 5 are executed (1 May), and 5 transported for life.

Queen Caroline is tried for adultery before the lords (17 Aug.-10 Nov.), and virtually acquitted (10 Nov.).

1827. Lord Liverpool resigns through illness (Ap.); George Canning is made premier. He dies (8 Aug.); Lord Goderich (afterward Earl of Ripon) is made premier (Aug.).

A British, French, and Russian fleet, under Codrington, defeats the Turkish-Egyptian fleets at Navarino (20 Oct.).

1828. Goderich resigns (8 Jan.), and Wellington is made

premier (8 Jan.). The Act 9 Geo. IV., c. 17 repeals the Corporation and Test Acts (13 Car. II., st. 2, c. 1, 1661; and 25 Car. II., c. 2, 1673), and so permits Catholics and Dissenters to hold office. "Peel's Sliding-scale" of corn-duties is enacted (c. 60).

Daniel O'Connell is elected member for Clare (July), the first Catholic since 1690. Not being able to take the oaths, he cannot take his seat.

1829. The Catholic Emancipation Act (10 Geo. IV., c. 7), admitting Catholics to both Houses of Parliament and nearly all offices, is passed (13 Ap.). Daniel O'Connell is re-elected for Clare (30 July), and takes the new oath and his seat.

1830. George IV. dies (26 June), aged 67; his brother William IV. succeeds.

Wellington resigns (16 Nov.); the Whigs take office, with Lord Grey as premier (Nov.).

1832. The Reform Bills for England (2 & 3 Wm. IV., c. 45), Scotland (c. 65), and Ireland (c. 88) effect a great redistribution of seats, and greatly extend the franchise. Ireland gets 4 members in addition to the 100 fixed by the Act of Union. These Acts make the United Kingdom a really democratic country.

1833. The reformed parliament meets (29 Jan.). It passes an Act (3 & 4 Wm. IV., c. 73) for the emancipation of the slaves in the Colonies, taking effect 1 Aug., 1834, freeing 770,280 slaves, and granting £20,000,000 as compensation to their owners; also Lord Althorp's Factory Act (c. 103), introducing "half-time" for factory children, and making their education compulsory.

1834. O'Connell's motion for the repeal of the Union is rejected in the Commons by 485 majority (23 Ap.).

Grey resigns (9 July); Lord Melbourne is made premier (16 July). The Poor-Law (4 & 5 Wm. IV., c. 76) is passed. It greatly reduces pauperism, but leads to discontent, which soon takes the form of Chartism. Trades-unions greatly increase in number.

William IV. dismisses the Melbourne ministry (16 Nov.), and makes Wellington premier. Wellington sends for Sir Robert Peel, who is in Rome, and Peel is made premier (Dec.).

1835. Peel resigns (8 Ap.); Melbourne becomes premier.

1836. The Orange Clubs are dissolved; there were 145,000 Orangemen in England and 125,000 in Ireland.

1837. William IV. dies (20 June); Victoria becomes queen.

CHAPTER XI.

THE REIGN OF QUEEN VICTORIA: ENGLAND A DEMOCRACY.

1838. Slavery is abolished in India (1 Aug.).

The Chartists hold a great meeting at Birmingham (6 Aug.), and demand the "Six Points" of "the People's Charter"—Universal Suffrage, Vote by Ballot, Annual Parliaments, Payment of Members, the Abolition of the Property Qualification of Members, and Equal Electoral Districts.

The liability for tithes in Ireland is transferred from the tenant to the landlord (1 & 2 Vic., c. 109).

The Anti-Corn-Law Association is formed (24 Sep.).

1839. The first war with China begins (Ap.).

The Chartists' petition, with 1,250,000 signatures, is presented to the Commons (14 June). Chartist riots take place (15 July, 4 Nov.).

The first English settlements in New Zealand are made, and Wellington is founded.

1840. New Zealand is made a colony (Jan.).

Queen Victoria marries Prince Albert (10 Feb.).

1841. Melbourne resigns (30 Aug.); the Conservatives take office, with Peel as premier.

O'Connell renews his repeal agitation.

1842. The Afghans treacherously massacre 3849 British soldiers, and about 12,000 camp-followers in the Khoord-Cabul Pass (6-13 Jan.). The British, under Pollock and England, enter Afghanistan (Ap.), defeat the Afghans, enter Cabul (16 Sep.), make peace, and return to India (Oct.).

The Ashburton Treaty between Britain and the U. S. is signed (9 Aug.).

The peace of Nankin is signed with China (Dec.).

1843. O'Connell is arrested for sedition (14 Oct.).

1844. O'Connell is convicted (12 Feb.), and sentenced (24 May) to a year's imprisonment; on appeal the House of Lords reverses the judgment (4 Sep.).

1845. Maynooth College is endowed (8 & 9 Vic., c. 25).

The "Oregon Boundary" dispute leads to irritation between Britain and the U. S.

The Anti-Corn-Law agitation goes on; and Peel reforms the tariff in the direction of Free Trade.

1846. Peel's "Corn Law Importation Bill" (9 & 10 Vic., c. 22) almost extinguishes the duty on wheat (26 June); and the Anti-Corn-Law League dissolves (2 July).

On account of Peel's free-trade policy, the protectionist Conservatives, headed by Benjamin Disraeli, desert him; he is defeated, and resigns (29 June). The Whigs take office (July), with Lord John Russell as premier.

The rot almost destroys the potato-crop throughout Ireland, and leads to a terrible famine.

1847. The Irish famine continues; altogether about 200,000 * die of famine or famine-fever. Probably 15 times that number would have perished but for outside help. The British parliament voted £10,000,000 as Relief Funds; and £434,784 was raised in Britain by subscription.† The efforts of the British government were described as "the grandest attempt ever made to grapple with famine over a whole country. Neither ancient nor modern history can furnish a parallel to the fact that upwards of 3,000,000 persons were fed every day, in the neighborhood of their own homes, by administrative arrangements emanating from and controlled by one central office."‡

1848. A projected monster Chartist demonstration, at Kennington Common, London, is thwarted by the government (10 Ap.), 170,000 special constables being sworn in.

An Irish Landlord and Tenant Act (11 & 12 Vic., c. 7) provides that eviction by unroofing the evicted dwelling shall be a misdemeanor; that evictions must be made within certain hours in the daytime; and that, under a penalty of £20, the landlord, before evicting, shall give 48 hours' notice to the relieving officer, who shall provide shelter for the evicted family. § The Irish Encumbered Estates Act (c. 48) provides for the compulsory sale of the lands of impoverished landlords. ¶

* This is the undoubtedly accurate estimate of Mr. W. S. Trench, who lived through it. See "Realities of Irish Life," ch. viii.

† The total sum spent in charity in Ireland during the five years, 1846-50, was over £15,000,000 (\$75,000,000).

‡ *Edinburgh Review*, vol. 87, p. 269 (1848), "The Irish Crisis," by Sir Charles Trevelyan.

§ The law is still in force. No such merciful provisions exist to this hour in the eviction law of any country save Ireland.

¶ The total sales under the Act up to 1 Jan., 1881, amounted to £54,000,000, comprising over one-fourth of the whole agricultural land of Ireland. "In no country in Europe has so much land been sold in the same time, or sold so cheap." The purchasers numbered about 20,000, over 19,000 being Irish.

1849. The Navigation laws are repealed (12 & 13 Vic., c. 29), and the principle of free-trade is applied to navigation.

The cholera rages in England (17 June–13 Oct.).

1850. The Clayton-Bulwer Treaty between Britain and the U. S. is signed (19 Ap.).

The so-called "Papal Aggression" creates a strong anti-Catholic excitement throughout England (Nov.).

1851. The first International Exhibition is opened in the Crystal Palace, London (1 May).

Gold is discovered in Australia; the first shipments arrive in England (Dec.).

The 6th census of the U. K. gives 27,637,761.

1852. Lord John Russell resigns (21 Feb.); the Conservatives take office, with Lord Derby as premier (27 Feb.) He is defeated, and resigns (17 Dec); Lord Aberdeen forms a Coalition ministry.

1854. The Crimean War begins (28 Mar.). The British and French defeat the Russians at the Alma in the Crimea (20 Sep.), and lay siege to Sebastopol (17 Oct.). The "charge of the Light Brigade" at Balaclava takes place (25 Oct.); and the battle of Inkerman (5 Nov.).

1855. Aberdeen resigns (30 Jan.); Lord Palmerston is made premier (1 Feb.).

The Russians evacuate Sebastopol and the southern forts (8–9 Sep.), and, after destroying their fleet, retire to the forts north of the harbor.

1856. Peace is made at Paris (30 Mar.) between Russia and Britain, France, Turkey, and Sardinia.

War breaks out between Britain and China (23 Oct.), and Britain and Persia (1 Nov.), which has seized Herat.

1857. Persia is defeated, makes peace (14 Ap.), and restores Herat to the Afghans (27 July).

The Indian mutiny breaks out (Mar.).

A great commercial panic takes place (Nov.).

1858. Palmerston resigns (22 Feb.); the Conservatives take office, with Lord Derby as premier (25 Feb.).

The Treaty of Tien-tsen (26–9 June) ends the war with China.

The Jewish Disabilities Bill (21 & 22 Vic., c. 49) allows Jews to sit in Parliament. The government of India is transferred (c. 106) from the East India Co. to the Crown. The property qualification of members of parliament is abolished.

1859. After a terrible struggle of two years the Indian Mutiny is finally suppressed (Ap.).

The "National Volunteer Association" is organized (May).

[In 1887 the number of volunteers enrolled was over 200,000.]

Lord Derby resigns (11 June) ; and a Palmerston-Russell Liberal ministry is formed (18 June).

The Chinese repulse Admiral Hôpe in the Pei-ho; an action which (in 1860) leads to war with China.

1860. The British and French defeat the Chinese (Aug., Sep.), capture Peking (12 Oct.), and peace is made (24 Oct.).

A commercial treaty with France is signed (23 Jan.).

Lord Cardwell's Irish Land and Landlord and Tenant's Acts (23 & 24 Vic., cc. 153, 154) provide that the tenant may take away all removable improvements made by him; give him compensation, payable by the landlord, for all his other improvements; allow him to work open mines and quarries and cut turf; and prohibit distraint for over one year's rent.

1861. The seizure by Capt. Wilkes (of the U. S. Navy) of Mason and Slidell, on board the *Trent* (8 Nov.), causes excitement in Britain. The U. S. government releases them (28 Dec.).

The 7th census of the U. K. gives 29,192,419.

1862. The civil war in the U. S. causes great distress among the Lancashire cotton operatives; £644,756 is raised by Relief Funds.

1863. The Prince of Wales marries Princess Alexandra of Denmark (10 Mar.).

1864. Britain cedes the Ionian Isles to Greece (1 June).

1865. Lord Palmerston dies (18 Oct.), aged nearly 81. Earl Russell becomes premier (3 Nov.).

A commercial treaty with Austria is signed (16 Dec.).

1866. A commercial panic occurs in London (11 May).

Russell resigns (26 June); the Conservatives take office, with Derby as premier (6 July).

1867. A projected Fenian attack on Chester is prevented (11, 12 Feb.).

The Canadian Confederation Act is passed (30 & 31 Vic., c. 3); also the Reform Act (c. 102), greatly extending the franchise.

The Abyssinian expedition lands in Abyssinia (Sep., Oct.).

By the Fenian explosion at the Clerkenwell House of Detention, London (13 Dec.), 6 persons are killed outright, 11 others die afterwards, 120 others are wounded (15 permanently, with loss of eyes, legs, arms, etc.), 40 mothers are prematurely confined, 20 of their babies dying in consequence, and two women become maniacs.

1868. Lord Derby resigns from ill-health (25 Feb.); Disraeli becomes premier (29 Feb.).

The Anglo-Indian army, under Sir Robert Napier, defeats the Abyssinians, under King Theodore (10 Ap.), releases the

captives (12 Ap.), and storms Magdala (13 Ap.). The British troops arrive at Portsmouth (21 June).

Scotch and Irish Reform Acts (31 & 32 Vic., cc. 48, 49) are passed (13 July).

Disraeli resigns (2 Dec.), and the Liberals take office, with Gladstone as premier (9 Dec.).

Thomas D'Arcy McGee, M.P.P., is shot dead by a Fenian at Ottawa, Canada (7 Ap.).

1869. The Act 32 & 33 Vic., c. 42 disestablishes and disendows the Anglican Church in Ireland.

1870. Gladstone's first Irish Land Act (33 & 34 Vic., c. 46) converts all tenants-at-will into tenants from year-to-year; legalizes the Ulster tenant-right; gives tenants "compensation for disturbance," payable by the landlord, varying from one to seven years' rent, whether evicted on title or for non-payment of an "exorbitant rent;" also compensation in cash for all tenants' improvements; and provides that tenants shall have "all reasonable facilities" to purchase their holdings, the government advancing two-thirds of the purchase-money.

1871. The Washington Treaty between Britain and the U. S., signed 8 May, refers the Alabama claims to arbitration.

Gladstone issues (20 July) a royal warrant abolishing the purchase system in the army.

The 8th census of the U. K. shows 31,817,108.

1872. The Geneva tribunal awards (14 Sep.) £3,196,874 to the U. S. in satisfaction of the Alabama claims; Britain pays the amount (29 Sep.).

A new commercial treaty is made with France (5 Nov.).

1873. The Judicature Act (36 & 37 Vic., c. 66) establishes the High Court of Justice, with 5 divisions.

The Ashantee expedition, under Sir Garnet Wolseley, sails from England (12 Sep.).

1874. The British defeat the Ashantees, capture Coomassie (4 Feb.), make peace (13 Feb.), leave Africa (19 Feb.), and arrive in England (21 Mar.).

Gladstone resigns (17 Feb.); the Conservatives take office (26 Feb.), with Disraeli as premier.

Addresses, with about 12,000,000 signatures, conveying the thanks of the French people to Britain for relief to their wounded, etc., during their war with Prussia, are presented to the queen by M. D'Aguiout and the Comte de Serurier.

1875. The British government purchases (1 Nov.) for £4,080,000 the Khédive's shares in the Suez Canal (176,602, of £20 each, out of 400,000).

1876. The queen is proclaimed Empress of India (1 May).

The Irish Ejectment Act (39 & 40 Vic., c. 68) requires the landlord to give the tenant a year's notice to quit, instead of 6 months, as heretofore.

1877. The Transvaal is annexed to the empire (12 Ap.).

1878. The Treaty of San Stephano between Russia and Turkey is signed (3 Mar.) ; Lord Salisbury (Foreign Secretary) issues his famous circular to the powers (2 Ap.) showing its objectionable character ; and war with Russia being imminent, the reserves are called out (2 Ap.), and Indian troops are ordered to Malta (17 Ap.). A European conference thereupon meets (13 June), and agrees to the Berlin Treaty (13 July), settling the Eastern Question.

War with Afghanistan breaks out (Nov.).

1879. War breaks out with the Zulus (12 Jan.), who annihilate a British force of 837 at Isandhlwana (22 Jan.), but are repulsed at Rorke's Drift (22-23 Jan.). The Zulus are defeated at Gingholova (2 Ap.) and Ulundi (4 July), Cetewayo is captured (28 Aug.), and peace is made (1 Sep.).

The Afghans and British make peace at Gandamak (26 May) ; but the British resident, Sir Louis Cavagnari, and his escort (about 80) are massacred in Cabul (3-4 Sep.), and the war is renewed (6 Sep.).

Lord Cairns's Act (42 & 43 Vic., c. 65) abolishes Queen's University, and establishes " the University of Ireland " (Catholic).

1880. Beaconsfield resigns (22 Ap.); the Liberals take office (28 Ap.), with Gladstone as premier.

The Afghans are defeated at Mazra or Baba Wali, near Candahar (1 Sep.), and peace is made (Nov.).

The Transvaal Boers proclaim the " South African Republic " (17 Dec.), and kill some British troops (20 Dec.) ; Gladstone sends troops from England, under Sir G. P. Colley (Dec.).

1881. The Boers defeat the British at Laing's Neck (28 Jan.), Ingogo River (8 Feb.), and Majuba Hill (27 Feb.), where Gen. Colley is killed. An armistice (6 Mar.) and peace (3 Aug.) are signed, Britain acknowledging the independence of " the Transvaal State."

Gladstone's second Irish Land Act (44 & 45 Vic., c. 49) makes the tenant co-owner of his holding ; allows him " free sale " of his interest or tenant-right ; debars a landlord who raises his rent from again raising it for 15 years ; allows a tenant whose rent is raised either to sell his tenant-right, the landlord to pay him the depreciation caused by the increase of rent, or to compel the landlord to pay him " compensation for disturbance " on a scale considerably higher than that fixed by the Act of 1870. It allows the tenant to apply to the

Land Court to fix a fair rent, which then holds for 15 years ; gives him fuller compensation for his improvements ; provides that no rent is to be charged on the tenant's improvements ; and allows a tenant evicted for non-payment of rent to redeem his holding within six months. A tenant purchasing his holding may borrow from the government three-fourths of the purchase-money, instead of two-thirds as under the Act of 1870.

The 9th census of the U. K. shows 35,246,633 ; London having 3,834,354.

1882. Lord Frederick Cavendish and Thomas H. Burke are murdered by Fenians in Phoenix Park, Dublin (6 May).

1883. The Phoenix Park murderers are tried (Ap.), found guilty, and hanged. O'Donnell is found guilty of the murder of Carey, the informer (1 Dec.), and hanged (17 Dec.).

Charles S. Parnell is presented with £37,000 (11 Dec.).

1884. The Gladstone government send Gen. Gordon (18 Jan.) to the Soudan to effect the release of the Egyptian garrisons there ; he reaches Khartoum (18 Feb.). Being besieged there by the Mahdi, a British expedition sets out from Cairo (Oct.) to ascend the Nile to effect his release.

1885. The Mahdi takes Khartoum (26 Jan.), Gen. Gordon being slain. British troops, under Wilson, reach Khartoum (28 Jan.), but find it in the hands of the enemy ; and the British expedition returns to Egypt.

The Act 48 & 49 Vic., c. 3 greatly lowers the franchise ; another Act (c. 23) effects a redistribution of seats. Lord Ashbourne's Irish Land Act (c. 73) provides that a tenant purchasing his holding may borrow *the whole* purchase-money from the government.

By the defection of the Parnellites, Gladstone is defeated on the budget and resigns (9 June) ; the Conservatives take office, with Salisbury as premier.

Bechuanaland is annexed to the empire (12 June).

War is declared against King Theebaw of Burmah (13 Nov.).

1886. Burmah is annexed to the empire (1 Jan.).

Salisbury is defeated by a combination of Liberals and Parnellites (25 Jan.), and resigns ; the Liberals take office (3 Feb.), with Gladstone as premier. Gladstone is defeated on his Irish Home Rule Bill (7 June), and dissolves parliament (26 June). The new elections show (17 July) about 100 majority against him, and he resigns (20 July). The Conservatives take office, with Salisbury as premier.

1887. The Queen's Jubilee is celebrated in London (21 June) with imposing ceremonies ; also throughout the empire.

The Irish Crimes Act is passed (19 July).





